



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

WIDENER LIBRARY



HX HX8G

Br 1345. 60.4 (1)



HARVARD  
COLLEGE  
LIBRARY











Fairly anal.

# ROBERT OF GLOUCESTER'S CHRONICLE.

---

Transcrib'd, and now first publish'd,  
from a MS. in the  
HARLEYAN LIBRARY  
By THOMAS HEARNE, M.A.

---

To which is added,  
Besides a Glossary and other Improve-  
ments, a Continuation (by the Author  
himself) of this Chronicle from a MS.  
in the COTTONIAN Library.

---

In two Volumes. 1811

---

O X F O R D,  
Printed at the THEATER,  
M. DCC. XXIV.

~~3433,28~~

Bv 1345.60.4 (1)



Marcus Zuerius Boxhornius  
*ad initium Orationis Dominicæ,  
antiquissima Alemanorum lingua  
à se (una cum aliis id genus) edi-  
tæ, Lugduni Batavorum A. D.  
CLO IOCL. f2°.*

Ex dialecto vide rerum huma-  
narum inconstantiam, & col-  
lige antiquitatem, eamque  
venerare.



# The CONTENTS.

- I. **T**HE Publisher's Preface. pag. v.
- II. Robert of Gloucester's Chronicle, from a MS. in the HARLEYAN Library; with a Continuation of the same (by the Author himself) transcrib'd from a MS. in the COTTONIAN Library, by the Care and at the Expenses of the learned Dr. RICHARD MEAD. 1, 465
- III. *De mirabilibus Britannia*, out of an old folio MS. in Vellam, given me by Richard Graves, of Mickleton in Gloucestershire, Esq. 572
- IV. The Foundation of the Abbey of Gloucester, and the change of the same before the Suppression thereof in the Reign of King Henry the Eighth. By William Malverne, Abbat of that Monastery. 584
- V. A Detegreu, fro William Conquerour, of the Crowne of Engelonde, lynnyally descendyng, vn to King Henry the vi. Out of the MS. of Robert of Gloucester, that belongs to the Heralds Office. 585
- a 2
- VI.

## THE CONTENTS.

- VI. A Letter to Mr. Bagford, containing some  
 Remarks upon Geffry Chaucer and his Wri-  
 tings. 596  
 VII. The Preface of Mr. John Stowe to one  
 Edition of his Summary (that comes to the  
 Year 1573.) by which my Conjecture about  
 Mr. Murray's Fragments (that I have printed  
 at the End of Heming's Chartulary) is con-  
 firm'd. 607  
 VIII. Some Remarks, in a late, but unknown,  
 hand, at the Beginning of the Cottonian MS.  
 of Robert of Gloucester, relating to the age  
 of the Author, and containing two Passages  
 from a MS. Copy of this Historian, that was  
 formerly in the hands of the learned Mr.  
 Thomas Allen. 609  
 IX. Glossary. 612  
 X. Index. 744  
 XI. Operum nostrorum hactenus impressorum  
 Catalogus. 793

THE



## THE PUBLISHER'S P R E F A C E.

**T**HE Disservice to any branch of Learning, when Persons of skill deprecate the most proper Books for obtaining a Knowledge in it. The Bodleian MS. does not contain the genuine Robert of Gloucester. §. I. The Curiosity of Mr. Keck. The great use of Robert of Gloucester in the Study of the old Saxon Tongue. His value upon other accounts, Borstall the same with the Saxon Bury-stall. Brill an ancient Burgh, and is nothing else but Burgh Hill or Burgh on the Hill. §. II. Robert of Gloucester's following Geffry of Monmouth in the first Part of his Work, no good Objection against his History. The nature of the ancient *Βασιλικὰ τὰ βιβλικά* gathered from an old Roll in the Hands of Mr. Graves. The old use of Horns instead of Cups. Several remarkable Particulars relating to some of our old English Bibles. The Curiosity of the Nuremberg Chronicle. §. III. Ferdinando Pulton, the great Lawyer,



*yer, a Cambridge, and not an Oxford, Writer. §. IV. Something peculiar in the Copy of the Nuremberg Chronicle in Trinity College Library at Cambridge, that I have not yet met with in any other. The first, and not the second, Edition of Hollingshed's Chronicle, the true genuine Work of the Author. §. V. Many things in Robert of Gloucester, that properly belong to the Business of an Antiquary. In the Saxon Times the Princes, and other great Personages, did not use to be buried at their Palaces, but at Religious Houses. Cosham in Wiltshire very famous formerly. The Coffin lately found there belong'd to some fine Gentleman since the Conquest. The Knife, with which Edward the Martyr was kill'd, preserv'd at Caversham in the time of Robert of Gloucester. Three kinds of Churches formerly. §. VI. Robert of Gloucester's Account of the Conflict between the Scholars and Townsmen of Oxford, in the time of Henry III. very remarkable in all it's Circumstances. §. VII. Which tho' it be published by Mr. Wood, yet he seems to have had it from second hand. The Harewell, mentioned in that Account, is, probably, the same with Walton Well. Walton Well the oldest Well of note about Oxford. St. Edward's Well by St. Clement's, older than the old Well from which St. Cross's Parish, in the Suburbs of Oxford, was called Holywell. The respect formerly paid to Wells; which occasioned Injunctions against the Worship of them. §. VIII. Our Author's Poëtry agreeable to the Genius of his Age, and his regard to truth in his Rhythms*

*Rhythms answers the Custom of the Pythagoreans and old Britains. §. ix. He hath continued too long bid from the World. The value of the Harleian MS. which is followed in the Edition, that we now set forth. The Language, as well as the Work, altered in the MS. of the Heralds Office, and that by one who lived in the time of Hen. VI. §. x. Who, however, is pleased to conceal his Name, as he does also that of Robert of Gloucester. A Rhythmical Account of the Kings of England at the end of his MS. which is here likewise printed. §. xi. But these Rhythms are much shorter than those of Robert of Gloucester, as are likewise those in this MS. that relate to K. Richard I. §. xii. The Author of which Rhythms about Richard I. seems to have been Robert of Brunne. §. xiii. This Robert of Brunne the same with Stowe's Robert Brune. Stowe was certainly the Author of the Fragments, that I have printed in Heming. Stowe's Honesty, and the value of his Chronicle. A very remarkable Passage out of Robert of Brunne's Chronicle, together with the same as it occurs in Stowe. §. xiv. Instead of the anonymous fabulous Rhythms upon Richard I. I have inserted the genuine ones of Robert of Gloucester, in a Continuation of the Harleian MS. from the Cottonian Library. §. xv. The Harleian MS. perfect, tho' it comes nothing near so low as that of the Cottonian Library. One Leaf, at least, is wanting in the Cottonian MS. §. xvi. Our Author seems to have dyed in the Beginning of Edw. the First's Reign.*

*Him-*

*Himself gives an express Testimony of the Time in which he flourished. §. xvii. Which, however, is pass'd over by one, who endeavour'd to settle his Age from Proofs extracted from his Chronicle. §. xviii. Our Author rightly observes the vast disproportion that there was between the pious Acts of K. Edward the Confessor, and the first K. Edward after the Conquest. Interpolations are to be look'd upon as Redundancies, not as Perfections, in old MSS. §. xix. Mr. Thomas Britton, the famous Small-Coal Man, seems to have had a MS. of Robert of Gloucester. The learned Mr. Thomas Allen had two MSS. of him, one of which came to the Bodleian Library, the other to some unknown Hands. §. xx. Mr. Selden and Mr. Wood had a right notion of the Age of our Author, who ought to be reckon'd among the Oxford Writers. §. xxi. Our Author seems to have resided in Oxford in an old House on the West side of Stockwell Street. §. xxii. The strange mistake of Mr. Weever, with regard to the Age of Robert of Gloucester. §. xxiii. Robert of Brunne's true Surname was Manning. But the true Surname of Robert of Gloucester does not occur. §. xxiv. The Name of Robert Moille inserted at random, as it seems, in the MS. of the Heralds Office. That MS. concludes with some Verses that are not in Caxton. §. xxv. This Work is a great Curiosity. The Reproach in neglecting the black Letter. §. xxvi.*



I cannot but be of great Disservice to any branch of Learning, when such Persons, as are fam'd for their skill in it, take all

The Disservice to any branch of Learning, when Persons of skill depretiate the most proper Books for obtaining a Knowledge in it. The Bodleian MS. does not contain the genuine Robert of Gloucester.

opportunities of depretiating those Books, that are the most proper Helps for obtaining a Knowledge in it. Among such I may, therefore, deservedly reckon those, that decry, and speak against, Robert of Gloucesters Chronicle, as if the Fragments, that have been occasionally published of him by some of our greatest Antiquaries, were sufficient satisfaction to any one, that is curious. *We may probably* (saith <sup>1</sup> the Compiler of the English Historical Library) *bring in also Robert of Gloucester, for another of his* [Mat. Paris's] *Contemporaries, since Archbishop* <sup>2</sup> *Usher and* <sup>3</sup> *Mr. Camden are both* *positive, that he liv'd some Time in the Reign of King Henry the Third. His Rhyming Chronicle is in* <sup>4</sup> *English; and the Reader may have a Taste of it, (as much, it may be, as ever he'll desire) either from* <sup>5</sup> *Mr. Selden, or* <sup>6</sup> *Mr. Wood. But I know several curious Persons, that are so far from be-*

1. Ed. fol. p. 62. 2. Hist. A. 11. 3. *Tales of Men*. p. 535.  
Eccles. Brit. p. 29. 3. *Remains*, 6. Hist. & Antiq. Oxon. Par. I.  
p. m. 8. 4. Bibl. Cott. *Caligula* p. 112.

ing fatiated with the published Fragments, that the more they have read them, the more earnestly they have desired and wish'd to see the whole Work. And tho' I ought not to be reckon'd among such curious Persons, yet I can testify thus much for my self, that, when I first saw a MS. of this Author (which was when I was even a young Undergraduate) in the Bodleian Library, being one of the first MSS. I ever perus'd there, I was wonderfully delighted with it, and could not but often signify, that I was not at all pleas'd with those, that insinuated, that there was enough of him already published to gratify any curious Reader. Nor can I at all think, that my late ingenious and learned Friend Robert Keck, Esq. (who was formerly Gentleman-Commoner of University College, and died in the Year 1719.) repeated the Charges he had been at, in having the said Bodleian MS. transcrib'd, for any other reason, than because he found, that it was a very imperfect MS. and did not contain the genuine Robert of Gloucester, which he might have met with in the Cottonian Library, as he was, without doubt, afterwards fully appriz'd of by his Friends.

---

1. Coll. nostr. MSS. Vol. 84. p. 7, 8.

§. II. Indeed Mr. Keck was a young Gentleman extremely inquisitive after Books in old English, and the nearer they were to the Conquest, so much the better pleased he was with them. For which reason 'tis no wonder, that he should several times express a great Dissatisfaction, when he understood, that, after all his Charges, he had not got either an intire, or an authentick Robert of Gloucester. He had a design either of publishing this old Historian himself, or, at least, of assisting some body else in the publication of him, which could not but, therefore, make him the more concerned, that his Copy was not of better Authority. He knew perfectly well, that such old English Books are of wonderfull use in acquiring a knowledge in the Saxon Tongue, which continued to be spoke (tho' with great Alterations) in Robert of Gloucester's time, and many Years after, and it began to be almost of all disus'd, when Geoffrey Chaucer undertook to refine (as they termed it) the Language. But now of all Books of this kind, I know none hardly so valuable as this Chronicle of Robert of Gloucester, and upon that account, were there no other reason, it is very proper to be read over and considered by all such as are willing to be acquaint-

The Curiosity of Mr. Keck. The great use of Robert of Gloucester in the Study of the old Saxon Tongue. His value upon other accounts. Worthall the same with the Saxon Bury-ftall. Worthall an ancient Burgh, and is nothing else but Burgh Hill or Burgh on the Hill.

---

1. See pag. 364. of this Chron.

ed with the old Saxon Tongue, a Language which even the vulgar are very fond of talking of, though they are perfectly ignorant of it; in so much that I have known some of the Country Common People shew an unusual Pleasure, when they have seen so much as the old Saxon Letters. And 'tis with great Attention that they will listen to the Derivation of Places from the Saxon Tongue. The People of **Worstaff** in Buckinghamshire are mightily pleas'd, when any one tells them, that **Worstaff** is the same with the Saxon **Burg-stall**, which signifies *a Seat on the side of an Hill*, which exactly answers to this Place. "**Burg-stall**" (saith Mr. Somner<sup>1</sup>) "*clivus. a little hill whereon any thing is builded: a seat on the side or pitch of an hill; as that at Whitstable in Kent called Borstaff.*" And this account of **Burg-stall** pleaseth them the better, when they hear, that these Words in the 33<sup>d</sup>. verse of the viii<sup>th</sup>. Chapter of St. Luke, *Then went the devils out of the man, and entred into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were choked,* are thus read in that which is called Wickliff's Translation<sup>2</sup>, *& so þe deuillis wenten out fro þe man, & entride in to þe swyn, & wiþ a birre þe flok wente heedlyng in to þe pool, & was drenchid.* The Expression *with a birre* here is the

1. Saxon Dict. voc. **Burg-stall**. 2. MS. opt. membran. penes me. Vide infra in Glossario, p. 728.

same

same with the Vulgar Latin *impetu*, and the Saxon *þæt*, (whence our common Word *Race*) and answers very well to any Place situated at the side of an Hill. Upon hearing this Derivation of Borstall, the Inhabitants look upon the story of its being called so from a wild Boar kill'd by Nigellus in the Forest of Bernwood (on the Edge of which Borstall is placed) to be as weak, as the ascribing the Song of the Boar's Head by some to a wild Boar, that was kill'd, I know not when, by a Tabarder in Shottover Wood, whereas, on the contrary, the Song was so far formerly from being sung only in one Place, that it was a Christmas Carol all over England, the Boar's Head being an ancient Dish, and much in vogue at that Season, being much admired by even the greatest Princes, in so much that it was brought up by K. Henry I. with Trumpets before his Son, when his said Son was crown'd. But tho' the Inhabitants of Borstall are much pleas'd to hear, that Borstall is the same with the Saxon Burg-stall, yet their Neighbours, the Inhabitants of Brill, are as much displeas'd with those, that detract from the Antiquity of Brill, and will not allow it to be an ancient Burgh, and to be the same as Burgh-hill or Burgh on the Hill, which nevertheless is plain enough to any one that considers either the Situation of the Place, or the

---

1. Vide Ed. nostr. Guil. Neubrigenfis, p. 744.



Coyns that have been found there and thereabouts, some of which I have seen myself. Mr. Camden had well weigh'd this matter, and therefore he very clearly establisheth this Notion of it's being an old Burgh. *Hæc tota [vallis] (sæpe he) fere campestris est, solo item argillæco, tenaci, & succundo, pabulosis pratis innumeros ovium greges pascit, quarum molliæ, & tenuissimæ velleræ ab Afaticis usque gemibus expetuntur. Sed sylvis nuda nisi ad Occidentem latens, ubi præter alias Bernewood, circa quæm annis à Christo nato DCCCC-XIII. Dæmonum furor impotentius sævit, dumque fersa concidit. Burgua illa antiqua, ut Romani nomen ingenti testantur, qui postea regia erat villa Edwardi Confessoris. Nunc mitis pagus est rusticus, & pro Burgh-hill, Brill contrahitur appellat. Thus this great Man, whose words are of better Authority with the Inhabitants and others, than those of any more illiterate and injudicious Writers, especially such as derive the Name from Bryers and Thorns, (from which they also derive Bryerns Abbey, when, on the contrary, it was so denominated from the *Burnn*, *Burn*, *Burn* or *Bypna*; there) an Etymology that is more weak than that of the very learned Dr. Skinner, who thinks it was so called from Burrs growing at the Place. *Brill, in Com. Bucks* (so he writes) *contr. à Burr-hill, sc. à Lappi, quæ ibi frequenter crescant.* It's having been a Royal*

1. Brit. p. 179. Ed. fol. 2. Etymol. Dict.

Vill of Edward the Confessor had been sufficient to have stild it a Burgh, were there nothing else to rely on. Such Villis in those times were commonly call'd Burghs. Whence 'tis, that *byrg* in St. Luke is translated *burgha* in the Saxon, *castella* in the vulgar Latin, and *castels* in that which is termed Wickliff's Version. As there was, doubtless, a Castle or Fortification at Brill, so the Place had a greater right than otherwise to the Title of a Burgh. And as here was also a Market, so, withall, it might have been call'd *repte*, such as are mentioned in St. Luke, where *for-grassings in the Markets* the Saxon hath *græmoga on reptonum*, and Wickliff *salutacionis in chepping*. Mr. Somner, in his Saxon Dictionary, hath noted, that *repte* signifieth sometimes a marketplace, having an eye, I suppose, partly upon what occurs in the Saxon Version of the New Testament, and partly upon what he had met with in other old Saxon Monuments. I do not know but *Strete* in Berks. was so call'd, not only because the Ikenild street or way pass'd by or through that Place, but as it was formerly a Market Town. Now since the Chronicle, I have here published, is so very usefull for understanding Saxon, what but Prejudice, or some other bad Quality, could induce any one of skill in this Tongue to speak against, and endeavour to

---

1. IX. 6. 2. IX. 43. 3. Vide Ed. nostr. Guil. Neubr. p. 737.

sup.

suppress Robert of Gloucester, an Author of great Worth, even upon other Accounts, that is, for his own Probity and Honesty, and for the History he hath given us, extracted from the best Memoirs he could come at?

Robert of Gloucester's following Geffry of Monmouth in the first Part of his Work, no good Objection against his History. The nature of the ancient *Samson* to be gathered from an old Roll in the Hands of Mr. Graves. The old use of Horns instead of Cups. Several remarkable Particulars relating to some of our English Bibles. The Curiosity of the Nuremberg Chronicle.

§. III. I am aware, that it will be objected, that the beginning of this Book is, for the most part, taken from Geffry of Monmouth. But this Objection makes rather for the Reputation, than the Disgrace, of this Historian, and it may be as well alledg'd against our other Historians, that have written since Geffry's time. Geffry was an Author so much in vogue, for the most early Affairs of our British Princes, that he was constantly transcrib'd, and put into most Libraries, which is the reason why there are so many MSS. of him extant.

By comparing Robert of Gloucester with him, the Reader will soon perceive, what a faithful Historian Robert was, when he took care to be very exact in what he extracted from him. I have subjoyn'd some Passages here and there at the Bottom of the Page from Geffry, by way of Illustration, but I took them not from a printed Latin Copy (having none by me) but from a good, tho' (at the End) imperfect MS. that was given me by my Friend, that curious Antiquary, Richard Graves, of Mickleton in Glou-

Gloucestershire, Esq. from whom, much about the same time, I had borrowed the old French Roll, from which I have printed two Passages in the following Work; which Roll is so much the greater Curiosity, as it represents the Figures of our Kings and Princes from the time of Athelstan, where it begins, to the time of Edward the I. with whom it ends. For tho' the Pictures are but rude, yet there are many things in them, that will be of use to curious Men, as even our Saxon Coyns are, notwithstanding the Barbarousness of them. The very first Picture exhibits to us the form of the ancient βασιλείαι, or βασιλικαὶ 'ραβδοί, which, however, we do not find, that I know of, even in Athelstan's Coyns. We ought not, therefore, to reject old Pictures of this kind upon account of their Rudeness. I never look'd upon the Bodleian Picture as the less, but rather the greater, Curiosity, that makes Cain slay his brother Abel with a Sithe, tho' in the strange odd MS. Almanack or Conjuring Book, given me by the late Bishop of Ely, Dr. William Fleetwood (written, as it seems, in the time of Edward III.) he is delineated as killing him with the Jaw Bone of an Ass. 'Tis with pleasure likewise that I have often look'd over the English Bible, that was printed *anno* 1541. (in the 33<sup>d</sup>. Year of K. Hen. VIII.) being about five Years after the death of William Tyndale,

in which there are several odd wooden Cutts; that represent the Habits in use in Hom: the Eighth's time. The Picture of the Pin, into which they cast Joseph, is made to be a sort of Stone Fountain. In the Picture of Ahasuerus's Feast is a Horn for a Cup, agreeable to the old way of drinking at great Feasts. Bacchus used to quaff and carowse in an Horn. Hence Nonnus, καὶ κέρας ἄγνων ἔχει βίβλον, δεικνύει. *He had an Horn crooked, for a Cup; which was,* saith the Scholiast of Nicander, an ancient Custom. οἱ ἀρχαῖοι κέρασιν ἐχρῶντο ἐν τῇ πότι, ἀνὰ πρὸς μέλιον ὅθεν καὶ τὸ κέρασι κέραν. *The ancients in their Carousings used Horns, instead of Cups: and thence, to pour out, or to mingle Wine, is called cerasai, of ceras an horn.*

ὡς ἀπὸ Φωνήσου θεοῦ παῖδάς τε καὶ γυναῖκάς τε, Ἀμβροσίης πλῆσιν τε κέρασι δὲ κίττα, ἔαβαν, saith Homer. Upon which the Scholiast observes thus: Κέρασι δὲ κίττα. Nūn ὁρῶμεν διὰ τὴν ἀρχαίαν συνήθειαν εἰς κέρας, καὶ ἰσχυρίσθαι ἔστιν. *This* no wonder, therefore, that upon the Jollities on the first of May formerly the Custom of blowing with, and drinking in, Horns so much prevail'd, which tho' it be now generally disus'd, yet the Custom of blowing them prevails, at that Season, even to this day, at Oxford, to remind People of the pleasantness of that part

1. See Mountague's Diatribe | Tythes, p. 559. 2. Odyss. E. against Selden's History of | 92, 93.

of the Year, which ought to create Mirth and Gayety, such as is sketch'd out in some old Books of Offices, such as the *Primer of Salisbury*, printed at Rouen 1551. 8<sup>vo</sup>. of which I have a Copy by me (and 'tis a most rare thing) given me by Mr. Graves, fairer and more perfect than that of another (*viz.* a later) Edition in Balliol College Library. But tho' I have taken so much pleasure in perusing the English Bible of the Year 1541. yet 'tis nothing equal to what I should take in turning over that of the Year 1539. (an Edition that Selden made great use of, as he did also of other old Editions of the Bible in English, in compiling his Work intitled, *De Synedriis veterum Ebraeorum*) which they have in St. John's College Library in Cambridge, in reference to which my learned Friend, the Reverend Mr. Thomas Baker of that College writes to me thus: "We have such a Bible as you describe (a very noble Book) printed on Vellum, and imbellished with Cutts that are illuminated, the Leaves gilt, and the Cover imbossed with Brasse: but it is printed in the Year 1539. as appears from the Conclusion, thus,

*The ende of the New Testament and of the whole  
Byble, fynished in Apryll, Anno. MCCCC.XXXIX.*

*A Dno factu est istud.*

"The Frontispiece is the same with that of

1. In his Letter of Febr. 9. 1723.

to

C 2

"An.

## THE PUBLISHER'S

"An. 1540. described by Mr. Strype [Memorials  
 "of Archbp. Cranmer Lib. 3. cap. 33.] only  
 "Cromwell's Arms are left there a Blank, which  
 "in our Copy has his bearing (as the rest) in  
 "colors, left out, I presume, upon his fall. It  
 "might probably (as you observe) be the same  
 "Book, that was presented to Cromwell, there  
 "being only one other (that we can hear of)  
 "that is the King's. But how it came to us  
 "does not appear, unless from the late Earl  
 "of Southampton, who gave us most of those  
 "MSS. we now enjoy, and it has always had a  
 "place amongst the MSS. as it well deserves."

Mr. Baker writ this Passage upon account of a  
 Letter I writ to him, in which I had mention-  
 ed the Bible printed in English with Cutts  
 on Vellum, as I had found it spoke of in the  
 following remarkable Particulars that I meet  
 with in a Quarto MS. of Collections relating  
 to Bibles and Testaments from 1526. to 1700.  
 made (and written with his own hand) by the  
 late ingenious Mr. John Bagford, who was  
 pleased to give it me himself:

"1540. — In the Year 1540. the 32. of  
 "King Hen. the 8. a Convocation was called,  
 "and in the third Session (being Friday) several  
 "Bishops were assigned to peruse the several  
 "Translations of the New Testament, in order  
 "as followeth:

---

1. Fol. 4. a.

"1. Cran-

# P R E F A C E.

XXI

1. Cranmer Archbp. of Canterbury

1. Matthew.

2. Longland of Lincolne

2. Mark.

3. Stephen Gardiner of Winch.

3. Luke.

4. Tho. Goodrick of Ely

4. John.

5. Nicholas Heath of Rochester

5. The Acts of the Apostles.

6. Richard Sampson of Chichester

6. Romans.

7. John Capon of Sarum

7. Corinthians.

8. Will. Barlow of St. David's

Galatians.

8. Ephesians.

Philippians.

Colossians.

9. John Bell of Worcester

9. Thessalonians.

10. Robert Parfew of St. Asaph

Timothy.

10. Titus.

Philemon.

11. Robert Holgate of Landaff

11. Peter.

12. John Skip of Hereford

12. Hebrews.

13. Thomas Thirlby of Westminster

James.

13. John.

Jude.

14. John Wakeman of Gloster

14. The Revela-

15. John Chambers of Peterborow

15. tion.

Gardiner desired, that certain Latin words

in the Text might be preserved intire (as much

as might be) in the Translation of the New

Testament, and in Fuller's Church History

you have a Catalogue of the words :

And, if I mistake not, I have seen a Testa-

ment in English in 4°. put forth by the above-

said



"said Bishops with the King's Privilege. 1540

"A Bible in folio Recognized by Rich. Taver-  
"ner. 1540

"Id. a Testament in 4<sup>o</sup>. by the same hand. 1540

"A Bible of the larger Volume, the Frontis-  
"piece described by Mr. Strype, and supposed  
"to be printed at Paris. 1540

"There is one of them in the Queen's Li-  
"brary at St. James's, printed on Vellum, and the  
"Cutts curiously illuminated. This is supposed  
"to be the presentation Book to King Henry  
"the 8. 1540

"I have seen one in the Library of St. John's  
"College in Cambridge, found of late years  
"among some old Books in a private place  
"nigh the Library, printed on Vellum, and the  
"Cutts illuminated as the former, and this  
"perhaps, might be the presentation Book to  
"Tho. Cromwell. 1540

"Another very fair of the same Impression  
"in the Collection of Sir Andrew Fountain  
"on paper. 1540

"Id. another printed in folio by Will. Petre  
"for Thomas Berthlet. The Title in red and  
"black Letters, with the Picture of King H. the 1  
"8. with the Bishops with their Mitres on. 1540

"The New Testament translated from the  
"Greek by Delayne (who was Librarian at St.  
"James's, and is dedicated by him to K. Henry  
"the 8.) and printed in 4<sup>o</sup>. in the white Letter  
"by Jo. Mayler. 1540. And

And here, upon this occasion of mentioning  
 wooden Cutts, I must observe, that the vast  
 Variety of wooden Cutts in the Nuremberg  
 Chronicle, compiled by Hartman Schedel, are  
 not to be at all despis'd for their Odness, but to  
 be the more admir'd. For my part, the oftener  
 I consult it, the more I wonder at the Things  
 in it, and I cannot but esteem the Book as ex-  
 tremely pleasant, usefull and curious, by reason  
 of these very odd Cutts, tho' those Copies are  
 always to be look'd upon as the most valuable,  
 which have the Figure of Pope Joan untouch'd,  
 a Thing I here mention, because in many Co-  
 pies this Figure is either eras'd, or, at least, de-  
 fac'd, and the History of her obliterated. And  
 now I mention this Nuremberg Chronicle, I  
 cannot but take notice of a Copy of it, that  
 was given to Christ's College in Cambridge by  
 the great common Lawyer Ferdinando Pulton.  
 Before which Copy is an Inscription, that is  
 very remarkable, and had it fallen into the  
 Hands of the industrious Author of *Athena Oxo-  
 nienses*, he would not, surely, have rang'd this  
 eminent Lawyer among the Oxford Writers.  
 I shall give the Inscription, with some other  
 Particulars, just as they were all sent me by my  
 foresaid Friend, the Reverend Mr. Thomas Ba-  
 ker, the great Antiquary of Cambridge.

vincl. 12  
 10179. 10179. 10179.  
 60A.

§. IV.

Ferdinando Pul-  
ton, the great Law-  
yer, a Cambridge,  
and not an Oxford,  
Writer.

§. IV. "In turning my Papers" (with  
Mr. Baker) "I likewise find we have  
"another Copy of Hartman Schickel &c.  
"at Christ's Coll. given the Coll. by

"Ferd. Pulton, with this Inscription before the  
"Book. **Ferdinando Pulton, Esquier, student  
"of Law in his Youth into Christ's College in Cam-  
"bridge, the last yeere of the Reigne of King Edward  
"the first, continued there untill the last yeere of the  
"Reigne of Queene Marie, and made Fellowe of the  
"same Colledge one yeere before he departed thence.  
"Became afterwards a paynfull Student and Professor  
"of the Common and Statute Lawes of this Realme  
"(as maye appeare by severall Bookes or Treatises by  
"him composed and published in print, tending to the  
"knowledge and vtulging of the same Lawes) both in-  
"till his age of fourscore yeeres and upwards: But the  
"globe and affection wherby he did beare to the Colledge  
"looke his Uncle and Schoolmaster, and in token of  
"good will to the same House, did, upon the first daie of  
"September, Anno Domini 1617. & anno Regni Regis  
"Jacobi 15. bestowe this Booke uppon the Master and  
"Fellowes of the foresaid Colledge & their Successors,  
"too meane a giftte for so worthe and well deserving a  
"place, intended nevertheles to have been much greater,  
"had it not been extenuated by the charges & expenses  
"of his travell and labors in the workes afore said, will-  
"inglie bestowed uppon the Professors of the same Stu-  
"die for the benefit of his Countie and Commonwealth  
"thereof.**

"By me  
"Ferdinando Pulton, of Borton in the Countie and  
"Baronie of Buckingham.

"The

and the subscription is in a different hand,  
which I presume, is own.

Edin. 25. 1752. *Ferd. Pulton coll. Chr. admif-*  
*ſſationis Alumnorum Matriculam Acad. Cant.*

an. 1752. 1753. *conceditur Ferdinando Pulton, ac*  
*ſuſcepit* (terminus) *in quibus Lectiones ordinarias audi-*

*vit, licet non omnino ſecundum formam Statuti,*  
*cum Oppoſitionibus & Reſponſis requiſitis ſufficient*  
*et pro completis gradu & forma Bac. in Artibus :*  
*ſic quod examinetur & approbetur, convivetur, &*  
*cetera peragat juxta formam Statuti, quoniam*  
*Determinationem finalem ſine maximo ſuo diſpendio*  
*expectare non poteſt. Reg. Acad.*

*Pulton actu Bac. ante determinationem Regr.*  
*Acad. This great diſpatch was, I preſume, in*  
*order to his being elected Fellow. for in a Ca-*  
*talogue of their Fellows, I find, Ferd. Pulton*  
*electus Socius an. 1555. that is, I ſuppoſe, in*  
*Jan. Febr. or March 1555, 6.* The words in  
*Athenæ Oxon. are :* “*Ferdinando Pulton alias*  
*Poulton (Son of Giles Pulton, Eſq. who died*  
*1560.) was born at Deusborough in Northam-*  
*ptonſhire, became a commoner of Braſnoſe Coll.*  
*in the beginning of Q. Mary's Reign, laid*  
*there a foundation of Academical literature,*  
*which he found uſeful to him afterwards when*  
*he grew eminent in the common Law. But*  
*leaving that Houſe before he took a degree,*  
*he went to Lincoln's Inn, ſtudied the ſaid Law,*

1. Vol. I. col. 362. 2. Reg. 1. coll. Eacan. fol. 92. 2.  
Vol. I. d “took

"took the usual degrees, and became eminent  
 "for the knowledge in, and practice of, it, not  
 "only in London, but the usual place of his re-  
 "sidence in the Country, viz. at Buxton in the  
 "Parish and County of *Buckingham*. — He  
 "departed this Life, on the 20. *January* in fix-  
 "teen hundred and seventeen, aged 82. and  
 "was buried in the Chancel of the Church of  
 "*Beaulieu*, before-mention'd, &c." Mr. Wood  
 here quotes a Register in Brazen-nose Coll.  
 and his Quotation is faithful enough, as I find  
 by this *Memoir*, that, upon this occasion,  
 a worthy Friend writ out of it for me: "*Nicolaus*  
 "*Admiratus in Coll. 1556. Junii 20. Fordman-*  
 "*que Pulton Northampton.*"

"Reg. A Coll. Mn. Naf. fol. 91."

But then Mr. Wood builds too much upon it,  
 it being very clear, from the Inscription and  
 Notes above, that Pulton was one of the Cam-  
 bridge Writers, and not an Oxford one; where  
 he only resided a little while, and entered him-  
 self of Brazen-nose Coll. tho', at the same time,  
 he was actually a Member of the University of  
 Cambridge.

Something peculiar  
 in the Copy of the  
 Nuremberg Chron-  
 icle in Trinity  
 College Library at  
 Cambridge, that I  
 have not yet met  
 with in any other.  
 The first, and not

§. V. Mr. Baker had before given me  
 an account of three other Copies (which  
 they have at Cambridge) of the Nurem-  
 berg Chronicle, one of which is in Tri-  
 nity College Library, and hath in it  
 something peculiar, that is not in either  
 of

of the others, or indeed either in my own Copy (which, by the by, wants the Note about the time when the Book was printed) or in any that I have yet seen. What this is, will be better gathered from Mr. Baker's own words, than from any thing I can say, which are these: — "Your

the second Edition of Hollinghede's Chronicle, the true genuine Work of the Author.

"last Letter put me upon turning Hartman Schedel, which is a very entertaining, and (as you say), a very strange Book. We have three Copies, one amongst the Bp. of Ely's, which I had from Dr. Middleton, who presents you with his service. The second in our College Library. The last (the most beautifull) at Trinity College (from Mr. Hadderton) having all the Faces, Maps, and other Figures fairly depicted in Colours.

"At Fol. cclxi. the Picture of Antichrist with seven Heads, (different from the ordinary Prints) and almost as many Colours, makes a sightfull appearance, and upon the Pedestal in a fair hand, which I should have taken for Print, had it not been wanting in the two other Copies, this Inscription,

*Abbas depicte in Jacobus Jaquere  
de Cypriote Taurini in pede Montium*

*Abbas depicte in Jacobus Jaquere  
de Cypriote Taurini in pede Montium*

*Abbas depicte in Jacobus Jaquere  
de Cypriote Taurini in pede Montium*

*primo.*

"And on the opposite Page thus, *This Picture*

Out of his Letter to me, dated Dec. 2. 1722.

d 2 " was

"*was set in the Temple of the Jacobines in Geneva*  
*in an. 1401. a swarm of Antichrists, and from*  
*abroad into the world, that the abominations*  
*of the wicked may be perceived. B. S. M.*  
 "with 5, or 6. ryming Monkish latin verses."

"At Fol. CLXXXIII, CLXXXIII. The Pictures of  
 the Emperor, 7: Electors, Princes, and Counts  
 of the Empire, with their Arms fairly de-  
 picted, with this note, *Hæc Scuta recte pin-*  
*gentur in suis coloribus juxta judicium Heraldicæ.*"

"I doubt, you can hardly safely show the  
 former Inscription to your worthy Friend the  
 Author of the Antiquities of Glash. He will  
 be apt to observe, that Antichrist was so early  
 in the Church of Geneva, for, I think, Ge-  
 noua cannot be meant."

"In all the Copies Pope Joan stands with  
 the face of a Female, a triple Crown, a Child  
 in her arms instead of a Cross, which is born  
 by the rest of the Popes. Neither face nor  
 story are obliterated in any of our Copies,  
 only in that of Trin. Coll. *septimus*, is delit,  
 and the Figure, 8. plac'd in its room. For  
 she is styl'd *Joannes Septimus* in all our Copies,  
 tho' another *Jo. Septimus* had been mention'd  
 before. The story is short, I can send it you,  
 if you have not the Book by you. Martinus is  
 quoted, which shows, she stood in the Copies  
 of Martinus Polonus of that age."

1. Against the story in a Copy of Saffridus Petrus's Edit. at Ant.





"vidorum civium Sebaldi Schreyer & Sebastiani  
 "Kamermaister hunc librum Dominus Antonius  
 "Koberger Nuremberge impressit. Adhibitis tamen  
 "viris Mathematicis pingendique arte peritissimis,  
 "Michele Wolgemut & Wilhelmo Pleydenwurff. quo-  
 "rum solerti acuratisissimaque animadversione tum  
 "Civitatum tum illustrium Virorum figure inserte  
 "sunt. Consummatum autem duodecima Mensis Ju-  
 "lii. Anno Salutis nostre 1493.

"There is no Name or Title at the begin-  
 "ning of any of the Copies. Towards the end;  
 "there are five leaves, *De Regno Polonia* &c. not  
 "numbred, which seem to have been inserted.

"Fol. CCLII. *Methodus perusque medicus* &c.  
 "— *Prescriptio nova vradinissimus*. Quem ego Hunc  
 "mannus Sebedel Nurembergensis Doctor Medicus  
 "tribus annis ordinarie legentem custodi. à qua  
 "domini probata per eius vradinissimus  
 "insigne Doctoratus Padue accepti. — Follows a  
 "large Character of his Master, no more of  
 "himself.

"Fol. CCLII. *Arts imprimendi libros hunc tempo-*  
 "reque primum in germania orata est. Quoniam  
 "igitur literarum studiosi germani debeant nullo salte  
 "dicendi genere exprimi potest. Hanc apud magnum  
 "tiam. etiam urbem solerti ingenio librarians impre-  
 "mendoram ratio: 1440. inventam fuisse aiunt.  
 "Hoc tempore in omnes fere orbis partes propaga-  
 "tur — Ideo in ejus laudem quidam hos versus  
 "versus.

(1) O

*(18) Felix nostris memoranda impressis scellis.*  
*(19) Defensas patet totum quod fundis in Ordem.*  
*(20) Cunctis de summis igitur nunc laudibus ornatis.*

*(21) Invenire vident utraque lingua in.*

*(22) Dicitur parvo dicitur quilibet esse potest.*

*(23) To dare quando ars hoc mira reportat fuit.*

These verses stand like Prose (without distinction) in the print, I presume the Printer had jumbled them out of Order.

This seems to be a good and antient authority for printing at Mentz, being within memory of Man.

There is no doubt, but there was a great Number of Copies printed of this Book, that so the Charges of the Impression might be the better countervail'd by the sale. They were greedily bought up; and in a little time the Book grew scarce, which caus'd a new Edition.

Composing which my Friend Mr. Graves writes thus to me in a Letter, dated from Mich-  
 land in Glouceshire, Satur-  
 day, 20th of Decr, 1724. I have  
 of a Chronicle, that is now  
 in the Hands of Mr. Fancourt  
 Bishop of the See of Exeter upon  
 Annals but is not so full as  
 the other, which is con-  
 taining 332. Leaves, besides a  
 large Alphabetical Index at  
 the End thereof, and at the  
 Beginning, as the other, print-  
 ed in a black Letter, but much

less Character, and also and  
 the Cats are but very small;  
 and few, in comparison with  
 the other, &c.

I have also a small tract,  
 viz. *Compendium in summis de*  
*remediis huius mundi de hystricis*  
*et aliis rebus, &c.* Callahan, &c.

Another Edition of the same  
 is, &c. *anno 1511. 1522.*  
 in 4to. *1540. 1541. 1542. &c.* as in  
 the other.

And in fol. 332. a. at the  
 very End of the Book is this  
 Note, viz. *Finis hic liber Co-*

*nicorum,*

Not in my left Policy, with worse Types, (not  
withstanding, both Editors, & of the Black  
kind) and without most of the Cuts, which o-  
mission of the Cuts made this Edition, there-  
fore, much less valued by curious and critical  
Men than the first. The same Defect likewise  
makes the second Edition of Hollinghede's  
Chronicle of less esteem with many curious  
Men, than the first, which came out in Fol. at  
London 1577. and is full of wooden Cuts, (as  
the authentick Edition of Robert Fabyan's  
Chronicle, and the Chronicle of John Ra-

"nicorum, &c. Impression ac fini-  
tion, &c. in imperiali Urbe Au-  
gusta à Johanne Schensperger,  
Anno ab Incarnatione Domini,  
1497.

"After I had seen your's at  
Oxford, and view'd my own,  
and that at Stratford again;  
I thought there was as much  
Difference between mine, and  
your's, as between your's, and  
that: For tho' our's are both  
the same Edition; yet mine is  
extraordinary large Paper, with  
a very broad Margin, and ex-  
treme fair; and the chief in-  
itial Letters are painted with  
blew, and red; and some of  
them are handfomely illumi-  
nated, &c.

1. Of which Chronicle I find  
the following Particulars, in a  
Paper MS. in Folio (containing

a Catalogue of Books relating  
to the English and Irish Histo-  
ries and Antiquities) written by  
Mr. William Cooper, who dealt  
in old Books, and made this  
Catalogue for his own use. [Sic  
in Coll. nostr. MSS. Vol. 92. p.  
244.] This MS. belong'd, after  
the Collector's Death, [Coll.  
nostr. MSS. Vol. 63. p. 14.] to  
the ingenious Mr. John Bagford,  
who lent it to the Compiler of  
the English Historical Library,  
and at length (after a great  
while) recovering it, he parted  
with it to the learned Sir Hans  
Sloane, Baronet, in whose hands  
it is now, and he was so kind  
as to lend it me in the Month  
of January 1721.

"Fabyan's Chronicle of the  
Kings of England and France,  
from Brute's entring into this

Land,

And of which last there is a well preserved  
 copy in the Harleian Library, and also in

Island, until the last Year of  
 King Richard the third, anno  
 1485. continued to the be-  
 gining of Hen. the 8th. Anno  
 1509. in seaven parts, and two  
 Volumes, with the Effigies of  
 the Kings, their Coats of  
 Armes, and other figures, be-  
 ing the first Edition incastrate.  
 Instead of a Title it hath a  
 figure the Armes of Eng-  
 land and France united, the  
 Supporters a Dragon & Gray-  
 hound, and two Portcullices,  
 Angels bearing the Motto  
 about the Rose over the  
 Crown, the same figure at  
 the end of the book, fol. circa  
 1509.

— *Idem* newly printed,  
 with some what a larger Chro-  
 nicle of the Acts and Deeds  
 don in the time of the Reign  
 of King Henry the seaventh,  
 father to our dread soveraign  
 K. Hen. 8. London printed  
 by Wm. Rastall 1533. in fol.  
*cum Privilegio* differeth from  
 the first, and not gelt soe  
 much as Record's edition.

— *Idem iterum* named the  
 Concordance of History, with  
 Notes upon the Kings Reigns,  
 and a Continuation from the  
 beginning of K. Hen. 7. to the  
 Coronation of Queen Eliza-

beth Anno 1558. according  
 to Fabian's method, with Al-  
 terations, Corrections or Ca-  
 strations, and Marginal Notes,  
 by Robert Record. Lond. 1559.  
 fol. Coll. nostr. MSS. Vol.  
 93. p. 65.

1. About which I have insert-  
 ed the following Note, out of  
 the foresaid MS. of Sir Hans  
 Sloane, in my Manuscript Col-  
 lections, Vol. 93. p. 83. "The  
 Pastyme of People, the Cro-  
 nicles of divers Realmys, and  
 most specially of the Realme  
 of England, brevely compiled  
 and imprinted in Chepelyde  
 at the sygne of the Meare-  
 Mayd, next to Pollys gate, *cum*  
*Privilegio*. The Prologus hath at  
 the top *Johannis Rastell*. It be-  
 gins in the Margin, *Enas*,  
 then follows *Ascanius, Silvius*,  
 &c. William the Conquerour,  
 a woden Picture of him, in  
 full proportion, and soe of all  
 the Kings, the Picture of Ri-  
 chard the third being the last,  
 the word *Tyrannus* Ends. The  
 Picture of the Creation. *Jo-*  
*hannis Rastall cum Privilegio Re-*  
*gali*. in large folio.

2. Sic me docuit amicus eru-  
 ditus Timotheus Thomas, A.M.  
 collegii Aedis Christi Oxoniae  
 Alumnus.

believed with wooden Cuts many of which  
(considering the time in which they were done)  
are very good. The Author was then diving  
The second Edition came out in 1711 in two  
Volumes also in Folio, with abundance of Addi-  
tions by other hands, but without the wooden  
Cuts. This Omission was contrary to the De-  
sign and Intent of the Author, who was allow-  
ing, the illiterate Man (having never re-  
ceived liberal Education\*) and died before the  
Year 1682. Mr. Wood says that in 1682  
wards the latter end of 1680, I have printed  
his Will, which was proved April 21 1680. In  
the first Volume of my Edition of Camden's  
*Elizabeth*, as it was communicated to me by  
the learned Thomas Palmer of Fairfield in So-  
merfetshire, Esq. Hence it may appear, that the  
first (which is very scarce) and not the second  
Edition, contains the true genuine Work of  
Hollingshede.

Many things in Ro-  
bert of Gloucester,  
that properly be-  
long to the busi-  
ness of an Antiqua-  
ry. In the first  
times the Princes,  
& other great Per-  
sonages, did not  
use to be buried at  
their Palaces, but at  
Religious Houses.  
Colham in Whit-

VI. Now to return to Robert of  
Gloucester as he was an Antiquary, as  
well as an Historian, so here are inserted  
several divers Remarks, that properly  
belong to the business of an Antiquary.  
After he hath given an account of some  
of the Wonders of Britain, such as our  
Antiquaries usually take notice of, he

1. Coll. not. MSS. Vol. 62. p. 87. 2. Athen. Oxon. Vol. I.  
col. 270. 3. Pref. p. cxlix.

refers

refer to a Book written particularly of the famous  
about the Marvell of Britain, which formerly The Cos-  
may have been much more copious, all nearly found  
than either the Chapter upon that Sub- where belong'd to  
ject in *Polychronicon*, or even the little some fine Gentle-  
anonymous Tract upon the same Sub- man like the Con-  
ject, that I found inserted in an old quest. The Knife,  
Volume MS. in Folio, that was lately with which Edward  
given me by my learned Friend Richard the Martyr was  
Olaves, Esq. In this Tract (which I kill'd, preserv'd at  
have publish'd in the Appendix) the four Great Cevenham in the  
Roman Ways are deservedly reckon'd among the name of Robert of  
the Wonders of Britain, and the account of Gloucester. Three  
them, however short, agrees with the Scheme of Churches  
of them, that is given us (from a MS. in the formerly  
Cottonian Library) in the Discourse about the  
four Great Roman Ways published in the Sixth  
Volume of Leland's Itinerary. Robert of  
Gloucester's writing, *Silchester in Hampshire*  
*Cylcestre* confirms my opinion, that it was so  
called from the *Phins*, being no more than  
*am. 1477*. His Remarks upon many of our  
Religious Houses are pretty and usefull, and  
now and then he shews a particular Modesty  
on the occasion, in so much, that tho' it be  
certain, that *St. William de Mohun* founded  
*Baton Abbey* in *Somersetshire*, yet he expresses  
himself after such a manner, as if he only

Num. 102. Pag. 26. 3 Pag. 300. 1667 & in *Ninth of June*  
dam Beverlacensem, p. 154.

213131

e z

thought,

thought, and was not certain, that he was  
 Founder. What he says about Alfred, or  
 Ethelred, the famous Queen, or Lady, of the  
 Mercians being buried in St. Peter's Church at  
 Gloucester is exactly agreeable to the Saxon  
 Annals, under the Year 880. He  
 goes on to mention that the same Queen  
 was buried in the same Church, and that  
 she was the same person who was buried  
 in the same Church, and that she was the  
 same person who was buried in the same  
 Church. What can be a plainer argu-  
 ment of so great a Lady's Humility, than her  
 choosing to be buried in the Parish, and to live  
 in a place, that had been famous for the first  
 Nunnery, that was there, before it was de-  
 stroyed by the Danes, as it noted not only by  
 others, but particularly by William Malynes  
 (the last Lord Abbat of Gloucester) in a Book  
 newly printed, which I shall therefore pub-  
 lish at the End of this Work. Her affection  
 to Religion induced her to fix upon Gloucester  
 for the Place of her Funeral, rather than Tastry  
 worth, which was otherwise so very famous for  
 a Palace, in which the Mercian Princes used to  
 reside, and which she herself had restored to  
 its prime Splendour and Magnificence, when  
 it had been destroyed by the Danes. But, be it  
 may be, it will be said, that she pitched upon

I. Pag. 171. 2. Leland's Coll. Vol. VI. p. 274. 3. Appendix  
 Num. II.

Glou-

Gloucester, because the Abbey Church, there, had been founded by her Husband and herself, rather than for any other reason. Without question that was a considerable Motive, but yet I am persuaded, that the celebrated Nunnery, that had been there in former times, was another very great one, as indeed it was customary in those Times, even for other great Personages to be buried at Religious Houses, where they had inhabited and resided. In so much, that the Colliery near Chippingham in Wiltshire, was so much regarded to by some of our Saxon Kings and other great Men, who were a Palace for their Reception and Entertainment, so there was after the Conquest a retiring House for the Earls of Cornwall, to whom the Monks belonged (one of which, viz. Edmund, obtained a Charter for a Weekly Market to be held there every Friday, as his Father Richard, a younger Son of King John, had granted the Inhabitants several Villages, which they still enjoy.) yet it was not a burying Place for these Great Men, not so much as for Mr. Ethelred, who was more than ordinarily delighted with it, and lay sick here in May, but recovering, he went to London, and dying the Year after on St. George's day,

1. Cart. 12. E. 1. n. 39. Dag. 1 Page of Gibson's Engl. Ed. of  
dale's Barmage, Tome I. p. 765. Camden's Brit. p. 87. 3. Chron.  
1. Notes at the Bottom of the Sax. Gibl. p. 146, 148.

was



was buried in St. Paul's Church in the North Isle beside the Quire. 'Tis true, indeed, there was a Stone Coffin<sup>2</sup>, with humane Bones in it of a larger Size than usual, in the Skull whereof was a compleat Set of fine Teeth, found lately by Colham, which may perswade some, perhaps, to think this was a Place of Burial for several of our Princes and Nobility; but, as I take it, this was a Coffin of some private fine Gentleman since the Conquest, different from the illustrious Persons I have been speaking of, and yet of a great Character for his Virtues, and the delicate Form of his Body. And here I must caution the Reader, not to take this Colham to be the Caversham, in the Church of which Place Robert of Gloucester tells us the long Knife, that St. Edward the Martyr was kill'd with, was preserved in his time. For this was Caversham, commonly call'd Caulham, & sometimes writ<sup>4</sup> Cowsham, a Village situated in Ox-

- |                                    |                                      |
|------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| 1. Milles's Cat. of Honour, p.     | nexion: being choice Collection of   |
| 28. Dugdale's Hist. of St. Paul's  | some principal Masters in King James |
| Cathedral, p. 95. Ed. 2d. 1. See   | his Reign. Lond. 1681. 8vo. where    |
| the Glossary to this Work, voc.    | the following Order occurs,] as      |
| bper. 3. Pag. 289. 4. See p.       | I have entered it in one of my       |
| 128. of a Book, called, The Con-   | MSS. [Coll. Vol. 79. p. 75.]         |
| "Anna Dom. 1621: An. Reg. Jac. 19. |                                      |
| "An Order of the Privy Council.    |                                      |
| "Whitehall January 18. 1621.       |                                      |
| "Present,                          |                                      |
| "Lord Keeper.                      | Lord Digby.                          |
| "Lord Treasurer.                   | Lord Brook.                          |
| "L. President.                     | M <sup>r</sup> . Treasurer.          |

not

"L. M

fordshire, but is not far from Reading in Berkshire. Not only the Church of this Causham (which is an Abbreviation, as Leland saith, for Causeham) was eminent (for great Men resorted hither) but the fair old Chappel also of Stone, that stood toward the North End of Causham Bridge, on the right Hand as we come from Reading. To the foresaid Remarks I must take the opportunity of adding, that in the Saxon times abundance of great and illustrious Lay Persons made it their dying Request, that they might be buried in Religious Houses. A Request, certainly, very reasonable, and by no means to be wondered at, since a great Number of those Houses were Lay Foundations, and it was, therefore, very proper both

<p>“<i>L. M. Hamilton.</i> “<i>Earl Marshall.</i> “<i>A. B. Falkland.</i> “Whereas his Majesty is Graciously pleased, to enlarge &amp; set at liberty the Earl of Somerset [Sir Robert Carr] and his Lady, [the Lady Francis Howard], now Prisoners in the Tower of London; and that, nevertheless, it is thought fit, that both the said Earl and his Lady be confined to some convenient Place: It is therefore, according to his Majesty's Gracious Pleasure and Command, Ordered, That the Earl of So-</p>	<p><i>Mr. Secret. Calvert.</i> <i>Mr. Chan. Excheq.</i> <i>Master of the Rolls.</i> “<i>merfes</i> and his Lady, do repair either to <i>Grays</i> or <i>Consham</i>, the Lord <i>Wallingford's</i> Houses in the County of <i>Oxon</i>, and remain confined to one or either of the said Houses, and within three Miles compass of either of the same, untill further Order be given by his Majesty. 1. Itin. Vol. II. p. 5. 2. Leland ibid. 3 Coll. nostr. MSS. Vol. 102. p. 150.</p>
--	--

M. J.

for

-for the Bishops themselves, as well as for such  
 -as were below at the time of the Foundation, and  
 -afterwards, particular as special Benefactors,  
 -should be buried, if they desired it, in Places  
 -where themselves had paid by a string available  
 -to the most early Antiquity, as may appear  
 -from even the famous Egyptian Pyramids. It is  
 -incredible to think, what advantage the bury-  
 -ing of such great and devout Persons was to  
 -the respective Religious Houses, where they  
 -were so laid. These Houses (consequently  
 -in Antiquity) were then esteem'd (and that  
 -justly too) to be the principal Mother Churches,  
 -and of them we are chiefly to understand these  
 -Words. In King Edgar's Laws, of monastic  
 -life, reference to particular monasteries is  
 -made by the name of the monastery, as  
 -"Tithes to the old Church, (Monastery or Convent)  
 -to which the district belongs." Mr. Selden trans-  
 -lates these Words, "Tithes to the ancientest Church  
 -where he bears God's Service, and yet from  
 -pton, in his old Translation; hath, *consecratio ad matrem ecclesiam cuius parochia  
 -subjacet*, as even Selden himself hath before ob-  
 -serv'd. But then tho' these Words are primarily  
 -to be understood of Religious Houses (among  
 -which are to be reckoned what were afterwards

1. Spelman's Concil. Vol. 2. p. 444. 2. Hist. of Tithes, p. 262. 3. Apud N. Script. col. 671.  
 4. Hist. of Tithes, p. 219.

called

of the Church (which) is the same as the  
 body of the Church, and of other Churches,  
 which are likewise looked upon as the  
 Mother Churches, as having the right of de-  
 ciding upon all the points of such inferior Mo-  
 ther Churches were founded generally by emi-  
 nent Lay Persons, and the Parishes of such  
 Churches were as extensive as the Founders  
 Possessions, at least as such Possessions as were  
 of the same kind, or of the same quality, and  
 in some of these Churches, when they became  
 frequent to the Founders (who often de-  
 sired to be buried in allusion to, and in imi-  
 tation of, the Practice of such Founders of  
 Benefactors to Religious Houses as desired to  
 be buried in Monasteries. These inferior Mo-  
 ther Churches are mentioned in Edgus's Laws  
 in the Name of Churches that had Legempe,  
 or Place of Burial, where is mention also of a  
 third (which is the lowest) kind of Churches,  
 that had no Legempe. The second kind  
 of Churches I have spoke of had likewise, (as  
 well as the principal Mother Churches) right of  
 Burial, but wherever there was a Church  
 that had neither Legempe, nor Legempe, that  
 was properly to be understood of the third  
 kind, and such Churches of this third Class  
 they styled often Eccynan, or Field Churches,  
 what we call now Chappels of Ease, among  
 which

which are to be reckon'd Binsley, Sandford and Wootton near to, and Holwell in the Suburbs of Oxford, as well as multitudes besides, which had not anciently *separatum* *privilegium*, tho' they have that Privilege since

Robert of Gloucester's account of the Conflict between the Scholars and Townsmen of Oxford, in the time of Henry III. very remarkable in all its Circumstances.

§. VII. But I shall leave all farther Descants upon the several Particulars in this Author immediately relating to Antiquities to the intelligent Reader's own Observation, unless it be that concerning the great Conflict in the

Year 1263. between the Scholars and Townsmen of Oxford. This Passage is very remarkable in all its Circumstances, and for that reason Mr. Wood hath very justly, tho' not without some Mistakes, inserted it at large in his *History and Antiquities of the University of Oxford*. It seems Prince Edward, in his Journey towards the Marches of Wales, came by Oxford, but was hindered by the Townsmen (who shut the Gates against him) from coming into the Place, by reason of the Barons War, whereupon he went to King's Hall (being the fine Royal Palace, called *The Beaumonts*) situated in the West Suburbs, where he lay all Night. The next day he went away, and, after he was gone, the Gates were all open'd but *Southgate*. This was the Gate, through which the Scho-

1. Vide Ed. notr. Guil. Neubr. p. 736. 2. See p. 340. 3. Lib. I. pag. 117. 4. See on

and to go into the pleasant Fields (particu-  
 larly the full open Green, now arable ground,  
 the North Boundary whereof is to this Day  
 called Green Ditch) in which they were wont  
 to exercise themselves at several kinds of Sports  
 after Meals, and upon extraordinary occasions,  
 but finding the Gate shut upon them, they  
 were exceedingly enraged, and the more, be-  
 cause they had been before obstructed from  
 seeing the Prince, a sight they were very de-  
 sirous of, on purpose that they might the  
 better express their Loyalty. They often in-  
 treated the Bayliffe to open the Gate, but find-  
 ing it was in vain, they got it broke down, and  
 afterwards carried it in triumph through the  
 Beaumonts Fields to Ware well or Wasewell,  
 which was such a Grievance to the Townsmen,  
 that they took an occasion to imprison many  
 Scholars, and would have proceeded to the ut-  
 most Violence, had they not been overpowered  
 by the Scholars, as they were in all Encoun-  
 ters, unless the Scholars were far outnumbered  
 by the Townsmen's calling to their Assistance  
 (a thing common with them) a parcel of Ras-  
 cals and illiterate Fellows out of the Coun-  
 try. John Stowe mentions this difference in  
 the First Edition of his Chronicle, under the  
 Year 1234, and tho' he doth not refer us to  
 Robert of Gloucester, yet I do not doubt but  
 he took the Story from him, or, at least, from  
 some

some body that had made use of him, Edward the king's sonne, (saith he,) after his returne from Paris, about Lent, took his journey toward the March, and passing by Oxford, the Burghesses shut up their gates against him: whereupon he was forced to lie as the kings hall without the Towne till the next morning, and then departed. The Schollers of Oxford being shut within the Towne, brake up the gate that leadeth toward Beaumont, for which deed the Mayor sent some of them to prison: and not long after, while the Schollers were at dinner, the Mayor and Commons, with banners displayed, thought to have spoiled the Clarke: ere they had beene aware, but being espyed, the Schollers ranne together, and with bowes and other weapons, slew and wounded the Burghesses and Commons, brake up many houses, spoiling the goods, and set the houses of the Portviues (William Spicer and Geoffrey Hencley) on fire, on the South side of the towne. Moreover, because the Mayor (Nicholas Kingstone) was a Wintener, they brake up the Wintrie, dranke the wines, and spoiled them, for the which fact the King caused the Clarke and Schollers to be banished the University. This Victory of the Scholars stuck

Clarke of Oxford banished.

1. Zege Hencley, (so call'd from one of the Hencleys; or Hincleys, viz. either Laurence Hincley, or North Hincley, (oftentimes call'd Ferry Hincley, and, from the vast quantity of Ivy that was formerly, before the present Church or Chappel was built, about the Church, Ivy Hincley) or else South Hincley, dedicated to St. John Coll. nostr. MSS. Vol. 102. p. 121.) both situated in Berkshire (being Chappels of Ease to Cumnor, the Church of which is dedicated to St. Michael Coll. nostr. MSS. Vol. 102. p. 119.) but are near Oxford.

(more)

fo

so much in the Townsmen's Stomachs, that it was one main reason of the Barbarity they shew'd the Scholars in the very great Conflict that afterwards fell out in the Reign of Edward the third, which indeed is much the biggest that ever happened between the two Bodies.

6 VIII. But tho' Mr. Wood hath published the beforementioned Passage, and refers to a MS. for it; yet since he hath not told us where this MS. is lodged (which, notwithstanding, I have at last found to be that in the Cottonian Library) I am of opinion, that he had it from second hand, either from Brian Twyne's, or Dr. Gerard Langbaine's Papers, which he had glean'd, and out of which, in a very great measure, he collected his Book. I have seen, among other things, two MSS. Catalogues of the Magistrates of the University of Oxford, drawn excellently well, (with references to the several Registers and Books made use of) one by Brian Twyne, and the other by Dr. Langbaine, and twas from these Catalogues that Mr. Wood compiled his Catalogue, in which much Reading is shew'd. 'Tis observable, that Mr. Wood does not tell us, what the foresaid ~~Darewell~~ or ~~Darwell~~ (mentioned in this Fragment)

Which tho' it be published by Mr. Wood, yet he seems to have had it from second hand. The ~~Darewell~~, mentioned in that Account, is, probably, the same with ~~Darwell~~ ~~Dell~~. ~~Darwell~~ ~~Dell~~ the oldest Well of note about Oxford. St. Edward's Well by St. Clement's, older than the old Well from which Saint Croffe's Parish, in the Suburbs of Oxford, was called ~~Holywell~~. The respect formerly paid to Wells, which occasioned Injunctions against the Worship of them.



ment) was. For my part, I take it to have been what we now call **Walton Well**, (so named from the old Village of **Walton**, now destroyed) which is on this Side of another old Well call'd **Aristotle's Well**, and sometimes **Bruman's Well**, which Name of **Bruman** it had from one **Brumman** or **Bruman le rich** or the rich, who lived in the time of K. Hen. III. (when Robert of Gloucester flourished) or, as others say, about the time of K. Henry I<sup>st</sup>. As **Brumman**, or **Bruman**, was a very wealthy Man, so he had a great Estate hereabouts, was commonly called **Brumman the rich** of **Walton**, and was always very civil and obliging to the Scholars. In those times, what we now call **Walton Well** was styl'd **Harewell** or **Horewell** from it's Antiquity, (as **Hartwell**, or **Harewell**, near Abbington in Berks was likewise so call'd upon the same account) **hare** or **hore**, as I have lately insinuated \*, signifying *old*, which Name it retain'd, among many, divers Years after. I take it to be the oldest Well of note about Oxford, where, however, there were formerly a great many famous Wells. **Holwell** cannot come at all in competition with it for it's Antiquity. For the Church or

1. Coll. nostr. MSS. Vol. 67. p. 114. 3. Coll. nostr. MSS. p. 14. Item Pref. nostr. ad Joan. Vol. 88. p. 26. 4. Videtur Pref. Ross. Hist. regum Anglæ, p. nostr. ad Heming. Chanc. VIII. 2. Coll. nostr. MSS. Vol. Eccl. Wig. 934. 5. 02. q

# P R E F A C E.

Chappel of Holywell is properly call'd St. Croſe's (being dedicated to the Holy Croſs, and built too in form of a Croſs, tho' the North part be now down) and 'twas firſt call'd Holywell from the Well many Years after the Building of it, when the Water was known and ſaid to have a peculiar virtue for the Eyes, and was thence term'd *holy*. But tho' Holywell was ſo much celebrated, yet the Fame of St. Edward's, or, as others', St. Edmund's, Well, without Bridgſet, or rather Bridghithe or Bridghythe, commonly, and indeed more anciently, call'd St. Clement's, by Oxford was far greater, in ſo much that there was a Reſort of all ſorts of People from all Parts to it, and the Water of it was believed to be ſo effectual in curing divers Diſtempers, and thereupon held to be of ſo great Sanctity, that here they made Vows, and brought their Alms and Offerings. This was the Caſe alſo of abundance of other Wells throughout the Kingdom, which gave occaſion to ſeveral Injunctions prohibiting ſuch reſpect, as a Thing indecent and ſuperſtitious, and, among others, the Worſhip of this Well of St. Edward was particularly forbid by Oliver Sutton, Biſhop of Lincoln, in the time of Edward the firſt. This Well-worſhip was call'd by our Saxon Anceſtors *Filpeophunge* or

*Filpeophunge* MSS. Vol. 88. | Plor's Natural Hiſt. of Oxford.  
p. 16. 2. Ibid. p. 10. // 3. Dr. I. Iſtice, chap. II. ſ. 20.

gaſd

*Filpeophunge*

Edgar's Canons and K. Cnut's Laws, as they  
in a Court at London under Archbishop An-  
selm in the Year 1162. as is well noted by Mr.  
Somner, and some of our best Critics ob-  
serve, that what is translated *Will-worship* in  
Colossians should be *Will-worship*. This Well  
of St. Edward is now quite stop'd up, and hath  
been so for many Years, but it was in the  
Field about a Furlong S. E. West of St. Ed-  
mund's Church, and I have heard some of the  
Ancients of Oxford talk of it; as many Old  
People will likewise speak with great satis-  
faction of the old Well [call'd by them com-  
monly *Crutwell*, not *Cywell*] of Holywell,  
this was also stop'd up; as a vast Number of  
others were, after the Injunctions came to be  
of force, and were put in Execution; but it  
must be acknowledg'd, that *Crutwell* godhith  
was almost opposite to the Cross that stood in the  
Wall of Magdalen College: George, now Arch-  
bishop of York, in the late Dr. Plot's manuscript, tells us that the  
Well behind Holywell Church, in the Countrey  
before the Monastery House, was stop'd up in  
some Years after it had been stop'd, and that it  
continued in great fame till the Siege of Oxford,  
particularly for it's good service to bad Rats,

See Sixen Dith. voc. *Pilgerstunge*. s. Ch. II. v. 13. m. 14.  
Hist. of Oxford, ch. X. §. 142.

which



for them, which some Years ago was put down.

Our Author's Poetry agreeable to the Genius of his Age, and his regard to Truth in his Rhythms answers the Custom of the Pythagoreans, and old Britain.

Y. M. I am here very sensible, that an Objection against Robert of Glou- cester will be started by several upon the score of his Poetry, as if that were a very cogent Argument to make him neglected and despised. But he (and not Chaucer, as Dr. Thomas Fuller, and some others would have it) is the Poet of the English Nation; and he is, on that account, to be as much respected, as even Ennius himself was among the Romans, and I have good reason to think, that he will be so by Friends to our Antiquities, and our old History. 'Tis the Genius of the Age that is to be regarded in such Pieces of Poetry. The Poetry of those times consisted of Rhythms both here and in other Countries, and the Poets thought they had done their Part well, if their Rhythms, how- ever mean otherwise, related matter of Fact, and were agreeable to Truth. And truly this exactly corresponded with the Rules of the an- cient Pythagoreans. For some Tully tells us, at the Beginning of the 1<sup>st</sup> Vol. Book of his Tus- culan Questions, that the Pythagoreans used to put their Precepts and other Things of great

beauties, most like- ly, and most agreeable to the Rules of the Pythagoreans.

Church History of Britain, by Rob. of Glouc. was com- p. VI. p. 268. tho' he had be- fore told us, l. III. p. 4. that

ments (among which to be sure are to be reck-  
 on'd the famous Acts of their Ancestors) into  
 Verse, and that it was usual with the old Ro-  
 mans, according to the Custom of the Pytha-  
 goreans, when they sat at Banquets, to recite  
 the Wirtues and Praises of Great Men in Verse,  
 and singing and play upon the Pipe upon such  
 occasions; and likewise, as I take it, even the  
 old Britains, who followed the Pythagorean  
 Doctrine, addicted themselves so much to  
 Verse, as well the Pythagoreans as Ro-  
 mans and Britains took care that no Verse  
 should tend to the Injury of another, one of  
 the Laws of the XII. Tables expressly forbid-  
 ding any such Indecency, and some of our old  
 Rhythms laying down Rules against any unbecom-  
 ing Expressions in Poetry, such as may con-  
 vey to Immorality, and in this as well as his  
 bad affected way of relating matter of Fact in  
 Rhythms our Author is to be commended, as a  
 true Pictor in Antiquity.

side. But since therefore, Robert of He hath continued  
 Gloucester appears in all accounts to be so long hid from  
 be so valuable an Author, what reason we Wed. The va-  
 can be assign'd, that he hath been so long in the Harleian  
 much neglected, and that his was fol-  
 long since published in the World? It is in the Edition, that we now  
 probable the Obsolescence of the Lan- The Lan-  
 guage might be the main reason, or, at as well as  
 least, 'tis likely, that some Persons of the MS. of the  
 lived in the time of that, by one who  
 Hen. VI.

Disposition, but pleased with several of his re-  
 nowned Relations of Things; might have been  
 high to an insignificant Writer, and prejudice  
 the Readers far more against him, than they  
 went not at all solicitous about an Edition. Be-  
 this as it will, at I took upon him to be one of  
 the first Rank in our old Historians, so I, many  
 Years ago, had thoughts of publishing him ac-  
 cording to the Bodleian MS. to which I had  
 then daily access. But finding afterwards, that  
 there are much better Copies in the World, I  
 laid aside my Design of publishing this Author,  
 and did not resume it till above a Year ago,  
 when the Loan of a MS. that formerly belonged  
 to Sir Simonds D'Ewes, (whose MSS. the Earl  
 of Oxford purchas'd) was procur'd for me out  
 of the Harleyan Library by that most eminent  
 Physician the learned Dr. Richard Mead, who  
 is my very great Friend. It came to me, accom-  
 panied with another MS. of Robert of  
 Gloucester, the Loan of which was obtain'd  
 for me out of the Herald's Office by another  
 great Friend, the learned John Bridges, Esq.  
 who was at the trouble of transmitting to me  
 the said MSS. to me. As soon as I saw the Har-  
 leyian MS. I presently concluded, that it was a  
 very good one, and authentick; and therefore  
 I immediately transcrib'd it, and resolv'd to  
 make it my Text. But then as to that of the  
 Herald's Office, I found not only the Language of  
 Ro-

Robert of Gloucestre to be altered throughout in  
is, but the Work quite changed in several  
spots, by having some Passages transposed and  
others omitted, and divers inserted which were  
never written by Robert of Gloucestre, who  
was of different Principles from this Author. A  
great deal of Prose History in English partly  
taken from Geoffrey of Monmouth, partly from  
William of Malmesbury, partly from Bruges of  
England, *Polystoricon*, &c. It is intermixed in  
this MS. with what is in Rhymer, but as the  
Substance of most of this is already published  
in Stowe (who had seen this MS.) and other  
Books, I have set out much the greatest part  
of it, and confirmed my self to the genuine  
Work of Robert of Gloucestre, which however  
I have carefully compared with this MS. of the  
Herald's Office, and taken notice of what I  
thought proper, and have inserted my Obser-  
vations from it (among which are to be reph-  
onded also those of the Prose part) at the bot-  
tom of the page, always subjoining *ut. scilicet*  
the MS. of the College of Arms to them. [Who  
the Author was, that took such a liberty with  
Robert of Gloucestre (a thing that hath hap-  
pened to many other ancient Remains) I will  
not pretend at present to determine; but this  
is certain, that he both lived and wrote in the  
time of Hen. VI. as appears from this *Manu-  
script*, written all [excepting pp. cccc. xliii.]  
in



in red Letters, but in the same Hand with the Book ) at the Beginning of the Work: A pedigree, from William Conquerour, of the Crowne of Engelonde, lynnally descendyng, on to kyng Henry the vi. in the end of thys boke lynnied in Figures. Thys boke, with hys Antecedens and consequens, was ful ended the vi. day offe August, the yere of oure lorde a D. tccc. xlviii. and the yere of oure souerayn lorde kyng Harry the vi. after the conquest the xxi.

Who, however, is pleased to conceal his Name, as he does also that of Robert of Gloucester. A Rhythmical Account of the Kings of England, at the End of his MS. which is here likewise printed.

§ XI. Tho' this MS. of the Herald's Office (for the use of which I am in a particular manner obliged to my learned Friend John Anstis, Esq. Garter, principal King of Arms) be in several Places imperfect, and hath some of the Leaves transpos'd (as a few Leaves are also transpos'd in the Harleian MS.)

yet 'tis, as I judge, the very original Book. The Author, undoubtedly, took a great deal of pains in new modelling Robert of Gloucester, and in adapting every Thing to his own Scheme. He divers times introduceth the Rhythms by the Name of old Rhythms, but never so much as once mentions the Name of Robert of Gloucester, or pretends to discover what his own Name was. Mr. Weever had diligently perus'd this MS. and quotes it sometimes as if the whole were Robert of Gloucester's, a mistake that some great Men besides have

have been guilty of with respect to other Writers, as may plainly appear, as well from other Instances, as from what I observ'd lately with regard to Fordun's *Scotichronicon*. The Brevet mentioned in the Note abovesaid is still to be seen at the end of the MS. together with the Limnings or Pictures (all but that of William Rufus and Henry I. which are cut out) of the Kings of England from William the Conquerour to Hen. VI. inclusively, and this additional Part is also cited by Weever, but in that he happens to distinguish rightly, making it, as it is, quite different from any Piece of Robert of Gloucester's Writings. The Pictures I have omitted, but the rest I have printed in my Appendix <sup>5</sup>, and, I hope, I have thereby obliged those that have any respect for our Antiquities.

§ XII. The Reader will perceive at first sight, that these Rhythms are much shorter than those of Robert of Gloucester. And indeed in this very MS. in the Body of the Book, is also a great Number of other Rhythms, that are also shorter than Robert's, I mean such as relate to Richard the First; (which nevertheless are erroneously ascrib'd by Dr. Fuller<sup>2</sup> to Robert of Gloucester:) but then I have quite

But these Rhythms are much shorter than those of Robert of Gloucester, as are likewise those in this MS. that relate to King Richard I.

<sup>1</sup> Num. III. 2 Ch. Hist. I. the Margin calls them Robert  
III. p. 43; where he gives us of Gloucester's  
the following Rhythms, and in

omitted all these, partly because they are (in many respects) strangely Romantick, and partly because they are of the same kind with those that were printed by Wynkyn de Worde in the Year 1528. under the Title of *The Story of the noble Prynce Richard Cure de Lyon*, of which I never yet saw but one Copy, which is that in the Bodleian Library, that I formerly mentioned in a Letter about Geoffrey Chaucer that I writ in the Year 1709. to the before mentioned ingenious Mr. Bagford, which Letter I shall insert at large in my Appendix; partly because (provided I may be allow'd to say this) it was much approved of by my late very honest and learned Friend Mr. John Urry, to whom some body had communicated it, and partly because it happened to be, upon several accounts, commended by some other Persons of distinction,

\* *Ysaia*  
(with Fol-  
ler) that is  
Ysaia in  
Palestine.

King Richard with good intent  
To put offe of *Ysaia* went  
On morn he sent after Sir Robert Schirelle  
Sir William Waterwille  
Sir Hubert and Sir Robert of Turnham  
Sir Bertram Brandes and John de Seynt John.

Which very Rhythme I find also in MS. of the *Herodotus*, where in those about Richard I. in the they are thus expressed:

King Richard with good intent  
To that cite of *Ysaia* went.  
On morn he sent after Robert Schirelle,  
& Sir William the Waterwille,  
Sir Hubert & Robert of Turnham,  
Sir Bertram Brandis & John de Seynt John.

1. s. III. 2. Nam. IV.

to whom it was occasionally shew'd. Nor have I heard of but one more printed Copy of this Book about K. Richard (tho', without doubt, they were formerly common enough) and that is that in the Harleyan Library, which is much more clean and perfect than the Bodleian Copy, as I am assured by my ingenious Friend the Reverend Mr. Timothy Thomas, M. A. and Student of Christ Church, who takes notice, that the Title Page of this Book has a wooden Cut of a Knight on horseback, attended by a Squire, and these words on the top of the Page, *Kyng Rycharde cure delyon :*

what there then follows on the other side of the Leaf,

*The prologue of glory*

*Sache grace and sache victory*

*Thou sendest to King Rychard*

*all that thou wilt send to the King*

*It is good to have the King*

*the King's grace and the King's victory*

*of King Rychard and of the King*

*of King Rychard and of the King*

&c.

and the end of the Book are these words :

I. In his Letter to me Oct. 13. 1713. 2. So in his Letter to me June 10. 1713.

Vol. L

h

Thus

¶ Thus endeth the story of the noble Kyng Ry-  
charde cure de lyon. Imprinted at London by Wyn-  
kyn de worde. The yere of oure lorde. M. CCCC  
and. XXVIII.

The Author of  
which Rhythms a-  
bout Richard I.  
seems to have been  
Robert of Brunne.

§. XIII. Now altho' I will not pre-  
tend to discover the Author of the ad-  
ditional Rhythms about our Kings to  
Robert of Gloucester, yet (at present)  
I am of opinion, that those about Richard the  
first in the Body of the Book, as well as the  
printed ones, were written by Robert of Brunne,  
the same, I mean, that translated Robert  
Grossthead's *Manuale peccatis* (or *Manuel de  
pechie*) out of French, of which there is a small  
Fol. MS. in the Harleyan Library on Parch-  
ment, wrote very near the Author's time,  
having two Columns on each page, as those  
Rhythms about Richard the first, in the MS.  
of the Heralds Office, are likewise in two Co-  
lumnns, contrary to what Robert of Gloucester's  
are. This MS. of Robert of Brunne's Transla-  
tion begins with this Title in Red letters:

*Here bygynney the boke þat men clepyen in frensche  
manuele peccche þe whych boke made yn frensche  
Robert Gros test Bysshop of lyncolne*

Adyr and sone and holy goste }  
þat art o god of myghtes moste }  
At þy wurldhypp þul we bygyff }  
To shame þe fend & thew oure synne }

*Synne*

# P R E F A C E.

117

Synne to thep ha to frame }  
 God to wurschyp he tend to shame }  
 Shameful synne ys god ta lete }  
 Al þat men do hope sunne & grete }  
 þe grete withouten pryvyte }  
 þat ben coume to me & the }

This Author became famous very soon, even  
 in the Year 1303. 31. Edw. I. (above thirty  
 Years before he finished his *Chronicle*, a most  
 rare Work, and known to very few of our Hi-  
 storians and Antiquaries, which was in the  
 Year 1338.) as appears from the following  
 Lines, which conclude the second Column of  
 the first Page of the said MS. Translation of  
*Spenser's* *pertht*, and were sent me, with what  
 I have already said about this MS. by my be-  
 loved mentioned ingenious Friend Mr. Timothy  
 Thomas, and he did it the more readily, not  
 only because they have the *Author's* (or rather  
*Translator's*) Name, but because there are in  
 them some other Circumstances, which may con-  
 tribute to know him more perfectly.

To alle croslyn men undir sunne }  
 And to gode men of brunne }

1. In a Letter dated Sept. 19. 1723.

h 2

And

And speciall alle be name  
 þe schawthe of symprynghame  
 Masters of brunne gretteþ to  
 In al godenesse þat may to proto  
 Of byrnywake yn helteuene  
 Syrs myle belyde sympryngha euene  
 y dwelled yn þe pryorye  
 Mytene here yn cumpange  
 In þe tyme of gode dane Jone  
 Ad camelton þas note ys gone  
 In þys tyme was þe bare ten geres  
 And knew and herde of þys maners  
 Soppyn with dane Jone of clyntone  
 Spue wentyr weþ by gan y wone  
 Dane selpp was mayster þat tyme  
 þat y began þys englysh tyme  
 þe geres of grace fol þan to be  
 A þoufynd a þre hundred e þre

This Robert of Brunne the same with Stowe's Robert Brune. Stowe was certainly the Author of the Fragments, that I have printed in Heming. Stowe's Homage, and the value of his Chronicle. A very remarkable passage out of Robert of Brunne's Chronicle, together with the same as it occurs in Stowe.

g. XIV. This Robert of Brunne is the same with Robert Brune, that is quoted in the Margin of the Folio Edition of Stowe's Annals under the Year 1215 in the Reign of King Henry III. Boed what Book twas that Stowe made use of there, he hath not been pleased to acquaint us. Neither, indeed, B either Brune or Brunne mentioned in the valuable Fragments of Stowe, that I have printed lately at the End of Heming

from a Copy communicated to me by my ingenious and curious Friend Mr. John Murray. We call these Fragment's Stowe's, because I find the

the Conjecture I made in my Dissertation about them, viz. not only that John Stowe was the Author of them, but that they belong'd to some short Chronicle, to which was prefix'd some Calendar, to be very just and true. For indeed they belong'd to Stowe's Summary or Abridgement of the Chronicles of England. For tho' I have not yet met with a Copy of this Summary with these Fragments, in which we have an Account of his Author, yet in a Preface that he put to one Edition of his Summary, which ends in the Year 1573. he expressly tells us, that he was the Author of those Fragments. I never saw (that I remember) but one Copy of that Edition, and it was given me by my very learned Friend Mr. Baker of Cambridge. This Copy, tho' a little imperfect both at the Beginning and End, is a very great Curiosity (as indeed all Editions of the Summary are now Curiosities) and I esteem it the more, because I cannot learn, that this Preface is in any other Edition. There is a Calendar at the Beginning, which confirms my Notion also as to that Point. For better satisfaction, I shall reprint this Preface in my Appendix, as I should have done in Heming had it then been in my possession. The Reader will perceive by it the disingenuous dealing of Richard Grafton towards John Stowe; a Man tho' of no great Learning, yet of incredible Industry in collecting



ing old MSS. and in preserving other Antiquities, and so faithful as Historian, that he hath been much esteem'd by Camden and our greatest men, in so much that the famous Sir Roger Lestranger, talking some Years before his Death with a very ingenious and learned Gentleman about our Historians, was pleas'd to say, that it was always a wonder to him, that the very best that had pen'd our History the English should be a poor Taylour, namely John Stowe. Sir Roger said a Taylour, because Stowe, as is reported, was bred a Capmaker (and so perhaps his Father Thomas Stowe was before him) and was of Merchant Taylours Company. The Trade of Capmaking was then much in fashion, Hats being not at that time much in request. But notwithstanding Stowe hath not declared what Book of Brune's it was, to which he owed his Information, yet I find that it was Robert of Brunne's Chronicle, before mentioned. For the very remarkable Verses, that Stowe hath printed (under the seventh Year of Edward I.) from Brune in pag. 201. of the said Fol. Ed. of his Annals, are thus express'd in the old MS. of Robert of Brunne's Chronicle, that I have now before me, and belongs to the Inner Temple Library, being given with other MSS. to that Society by the last Will of William Petit, Esq. late Keeper of the

1. Coll. nostr. MSS. Vol. 62. p. 3.

Records in the Tower of London, one of whose  
 trustees being my learned Friend, before men-  
 tioned, John Anstis, Esq. 'tis by his means  
 that I have had the Loan of it from that learned  
 and honourable Society.

Edward did smyte rounde peny, halff peny, fethyng,  
 he croce passed & passed he bounde of alle purgours  
 he rying.  
 he bynges & fise falle he he bede & his more larkens  
 he croce the what cite it was in coyned & smyten  
 he poure man as he presse he peny prayles no bing.  
 he was & he left, he felle him with a feryng.  
 he was & two hundred & fourscore yeres mo.  
 he was men wouren & he was is gan ge.

The Words are somewhat different in Stowe,  
 and for that reason I shall here annex them,  
 by which means they may the more easily be  
 compared together. ~~Wherena~~ (saith he) he  
 fise this time [A. D. 1279.] the penny was to be  
 have a double croce, with a cress, in such sort, that the  
 same might easily be broken in the middlest, or into  
 foure quarters, and so to be made into halfe pence or  
 farthings: which order was taken in the yeare of  
 Christ 1106. the 7. of H. the 1. it was now ordained, that  
 pence, halfe pence, and farthings should be made round,  
 wherupon was made these verses following.

first  
 halfe  
 pence  
 and far-  
 things  
 round.

Pierce  
 Longtofe.

Edward did smite round peny, halfe & peny farthing.  
 The croce passes the bond of all throughout the ring:

Robert  
 Brune.

1. s. XL. 1. Dele. 3. Sic, pro first. 4. There is a comma af-  
 ter peny in the 4to. Ed. 1593.

The Kings side was his head, and his name written.  
The cross side what Cite it was in, coyned for fauour.

To poore man, ne to Priest, the peny fraises nothing,  
Men giue God aye the least, they feast him with a farthing:

A thousand two hundred, fourescore yeares<sup>2</sup> add mo.

On this money men wondred, when it first began to goe.

The old money (adds Stowe) was not forbidden to goe  
with the new: and besides these monies there was  
coyned groates, containing foure pence the pece.

Regist. of  
Bury.

The pound of esterling money at this time contain-  
ing 12. ounces, to wit, fine siluer (such as men take  
into soyle or leaues, & is commonly called siluer of Sur-  
therom lane) 11. ounces, 2. esterlings, and one festling,  
and the other 17. 6. ob. q. to be alay. . . Also the pound  
ought to wey of money 20 s. 3. d. by account, so that  
no pound ought to be above 20 s. 4. d. nor less, then  
20. s. 2. d. by account. The ounce to wey 20. d. The  
peny to wey 24. graines, &c.

The late learned Bishop Fleetwood hath re-  
printed the whole Passage from Stowe, to which  
he hath added many curious Particulars of his  
own, in pag. 44. of his excellent Book called  
*Chronicon Preciosum*, to which I shall refer the  
Reader.

Instead of the ano-  
nymous fabulous  
Rhythms upon Ri-  
chard I. I have in-  
serted the genuine  
ones of Robert of  
Gloucester, in a  
Continuation of  
the Harleian MS.  
from the Cottonian  
Library.

§. XV. To what hath been said about  
my omitting the foresaid Rhythms  
(the Author of which, I believe, was  
Robert of Brunne) another reason may  
be added, and that is this, that in their  
stead I have published the true ge-

1. And propter in dicta Ed. 2. In qua Ed. add pro  
add habemus.

nuine

mentioned upon this Prince of Robert of  
 Gloucester himself, who left not whatever he  
 thought Romantick, as we may gather from  
 his own Words, and would therefore, without  
 doubt, have pass'd by these, had they been in  
 being in his time, which are so very fabulous  
 as to be look'd upon only for their Antiquity,  
 and as a Curiosity. I must confess, that these  
 genuine Rhythms of Robert of Gloucester re-  
 lating to Richard I. are wanting in the Har-  
 leyan MS. which ends in that Year of K. Ste-  
 phen's Reign, in which the Empress Maud made  
 her Escape from the Castle of Oxford, wherein  
 she had been so long besieged by K. Stephen.  
 But then they are extant in the MS. of the  
 Cottonian Library, in which MS. the History  
 is brought down to the latter End of K. Henry  
 the Third's Reign, and 'tis from thence I have  
 supply'd the Harleian MS. the intire Conti-  
 nuation out of it being procur'd for me by my  
 most generous Friend, before mentioned, the  
 learned Dr. Mead, who, after he had got it  
 transcrib'd wholly at his own Expenses, put it  
 into the hands of another of my very good  
 Friends the learned John Bridges, Esq. who  
 is likewise mentioned above, and so it came  
 safely to my hands.

By the Author

1777

. XVI.

1777

The Harleian MS. perfect, tho' it comes nothing near so low as that of the Cottonian Library. One Leaf, at least, is wanting in the Cottonian MS.

§. XVI. Notwithstanding the Harleian MS. breaks off so early, yet since it ends about the middle of a Page, and with a full Line, 'tis justly look'd upon by Criticks as a perfect Book. So that, in all likelyhood, the Author carried on the Work at first no farther, but after some time resumed it again, and brought it down to his own time. The Harleian MS. seems to have been written in the Reign of K. Edward the Third, but the Cottonian one is judg'd to be about 50. Years older than the Harleian. The Harleian MS. agrees, (abating some Variations in the Language) so far as it goes, with the Cottonian one, and yet, without doubt, they were transcrib'd from different Copies, one from the Work as it was first finish'd by the Author, the other from a MS. that was compleated after the Author set about it again after some Intermission. The Cottonian MS. ends in the Year 1270. and so there wants but two Years to compleat Hen. the Third's Reign, who died Nov. 16. 1272. The Author undoubtedly finish'd that Reign, and 'tis agreed upon by such as have seen and consider'd it, that the Cottonian MS. which ends at the bottom of a Page, wants one Leaf, if not more, to fill up that Reign. And this, I think, is likewise confirm'd from some MSS. of Robert of Gloucester (whereof one is that in the Bodleian Library) which

which tho' they want all K. Henry the Third's  
Reign, ending the History with that of King  
John, yet they have the following Verses, in  
which a reason (tho' a very poor one) is given  
for omitting the Author's Account of the Bat-  
tles of Lewis and Evesham in those MSS.

Henry his sone come after, & his londe þan noure,  
Had afti geer & his helpe his kyndome,  
Who also twenty batles, and des was Iwale,  
Had batles at Borthmouthe, þer his best gyt was,  
Edw. were in his tyme two Batalles in londe,  
At Lewes and at Euesham, as I understonde,  
That were hadde longe, & gyt ne ben forgoten nonge,  
That tott in this bote ne ben thet moegt nonge,  
Of þat tyme twelfe hundred, & two and twenty geer,  
Weds was the kyngs Henry, as I seide now eer.

Edward his sone than was, man of gret pris,  
At Westmynstre crownyd, thronge kyngs & wis,  
That of Walsche londe ctenliche al owte  
He wan the Signorie, were thet neber so promte

§. XVII. Our Author, therefore, hav-  
ing brought his History to the End of  
the Reign of Henry the III. and being  
about to write that of Edw. I. was (as it  
seems to me) prevented from going far-  
ther by Death, but in what Year it was of

Our Author seems  
to have dyed in the  
Beginning of Edw.  
the First's Reign.  
Himself gives an  
expres Testimony  
of the Time in  
which he flourish-  
ed.

I. E Coll. nostr. MSS. Vol. 1. lenti, qui meam in gratiam ean-  
dem perquam benevole e Codice  
MS. excerpit. Hanc autem  
schedulam ad calcem Vol. 97.  
mibi donata ab amicissimo or-  
natissimoque Juvene Jacobo  
Collectaneorum nostrorum in-  
serui.

that King's Reign it doth not appear, I think, it must have been after the death, because in pag. 224. he mentions K. Arthur's fair Tombe, in the middle of the Quire, before the high Altar at Glastonbury, which Tombe was \* so rais'd in the Year 1278. or the sixth Year of Edw. I. by order of that King. The chief Characteristick, that himself hath given of the time in which he flourish'd, is that about the Battle of Evesham in the Year 1268. when he tells us, that the day, on which it happened, was very dismal and dark, and that himself, to his great Fear and Astonishment, was an Eye-witness of this dreadful dark time.

Such was (saith he) þe motþre of Einesham (up  
batallē non it was)

e þet toþ Jēsu Crist wol tuēle [i. mede] spated was,  
As þe sēwene biokninge grillice e gode,  
As it bel of him solae, þo he wiste on þe rode,  
þat þow al þe middelerz werk heþe þer was in,  
þis þe woul þe gode men at Euesham me slou,  
As in þe þorp West a werk weder þer was,  
speteliche smart laou, þat want man agros,  
e ouer caste it þo teal þut lond, þat me miȝte drueþe.  
Grilliche weder þan it was ne miȝte an erpe be,  
An þeþe dropes of reins þer velle grate inou,  
þis tokninge bel in þis lond, þo me þis men slou,  
þor þretti mille þanne. þis isei Roberd,  
þat verþ þis boc made, e was wel sore aferd.

I. Pag. 560.

\* cf. p. 531, v. 4. for an event that happened in 1297 s. XVIII.

of XVII. This being so very clear and manifest a Testimony of the time, when our Historian lived; what reason can be thought of, that it should be overlooked by the unknown Writer of

which, however, is said over by one, who endeavour'd to settle his Age from proofs extracted from his

Some Remarks (sent me by the learned John Bridges, Esq.) at the bottom of the first Page of the Cottonian MS. touching the Age of Robert of Gloucester, especially since he pretended to draw his Proofs from the Author himself. One that undertakes such a Task should read every Passage over deliberately, and examine and sift them with the utmost care and nicety. But it seems this Writer rely'd more upon an interpolated MS. in the hands of the famous Mr. Thomas Allen of Gloucester Hall, than he did upon the genuine Work of the Author, and by virtue of that he brings Robert of Gloucester down to the latter End of Edward the Second; whereas he had no such Grounds to go upon in the genuine Book. "I have now copied" (saith Mr. Bridges) "half a Sheet out of the Cottonian MS. viz. The Remarks, at the bottom of the first page, in an unknown hand; touching the age of the Author, and his proofs collected from Rob. of Gloucester himself, and also giving an account of two Fragments, which are inserted

1. In his Letter to me Mar. 12. 1723. 2. See it printed in the Appendix, Num. VI.

"in





"*softness, gentle, and temperate, serene*" But the last  
 "is not elegant enough for him, in my  
 "opinion" *adjective applied as, how, brother O*

101. XXX. Thus my excellently learned  
 Friend, (who dyed just as I was putting  
 the finishing stroke to this Work,) from  
 whom I must humbly beg leave to differ  
 with respect to the last Proof, the Words  
 being, as I conceive, to be understood  
 not of Edward the Confessor, but of  
 the first King Edward after the Con-  
 quest, in whose Reign Robert of Glo-

ster rightly  
 observes the vast  
 Disproportion that  
 there was between  
 the pious Acts of  
 K. Edw. the Con-  
 fessor, and the first  
 K. Edward after the  
 Conquest. Inter-  
 polations are to be  
 looked upon as Re-  
 dundancies, not as  
 Perfections, in old  
 MSS.

cessor dyed. He justly acknowledg'd this King  
 Edward to be a good Prince, but then as justly  
 observes, that there was a vast Disproportion  
 between K. Edward the Confessor and him, there  
 being no Comparison to be made of the one  
 with the other, in their Acts of Piety, Charity,  
 Magnificence, and Hospitality: he duly consid-  
 ered. But then whereas the Remarker ob-  
 serves, that several Leaves, relating to the  
 History of Mellitus, to the Eucharist, and to  
 Gedwall, are wanting after fol. 72. in the Cor-  
 tman MS. (this is certainly a mistake in him,  
 and there is no doubt but the MS. is perfect  
 there, and of much better Authority, than if  
 they had been inserted. Interpolations (such  
 as these are) are always to be looked upon as  
 Redundancies in any old Authors, and the MSS.

1. See in the Appendix, pag. 610.

Answer

there-

therefore, that are without them, are bound to mean deficient. Had I thought otherwise, I might have multiplied them from the MSS. of the Herald's Office, where so much of this nature occurs, as I could also have strangely enlarged Fordun's genuine Chronicle, when I set him out lastly, had I judg'd it proper for me to blend and conform the Interpolations of the authentick Work together, as they are done in some MSS.

Ms. Thomas Burton, the famous Small-Coal Man, seems to have had a MS. of Robert of Gloucester. The learned Mr. Thomas Allen had two MSS. of him, one of which came to the Bodleian Library, the other to some unknown Hands.

4. XX. When I first saw by the noted synopsis Remarks, that the Harleian and Mr. Allen's MSS. notwithstanding their coming down to the same Period of time, were different, I began to be of opinion, that Mr. Allen's might have been the same; that was sometimes in the Hands of the late Mr. Thomas Baile, the famous Musical-Smith-God Man, which is thus mentioned in the first Part of the Auction Catalogue of his Bodleian Poem of the Kings of Britain from Gurganus the 1st to Belinus down to Henry II. The title of the Poem in the Catalogue, as I take it to be Robert of Gloucester's, that which makes me now think it to be different from Mr. Allen's is, it's not beginning so early as his did. So that perhaps this Copy of Mr. Allen came into some private Hands in

1. Pag. 94. num. 14. of the MSS. in Folio.

France,

Shew, and I fear, that it is now quite lost. That which gives ground to this Suspicion is, the Sale of much the greatest Part of Sir Kenelm Digby's admirable Library, which, after Sir Kenelm's Death, fell into some such private Hands in France, and 'tis certain, that his Library consisted, in a very great measure, of Books, that had belong'd to Mr. Allen. 'Tis true; Sir Kenelm gave a good number of the MSS. Mr. Allen had left him, to the Bodleian Library, not long after Mr. Allen's Death; and there is now among them a MS. of Robert of Gloucester, being the same that I have spoke of at the Beginning<sup>a</sup> of this Preface, and was us'd by Mr. Selden when he was writing his History of Tithes<sup>2</sup>; but then this MS. (which comes to the End of K. John) is different from that refer'd to by the Remarker, and therefore will not at all invalidate what I have said about its being lost in France. Yet if, after all, it will not be allow'd, that it was among those Books of his that were dispos'd of in France, it is probable it came to some other Person in England than Sir Kenelm. For Mr. Wood observes, that many of Mr. Allen's MSS. did not come to Sir Kenelm, but some to Mr. Richard James, and others to Sir Tho. Aylmer.

1. §. I. 3. Videtis Historiam nem ejusd. in quo opere citat  
Hic Declinarum, p. 206. & etiam Codicem Roberti nostri  
Astorum Catalogum sub 6. in Bibliotheca Cott.

"Soon after" [Mr. Allen's Death, which happened on Sept. 30. 1632.] "the chief part of his" [Mr. Allen's] "Library of incomparable MSS." (saith Mr. Wood) "coming into the hands of Sir Kenelm Digby, as the owner before had appointed, they were the next year given by him to the Bodleian or publick Library, where they yet remain. Some of them had before, and about the time of Allen's death, been got from him by Rich. James of C. C. Coll. for the Cottonian Library, and others came into the hands of Sir Tho. Aylesbury, Master of the Requests, but where those are now, in truth I cannot tell.

Mr. Selden and Mr. Wood had a right Notion of the Age of our Author, who ought to be reckoned among the Oxford Writers.

§. XXI. But tho' the Remarker was not so lucky as to adjust the Age of Robert of Gloucester, yet Mr. Selden, by distinguishing the Spurious Chronicle from that which is genuine, very readily found it out, and accordingly in his Notes on Eadmer<sup>2</sup>, and in his great work *de Synedriis veterum Ebraeorum*<sup>3</sup>, places him under Edw. I. about which time he hath placed him also in his *Titles of Honour*<sup>4</sup>, and in his Preface to Eadmer; (in which Preface he hath given us the Passage [something differing from the same as it is printed in his *Jam Anglorum facies altera*] about William the Conqueror's Sur-

1. Athen. Oxon. Vol. I. col. 50. p. 167. Ed. Amst. 1679. 4to.  
2. Pag. 169. 3. Lib. I. cap. 4. Ed. fol. 1631. p. 600. 5. P. III.

vey) well knowing, that, notwithstanding a Leaf or two is wanting, in all likelihood, in the Cottoman MS. he finished the Reign of Hen. III. in which Reign, from the Passage above transcrib'd, he plainly understood that he flourished, and that, carrying the Work no farther, he could not survive long after, at least not long enough to write the Glories of the Reign of Edw. I. Mr. Selden began very early to be acquainted with him, and no body hath done him more honour. He look'd upon him as a very valuable Historian, and, therefore, hath occasionally quoted him in several Places of his other Works, (particularly many times in his *Notes and Illustrations on the first Part of Drayton's Polyolbion*) as well as in his *Jani Anglorum facies altera*. Mr. Wood also had a right notion of his Age, but then he hath one Observation, that I have not met with elsewhere, and that is, that he was personally present at Oxford, when the Fray, I have spoke of, happened between the Scholars and the Townsmen in MCCLXIII. *Hæc mihi Inquisitio quadam* (saith that Author) *super eâ re facta succincte exhibit, cui nec repugnant Poetæ, ibi tum præsentis, carmina: quæ quamvis & succo careant & colore, cum ex novitate tamen delectationem nonnullam afferre possint, subjungi forte mereantur.* What authority

1. s. VII. 2. Hist. & Antiq. | *Glocestrensis* in Hist. metrica M.  
Univ. Oxon. J.L. p. 111. 3. Rob. | S. fol. 151. b. 153. a.  
k 2 Mr.

Mr. Wood had for this does not appear, than I suppose, he found it either in Brian Twyne or Dr. Gerard Langbaine. But whatever that authority was, I do not doubt but he went upon very good and sure grounds, and I shall for that reason, reckon Robert of Gloucester not only as an Oxford Writer, but as actually present in that University at the very time of that famous Scuffle.

Our Author seems to have resided in Oxford in an old House on the West Side of Stockwell Street.

§. XXII. It is said by several (and among others by Dr. Thomas Fuller) that he was a Monk of Gloucester. Nor do I know (at present) of any good reason to think otherwise. It is very

likely, therefore, that as a Monk he was sent hither by some of the Directors of the great Abbey of Gloucester, to take care of the Youth here, that they had under their care. In 10

I. "ROBERT of GLOUCESTER, so called, because a Monk thereof. He is painted (where I wonder) both by Bale and Pits, except disguised under another Name, and what I scarce can justify, does speak truly; who calls him a Rhimer, whilst such speak courteously, who call him a Poet. Indeed such his Language, that he is dumb in respect to the Readers of our age without an Interpreter.

\* Cells or Portions.  
† Ruler or Governor, sed quere.

"In the City of Bangor a great House was, and so it was, And there vnder viii. \* Cells and then of them the Name is so That q. c. Monks hadde oshur mon; And alle by hure travayle lyvede; Take now if they did so





mentiously, for that reason, towards the end  
of this History, and Nor will it seem strange, that  
any Monks of Gloucester should be here before  
the Foundation of any such College, as it is  
considered, that they were extremely desirous  
of having their Youth educated in Academicall  
Learning, and that this gave occasion, in good  
measure, to the said John Giffard to build this  
College in this Place, which he had observed  
his Neighbours, the Monks of Gloucester, to  
take so much delight in, and he was very will-  
ing to free them from hiring any Bachelors,  
and from being at other Charges for the Edu-  
cation of their young Nobles for the future to

XXIII. Among others, that were  
conversant with the Chronicle of Rob-  
ert of Gloucester, was John Weever,  
a person right famous for his very use-  
full Book of ancient Funerall Monuments, where  
he hath published many Passages of this Chro-  
nicle, but with so little skill, that he not only  
confounds the Spurious with the genuine Rob-  
ert of Gloucester, but even ascribes the Prole-  
gomena to him. In page 101 of his Introduc-  
tion, or Prefatory Discourse, he calls him Rob-  
ert the Monk of Gloucester, and speaks of  
him as a Writer about the Year 1138. Monthe-  
my of Hen III. And in the Book page 13  
459. brings him as low as Edw. I. in which it  
is right enough, provided he had not attrib-  
uted

The strange Mis-  
take of Mr Weever,  
with regard to the  
Age of Robert of  
Gloucester.

but that to Robert of Gloucester which is more  
 of his. But that he is quite out, when in pa-  
 ges he brings him as from the Herald's MS. and  
 there transcribes a passage to Roeschmann calls  
 it his, when it was really written by one, who  
 lived in the time of Henry VI. as the rest of the  
 Book is. It is very strange, that so diligent  
 a Man as Mr. Waver should not see, his Mistake  
 especially when he had the use of the very  
 MS. that now belongs to the Herald's Office  
 viz. MS. A. 11. I find, that the true Sir Robert of Brunne's  
 name of Robert of Brunne was <sup>the true Surname was</sup> Manning. But the  
 thing for he calls himself in one Place <sup>the true Surname of</sup>  
 of his Chronicle Robert Manning of Robert of Glouce-  
 Brunne, now Brunne. <sup>the true Surname of</sup>  
 in which place was a Monastery, and with also  
 that I would discover the true Surname of Ro-  
 bert of Gloucester. I have endeavour'd to do  
 this, but as yet in vain. This Name does not  
 at all agree with the name in any of our modern  
 Hand, in the Harleian MS. Nor does it. So  
 much as we can gather (what I know of) in the  
 Text of the Cottonian MS. except in the Pas-  
 sage in hand transcribed, where, however, we  
 have no Surname of any kind. Indeed I have  
 before observed, that at the beginning of  
 that MS. the History is ascribed to Robert of  
 Gloucester in a modern Hand, and it is by this  
 Name that he is called by Antiquaries and Hi-  
 storians,

Storians, who, without all dispute, had good Authority for it, tho' it does not appear, that any of them had met with his true Surname, which I suppose, came to be diffus'd after his Fame was spread for his skill in History, just as that of Robert Manning's dwindled also, when he was once celebrated. Nor did Manning seem so desirous of being called by his true Surname as by that of Brunne, that so Robert of Brunne might look as great as Robert of Gloucester. And that this was very great may appear from hence, that tho' many Robert of Gloucesters are met with in old Registers, yet

1. "One *Magister Rob. de Glou-*  
*cestria* was one of the Clerks  
 "or Chaplains to *John de Oron,*  
 "and *John Gey,* Bishops of *Nor-*  
 "wich, and is frequently met  
 "with as Witness to their  
 "Charters from 1176. to 1204.  
 "— *Ep. Rems* from some Re-  
 "gister of *Roy* saith, that he  
 "was an Archdeacon in the  
 "Church of *Norwich*, about *A.*  
 "*D.* 1219. but this I have not  
 "yet found my self. Perhaps he  
 "was the same with the *Mr. Rob.*  
 "*de Gloucest.* nominated to the  
 "Archdeaconry of *Sufford*, du-  
 "ring the vacancy of the See of  
 "*Lichfield* (Pat. 14. Joannis m.  
 "3. n. 2.) or with him who was  
 "Chancellor and Prebendary of  
 "*Chichester*, and died 7. Hen. III.  
 "(*Roc. Chuf. ejusd. anni.*) — By

"the Institution Rolls of *St. Alb.*  
 "*Willis*, Bp. of *Lincoln*, it appears,  
 "that one *Mr. Rob. de Gloucestria*  
 "was Instituted *A.D.* 1229. to  
 "the Church of *Tunum* (Archid.  
 "Oxon.)

"Another *Rob. de Gloucestria*  
 "Official to *Gosfray* Bp. of *Glouc.*  
 "after *A. D.* 1300. (Angl. Sac.  
 "I. Annales Wigorn.) perhaps  
 "the same who was Chancellor  
 "to *Rob. Winchelse* 1304. (Reg.  
 "Winch.) and to *Walter Reynolds*  
 "1318. Archbishops of *Canterbury*  
 "(Reg. Henr. perioris Cantuarij)  
 "— There was one of this  
 "name Prebendary of *St. Dun-*  
 "*stan* and Canon of *Wells*, who  
 "died *A. D.* 1321. (Regist.  
 "Johannis Droghedensis.)

"Another Rector of *S. and*  
 "*Aldersgar* 1318. (Newcom.)  
 "And

# P R E F A C E.

LIBR

(as far as I can learn) they were all eclips'd by the Historian, the Acts of all of them put together being not equal to what he hath done by compiling this Work. I have already noted, that neither the Name of Robert of Gloucester, nor that of the new Modeller of the History, is any where to be seen in the MS. of the Heralds Office. But the Work being discovered to be originally this Author's, on the Back side of the Book (which is of a late Binding in rough Leather) is put in golden Capital Letters,

ROBERT \*

OF

GLOUCESTER.

§. XXV. It must be confess'd, that in one part of this MS. at the very bottom, just on the Brink of a Page, are written these Words, in an old Hand (as ancient as, tho' a little different from, that of the Book :) *Hic incipit*

*Robertus Moille*. When I first saw these Words, I thought *Moille* had been the true Sirname of

The name of Robert Moille inserted at random, as it seems, in the MS. of the Heralds Office. That MS. concludes with some Verses that are not in Caxton.

"And in *Lib. Epist. Acad.*  
"Oxon. F. Ep. 23. Letters testi-  
"monial for *Robert Gloucester*,  
"A. M. but this was after the  
"year 1400.

other Secular Clerks  
"of both Names have occur'd  
"since 1320. none of  
"whom probably was our Hi-

"storian."

Hæc, meam in gratiam è Col-  
lectaneis suis à seipso descripta,  
cum amicissimo Bakero Cantabrigien-  
si (qui perquam libenter  
transmisit) communicavit vir  
eruditissimus Thomas Tannerus,  
Cancellarius Norwicensis.

Vol. I.

1

Ro

Robert of Gloucester, but the Words being written on a Page, where no new matter begins, and it being in a Prose part of the Book, and that too in the Story of the Saxon Times, and there being not the least reference to any Thing in the Volume, I take them as put down at random, and not to belong, in the least, to the Author. And this is all I have to say with respect to this MS. unless it be, that, after the Reign of Henry the Third, the History goes on in Prose (being the same, abating some Alterations, as usually happens in MSS. of this kind, with Caxton's Chronicle, which John Stowe is pleased to style a fabulous book, compiled by a nameless Author, but printed by William Caxton, and therefore called Caxton's Chronicle) to the famous Battle of Halidowne Hill, in the Year 1332. which was the sixth Year of K. Edw. the Third's Reign, in which the English got such an intire Victory of the Scots, and slew such a vast number of them, that, the Father of the Scottish Historians, John Fordun thought it too lamentable a Subject, to enter into the particulars of it. In relation to this Battle there are some Verses in this MS. that are not in Caxton, for which reason I shall here publish them, advertizing at the same time, that, tho, perhaps, formerly there were other Leaves (for there are the Remains of

1. Annals, p. 307. Ed. fol. 2. Scotchchronicon, p. 1022.

one, that had been cut out, now plainly to be  
 seen in it) in which, probably, the History had  
 been carried somewhat farther, yet, at present,  
 these Verses are the very last part of the Hi-  
 story, and are brought in thus: ——— and þan  
 þe Englysshe mynstrelle betyn hure tabrys, & blowyng  
 hure troyssys, and pypers pypendyn loude, and made  
 gret thoure vpon þe Scottes: þan hadde þe Englysshe  
 bachelerys eche of hem two whynges of archers, þe  
 whyche at þe assemble orpydly drawyn hure bowes,  
 and so þey smot þe Scottes, þat þey felle to grounde  
 by many þousandys, and anone þe Scottes by gonne to  
 fle fro þe Englysshemmen, forto haue hure lyues. But  
 whan þe knyghtys þat were byhynde þe Scottes, to  
 kepe hure horsis, sawe þe discomfourt, þey prikyd  
 alwey hure maistris hors, to kepe hem self fro perile.  
 And þan þe Englysshemmen toke many of þe Scottyshe  
 hors, and þey priked after þe Scottes, and slow hem  
 doune ryghte, and so men myghte se þe worpy and  
 noble kyng Edward of Engelond, and his folk, how  
 manfully þey chastyde þe Scottes.

that the **Scottes þan may myghte se**

þan a Scottis fyllde se,

And þe Englysshemmen after prikyng,

With sharp swordys þe Scottes stykyng.

þer hure banerys weryn founde

Al displayd lyeng on grounde.

And þay lay sprad on blood,

As þey fougheten on þe flood,

That þe Englysshemmen drete shold be,

For þat þey hoppe to se.

And so þey happy to speke,  
 Seing þe Good þat was on stonde,  
 For þe Englifhemmen myghte not stonde,  
 But yf adrens þay shold be,  
 e þan þerto loþ þey were,  
 For þey þoughte noughte in fuche fere,  
 But þey kept þein on londe,  
 So þat þe Scottes myghte noughte stonde,  
 For þey were allyd to growthe,  
 Many a þousand in þat stonde,  
 e þe Englifhemmen purfyt þem so,  
 For the flood was al a go;  
 And þus þe Scottes discomfyd were  
 In lptil tyme wif gret fere.

This Work is a  
 great Curiosity.  
 The Reproach in  
 neglecting the  
 black Letter.

§. XXVI. I have now finished what I  
 had to say (and, I fear, I have writ  
 too much) by way of Preface about

Robert of Gloucester. He is certainly a  
 great Curiosity, and I do not doubt, but he will  
 be esteem'd as such. As the Acts of the Apo-  
 stles, that I published from Archbishop Laud's  
 MS. is the first intire Book, that was ever  
 printed in England in Capital Letters, so this  
 Chronicle of Robert of Gloucester is the very  
 first intire Book, that was ever printed in this  
 Kingdom (it may be, in the whole World) in the  
 manner I have done it, that is, in the black Let-

ter,

ter, with a mixture of some Saxon Characters, which is the very Garb that was in vogue in the Author's time. The Saxon Characters, that are intermix'd, are *ȝ* or *g*, (which some represent by *z*), *þ* or *th* (the top of which in many MSS. among which are to be reckon'd those of this Author, is made a little too short, viz. *p*, just like the Saxon double *u*) *p* or *u* (which, however, is but here and there) and *y* or *ȝ*. I am very sensible, that the Obsolete-ness of the Language will deterr many from Reading this very usefull Historian; but to such, as shall be pleased to make themselves acquainted with him (in order to which the Glossary, I have drawn up and subjoyn'd, may be of some service) he will appear very pleasant, entertaining and diverting, and they will value him the more, as he comes out in his primitive Dress. As it is a Reproach to us, that the Saxon Language should be so forgot, as to have but few (comparatively speaking) that are able to read it; so 'tis a greater Reproach, that the black Letter, which was the Character so much in use in our Grandfathers days, should be now (as it were) disus'd and rejected, especially when we know, the best Editions of our English Bible and Common Prayer (to say nothing of other Books) are printed in it.

Oxford April 14.

1724.

THE



~~John Bridges, of Boston near Roxbury in  
Northamptonshire, Fellow of the Royal~~

~~Society [obscured]  
Nathan of Boston, in the County of~~

~~in [obscured]  
Ralph [obscured]~~

~~Esq., and [obscured] to the Right  
Rev. Father of [obscured] (Cathedral) [obscured]~~

~~E~~ **Edward Alexander, of Doctors Commons,**  
~~Esq.~~

**Thomas Allen, M. A. Rector of Merton and  
Kingsdown in Kent.**

**John Anstis, Esq. Garter, Principal King of Arms.**  
**Edmund Archer, D.D. Archdeacon of Lambeth.**

**The College of Arms**  
~~The Right Hon. the Earl of [obscured]~~

**Thomas Bacon, alias Sclater, of Catley near  
Linton in Cambridgeshire, Esq.**

**Thomas Baker, B.D. of St. John's Coll. Cambr.**  
**Charles Baly, M.D.**

**The Rt. Reverend Father in God, George  
(Hooper) Lord Bp. of Bath and Wells.**

**Oliver Barclay, M. A. Student of Christ-  
Church, Oxon.**

**Robert Baylis, Esq.**  
**William Bedford, M. A.**

**The Reverend Mr. Thomas Bell.**

**Mrs. Charles Bernard.**  
**Thomas Bowdler, Esq.**

**Thomas Brian, Esq.**  
**John**

**John Bridges, of Barton near Kettering in Northamptonshire, Esq. Fellow of the Royal Society. [deceas'd.]**

**Nathaniel Bridges, M. A. Rector of Orlingbury in Northamptonshire.**

**Ralph Bridge, M. A. Vicar of Southwell in Essex, and formerly Chaplain to the Right Rev. Father in God Henry (Compton) Ld. Bishop of London.**

**William Brome, of Ewithington near Hertford, Gent.**

**The Honble. William Bromley, Esq. Member of Parliament for the University of Oxford.**

**Edward Bruce, Esq.**

**The Right Honble. the E<sup>th</sup> Bruce.**

**Edward Burton, of the Middle-Temple, Esq.**

**The Honble. Benedict Leonard Calvert, Esq.**

**John Campbell, of Calder, Esq.**

**Francis Canning, of Foxcote in Warwickshire, Esq.**

**Mrs. Carter.**

**First Grade James (Bridges) Duke of Chandos**

**John Chicheley, of the Middle-Temple, Esq.**

**The Rt. Honourable the Earl of Cholmondeley.**

**Robert Cholmondeley, of Holford in Cheshire, Esq.**

**The Honble. George Clarke, Esq. D. Civ. L. Member of Parliament for the University of Oxford, and Fellow of All-Souls College in the same University.**

**Wal-**

Walter Clavell, of the Inner-Temple, Esq. F. R. S.  
 Sir Clement Cotterill, Kt. Master of the Ceremonies.

Thomas Crowe, of London, M. D.

## D

The Rt. Reverend Father in God Adam (Ottley) Lord Bp. of St. David's. [deceas'd.]

Ralph Davison, of London, Gent.

Francis Dickins, L. D. Regius Professor of Law of the University of Cambridge.

The Honble. Brigadier James Dörner, Esq.

Montague Gerard Drake, Esq.

Richard Dyer, M. A. Fellow of Oriel Coll. Oxon.

## E

Sir John Evelyn, of Wotton in Surrey, Kt. and Baronet.

## F

Richard Foley, Esq. Prothonotary of the Common-Pleas.

The Rt. Honble. Thomas Ld. Foley, Baron Foley, of Kidderminster in Worcestershire.

Richard Frewin, M. D.

Thomas Frewin, of Lincoln's-Inn, Esq.

Richard Furney, of Gloucester, M. A.

## G

Roger Gale, Esq. F. R. S.

Samuel Gale, Esq.

Thomas Girtler, D. D.

Thomas Goodman, M. D. Physician in ordinary to his Majesty.

Mr.

Mr. Thomas Granger.

Richard Graves, of Mickleton near Campden  
in Gloucestershire, Esq.

Henry Gregory, M.A. Student of Christ-Church  
Oxon.

John Griffin, of Sarsden in Oxfordshire, M.A.

Sir Richard Grosvenor, of Eaton in the County  
of Chester, Baronet.

The Honourable Francis Gwyn, of Ford-Abbey  
in Devonshire, Esq.

Fletcher Gyles, of London, Bookseller.

H

George Harbin, M. A.

Philip Harcourt, of the Inner-Temple, Esq.

The Right Honourable Simon Ld. Harcourt,  
Viscount Harcourt of Stanton Harcourt in  
the County of Oxford.

The Rt. Honourable Edward Lord Harley.

Edward Harley, Esq. M. A. of Christ-Church  
Oxon.

John Harwood, D.Civ.L. of Doctors Commons  
and F. R. S.

John Hill, B. D. Rector of Charleton upon  
Otmere in Oxfordshire.

Thomas Hinton, M. A. Rector of Lasham in  
Hampshire.

William Holwell, of Exeter, Esq.

Captain Humphreys.

I

Mr. George James, Printer in London.

Vol. I.

m

Thomas

Thomas Jett, Esq. F. R. S.

William and John Inrys, of London, Bookellers.

Maurice Johnson, Esq.

James Joye, of Duke Street Westminster, Esq.

Benedict Ithell, of Temple Dinley in Hertfordshire, Esq.

William King, D. Civ. L. Principal of St. Mary

Hall Oxon.

Gilbert Lake, B. D. Vicar of Chippenham in

Wilts.

Peter Le Neve, Esq. Norroy King of Arms.

Henry Levett, M. D. Physician to Sutton and St. Bartholomew's Hospitals London.

John Lewis, of Margate in Kent, M. A.

The Right Honourable George Henry (Esq.) Earl of Eitchfield.

The Honourable Society of Lincoln's Inn.

Francis Lutterell, of the Middle-Temple, Esq.

Charles Lyddell, Gentleman Com. of Christ Church Oxon.

Richard Lyddell, Esq.

John Markham, Gent. Apothecary to the Charter-House.

Legh Master, of New-Hall in Lancashire, Esq.

William Master, of St. Paul's Covent Garden, Esq.

Richard Mead, M. D. F. R. S.

Samuel Mead, Esq.

John

# Subscribers Names

233

John Burchard Mencknius, Counsellor and  
Historiographer to the King of Poland.

John Merrill, of Golden Square Lond. Esq.

Copiers Middleton, D. D. Principal Library

Keeper of the University of Cambridge.

Sir Charles Mordaunt, Baronet.

Richard Mostyn, of Penbedw, Esq.

Sir Roger Mostyn, Baronet.

John Murray, of London, Gent.

Robert Myddelton, of Chirke Castle in Den-

bighshire, Esq.

## N

The Rt. Honourable George (Cholmondeley)

Lord Newburgh.

His Grace Thomas Holles (Pelham) Duke of

Newcastle.

John Nicoll, M. A. Student of Christ Church

Oxon. and second Master of Westminster

School.

The Rt. Honourable Robert (Harley) Earl of

Oxford and Earl Mortimer.

## P

Thomas Palmer, of Fairfield near Bridgewa-

ter, Esq.

The Rt. Honourable Thomas (Herbert) Earl

of Pembroke.

Henry Plumpere, M. D. F. R. S.

m 2

Ri-

## R

Richard Rawlinson, D. Civ. L. of St. John's Coll. Oxon. and F. R. S.

Thomas Rawlinson, Esq. F. R. S.

The Hon<sup>ble</sup>. Sir Robert Raymond Knight, one of the Judges of his Majesty's Court of Kings-Bench.

Sir Robert Rich, of Sunning in Berks, Baronet.

Richard Richardson, of North-Bierly in Yorkshire, M. D.

Mr. Thomas Richardson, of London,

## S

Sir Thomas Sebright, Baronet.

Edward Sheldon, Esq.

Mr. John Shipston, of London.

Matthew Skinner, of Lincoln's-Inn, Esq. Recorder of the City of Oxford.

Sir Hans Sloane, Baronet, President of the College of Physicians, &c.

George Smith, of St. John's Coll. Cambr. Gent.

The Reverend Mr. William Smith, Vicar of Todington in Gloucestershire.

Robert Stephens, Esq. Solicitor of the Customs.

William Stratford, D. D. Archdeacon of Richmond, and Canon of Christ-Church, Oxon.

William Stuart, D. D.

Sir Philip Sydenham, of Brimpton D. Every in Somersetshire, Baronet.

John

T

John Ivory Talbot, of Wilts, Esq.  
 Thomas Tanner, D.D. Chancellor of the Dioc-  
 ces of Norwich, & Canon of Chr.Ch. Oxon.  
 William Tayler, of London, Bookseller.  
 Lewis Thomas, of London, Merchant.  
 Timothy Thomas, M. A. Student of Christ-  
 Church Oxon.  
 William Thomas, Esq.  
 John Thorpe, of Rochester, M. D. F. R. S.  
 The Honourable Mrs. Thynne.  
 Richard Topham, of Windsor, Esq.  
 Harry Trelawny, Esq.  
 William Trumbull, of East-Hamstead Park in  
 Berkshire, Esq.  
 Richard Tyson, of London, M. D.

W

Sir Robert Walter, Baronet. .  
 Lee Warner, Esq.  
 Sir Anthony Wescombe, Baronet.  
 James West, B.A. of Balliol-Coll, Oxon.  
 John Whiteside, M. A. Keeper of the Ashmo-  
 lean Museum, and F. R. S.  
 The Right Hon<sup>ble</sup>. Heneage (Finch) Earl of  
 Winchelsea.  
 Robert Woodforde, B.Civ.L. Rector of Yeovil-  
 ton in Somersetshire.  
 John Woodward, M. D. Fellow of the Royal  
 Society, and Professor of Physick in Gresham-  
 College London.

The



**The Honourable Lady Worfeley.**

**Dr. Worth of Dublin.**

**William Wright, of Offerton in Cheshire, Esq.**

**Hugh Wrottesley, of Lincoln's-Inn, Esq.**

**Y**

**The most Reverend Father in God (Sir) William (Dawes, Baronet) Lord Archbishop of York.**

W. H. RICHMOND  
1870

1870

1870

1870

1870

## *Advertisement.*

**T**He first Payment for this Work to Subscribers was one Guinea the large, and half a Guinea the small, Paper. The second Payment is to be the same with the first.

The Publisher is now printing (from a MS. in the Inner-Temple Library) **Peter Langtoft's Chronicle of England** (*as illustrated and improv'd by Robert of Brunne*) *from the Death of Cadwalader to the end of K. Edward the First's Reign.* To which will be added, besides a Glossary and other curious Papers, (1) *A Roll concerning Glastonbury Abbey, being a Survey of all the Estates belonging to that House at the Dissolution, taken by King Hen. the Eighth's order and for his use.* (2) *An Account of the Hospital of St. Mary Magdalen (near Bautre) in Nottinghamshire, by John Slacks, Master of that Hospital.* The Price of this Work (which will make two Volumes in 8<sup>vo</sup>. and was never before printed) will be two Guineas the large, and one Guinea the small, Paper; whereof half is to be paid at the time of Subscribing, and the rest when the Copies are delivered. Subscriptions are taken in either by the Publisher at Edmund-Hall, or by John Rance at the THEATER Printing House, in Oxford.



# ROBERT of GLOUCESTER'S CHRONICLE."

**ENGELOND** ys a wel god lond, ich mene  
 of eche lond best,  
 I set in þe ende of þe world, as al in þe west.  
 þe so god hym al a bounte, he kont as an yle.  
 There son des durre þe laste bounte, but hit be þow gyle  
 Of fol of þe seins lond, as me hap y seye wyle.  
 From South to North he ys long eigte hundred myle:  
 And a fourre hundred myle brod from Est to West to wende,  
 I mynde þe lond as yt be, and nogt as by þe on ende.  
 Whente me may in Engeland of alle gode y fe,  
 Bute sole yt for gulte oþer geres þe worse be.  
 For Engeland ys ful ynow of fruyt and of tren,  
 Of wodes and of parkes, þat toye yt ys to sen.  
 Of foules and of bestes of wylde and tame al so.  
 Of salt fisch and eche fresch, and fayre ryueres þer to.  
 Of welles swete and colde ynow, of lefen and of mede.  
 Of seluer or and of gold, of tyn and of lede.

1. Adject. 2. Vide Camdeni | taine, pag. 7. Ed. Lond. 1629.  
 Remains concerning Brits | 3. i.e. folc. 4. Two st.  
 Vol. I. A . Of

Of fel, of yrn and of bras, of god corn gret won.  
 Of whyte and of wolle god, betere ne may be non.  
 Wateres he hap eke gode y now, ac <sup>1</sup> at <sup>2</sup> be fore alle oþer þre  
 Out of þe lond in to þe see, armes as þei be.  
 Waze by þe schippes mowe come fro þe se and wende,  
 And brynge on lond god y now, a bonte in eche ende.  
 Senerne and Temese, <sup>3</sup> Homber yt is þe þridde.  
 And þenne is as wo seþ þe pure lond a midde.  
 Homber bryngeþ by Norþ muche god and wyde,  
 Senerne by West <sup>3</sup> Souþ, <sup>4</sup> Temese by þe Est syde.  
 So þat of god y now, þat in oþer londes ys,  
 þer by comeþ to Engeland, þat no defaute nys.  
 Þes þer beþ mony on a bonte Engelande.  
 Ac þer beþ to fore alle oþere þre ich vnderkonde:  
 þe yle of Man þat me cleppþ, by twene is and Yrlonde:  
 þe grette yle of <sup>5</sup> Orkeneye bi gonde Scotlande.  
 þe þridde ys, toward Harmandye, þe yle of Wylt by Souþ.  
 þre þe besta yle þes beþ and <sup>6</sup> mest couþe.  
 þe firste larden and maystres, þat in Engeland were,  
 þes chef townes þes lette in Engelande were.  
 London and Ewerok, Lyncolne and Lyncestre  
 Colchestre and Canterbury, Bristow and Wycestre.  
 Chichestre and Grayntebrygge, and þanne Cirencestre;  
 Dorchestre and Wyncestre, and seþþe Gloucestre.  
 And oþer grette townes, þat þo were in Wylis.  
 þis was þo in Engeland <sup>7</sup> Brytones were y wys.

1. Deest in *Ar.* 2. And Num=  
 ber is the þrydde *Ar.* 3. Deest  
*Ar.* 4. Oraden *Ar.* 5. Most  
 of name couþe *Ar.* 6. þat  
 Brutones *Ar.*

Engeland þat i be þe noute and i worred þe lome.  
 first þoru grette liden þe emperours of Rome,  
 þat sogte and wonne Engeland, and þat lond nōme.  
 Seþþe þoru Pictes and Scotis, þat to Engeland come,  
 þat worrede and bestriden, ac al clem ne wanne it nogt.  
 Seþþe þoru Engliſche and Saxones, þat hider were þe brongt  
 þoru Brutones forto helpe hem, and seþþe hem ouercome  
 þe Brytones, þat hem hyder brongte, & þat lond hem bi nōme.  
 Seþþe þat Engeland þe i be i worred þe lome  
 Of þe folc of Denemark, þat þeþ nogt get wel þe lome,  
 þat ofte wanne Engeland, and hulde yt bi mayſtre.  
 þe fyfte tyme won Engeland þo folc of Normandie,  
 þat a mong vs woneþ get, and schulleþ euer mo:  
 We schul hert aſtur in þis boke telle of al þis wo.  
 Brytones were þe firste folc þat to Engeland come.  
 foure kynges heo maden þo in þis kyndome.  
 þe kyng of Weſt ſex, & of Kent, & of Norþomber þe þridde,  
 And þe kyng of þe March, þat was here amidde.  
 þe Saxones and þe Engliſche þo heo hadden al an honde,  
 frene and þetti ſchiren heo maden in Engelande.  
 Souþſex and Soþeret, Kent and Eſſex,  
 Barkſhire and Hamptſhire, and þenne Myddelſex,  
 Dorſete and Wilſſhire, and Somerſete al ſo.  
 Deuſchire and Cornewayle, and Glouceſtre þer to.  
 Schropſhire, and of Wirceſtre, and of Herford.  
 Cheſtre ſchire and Warwyl, Derby and Staſford.

1. I wanne þe i worred in | red and þe noute. 4. þat were  
 2. Pictes. 3. I wer= | nought welcōme. 5. Sic.

Lyncolne and Montydone, and of Bedeford.

Bochyngham and Northampton, and of ' Drensf.

Norfolk and Suffolc, and Grauntebrigge al so.

- Hertfort & Lecestre, and Rothyngham per to.

Euerwik and Cardoel, and Northemburionde.

þese schires wiþ oute Walis þeþ alle in Engolonde.

Seuentene bischoprices in Engeland þeþ also.

Cardoel, and Duram, and Euerwik per to.

Of Gly and of Cauntarbury, of Norwiche, of Moncheſtre,

Of London, of Salusbury, of Chicheſtre, of Wynecheſtre,

Of Lyncolne, and of Cheſtre, and of Wirceſtre,

Of Hertford, and of Baſe, and al so of Exceſtre,

þenne per þeþ in Walis þre wiþ oute more,

Seynt David, and Landay, and ſeppe Bangore.

Of Euerwik and Canterbury þeþ ercbiſchopes two.

Duram þeþ and Cardoel vnder Euerwik y do.

And alle þe oper of Engolond, and al so of Walis,

Vnder þe ercbiſchop þeþ of Canterbury y wiſ.

þe Saxones in heore power þo heo were so rine,

ſene kynges heo maden in Engolonde, and ſepen bate ſyne.

þe kyng of Northomberlond, and of Eſt Angle al so ;

Of Kent, and of Weſt Sex, and of þe March per to.

þe kyng of þe March þilke tyme hadde wel þe beſte,

Muche del of Engolond, þe on half al bi Weſte.

Wirceſtre ſchire, and Warwik, and also of Glouceſtre,

þat ys nez al þe biſchop riche of Wirceſtre.

• He hadde eke per to Cheſturſchire, and Derbyſchire also,

• And Stafford ſchire, þat þeþ alle in on biſchoprice y do,

1. L. Drenford.

In

In þe biſchop riche of Cheſtre; and get he hadde þer to  
 Schropſchire ſom, and half Warwik ſchire al ſo.  
 His kyng hadde eke Hertfortſchire, þat on biſchopriche is;  
 Ac Schropſchire nah hainendel to þike biſchopriche i wis.  
 And ſom of Glouceſtre ſchire, and of Warwik ſchire al ſo.  
 get hadde þe kyng of þe March wel more lond þer to,  
 Northampſchire, & Bedyngham, and þe ſchire of Oxenfort;  
 Leycetre, and Lyncolne, and þe ſchire of Hertfort;  
 þat is al on biſchopriche, þat of Lyncolne ys,  
 þat wile was at Dorcheſtre bi ſyde Oxenfort twis.  
 get hadde þe kyng of þe March Northyngham ſchire þer to,  
 In þe biſchop riche of Cnervik, ac þo nas hit nogt ſo.  
 And al Walis get þer to, þat a gret lond ys:  
 Al þis was þenne y cleped the March of Walis.  
 for þat lond þat bi twene Humber & the water of Temefe y wis  
 Ich mene in þe biſchop riche of Lyncolne ys.  
 And þe biſchop riche of Lyncolne, and bi Weſt al þat lond,  
 þe kyng ſom tyme of þe March hadde al in þys hond.  
 þe kyng of Weſt ſex hadde þo al Wilt ſchire y wys,  
 And Dorſete and Barkſchire, þat o biſchopriche is.  
 þe biſchopriche of Saleſbury, & al Souþſex, he hadde alſo,  
 þe welde & al þe biſchopriche of Chicheſtre þer to.  
 And Souþampſchire & Soperey, þat on biſchop riche ys.  
 þe biſchopriche of Wyncheſtre, þat get ys þere y wys.  
 And Somerſete, þat to Welles þike tyme drow,  
 And now ys þe biſchop riche of Wape, ge wyteþ wel y now.  
 þeþpe hadde þe kyng of Weſt ſex al Denene ſchire y wys,  
 And Cornewayle, þat in þe biſchopriche of Exetre ys.

þe



þe kyng of þent was þe kyng of al þe lond of þent,  
 þer were two biſchopen, & yett nys it nogt y went.  
 þe biſchopriche of Canterbury, þat of Engeland ys þer,  
 And þe biſchopriche of Rouceſtre, þat in þe iſt ſyde is next.  
 þe kyng of Eſt Engle kyng was of Northſole,  
 þe biſchopriche of Northwych, & al ſo of Soþſole.  
 And of þe biſchopriche of Ely, þat þe yle of Ely ys,  
 And of al Cambrugge ſchire, þat þette ſalleþ y was.  
 þe kyng of Northamburlonde kyng was ich vnderſonde  
 Of al þe lond bi gonde ſpember anon in to ſcotlonds.  
 þeſe ſyne kynges were þo, ac hute on now þet nys.  
 for þe kyng of Weſt ſex al þe oþer man y wys,  
 And was ſeppe al one kyng, as our kyng now ys.  
 Here afterward in þis boke we ſchal here al þis.  
 In þe contre of Canterbury meſt plente of ſylch ys.  
 And meſt : chalke a houte Salſburi of wyld beſtes y wys.  
 At London ſchippes meſt, & wyn at Wynceſtre.  
 At Hereford ſchep & oſ, & fruyt at Wyrcetre.  
 Sope a houte Coupatre, yen at Glouceſtre.  
 Metel, : as led & tyn, in þe contre of Exceſtre.  
 Cuermik of faireſt mode, Lyncolne of ſayreſt men,  
 Grantebrugge and Montpydone meſt plente of dyp ſea.  
 Ely of faireſt place, of faireſt ſigte Rouceſtre.  
 Euene ageyn fraunce ſonde þe contre of Chicheſtre,  
 Norwiche ageyn Denemarc, Cheſtre ageyn Yrlond,  
 Duram ageyn Norwei, as ich vnderſonde.

1. Vide Camden's *Re* | *wys* *st*. 3. And pro as in  
 maines, p. 8. 2. Chalke at | *st*. 4. Plate *st*.  
 Salſbury, & wild beſtes y

þe wondres þer þeþ in Engelond, none more þ nat  
 þat. mæter of ðeþe þe þat on, þat men þe glich þat.  
 And ferlich & euerlastinge, as be chole nasa gret.  
 Suche baþes þan þeþ seia in þa clowþe in þe flurk.  
 When þe glegen of Salebury þat. æþer wondres þe.  
 þat<sup>2</sup> Stonþyngel þe þe clegud, as more wondres nge.  
 þe flanes stondeþ þer so grette, as more as mæne be.  
 Euene þe rygt & swyþa þe, þat. wondres it is to se:  
 And æþer lingeþ þe abone, þat a. mon may be of a ferð.  
 þat þeþe men wondre may þem heo wepe. first a. word.  
 for noþer gya, ne mæne's strongþe, ge þeubþe, nasa gret.  
 Telle me schal þeþe æfter mærd of þis mæneþeþe twa.  
 And how heo were first & mad. þa þridde wondres þe  
 Up þe hul of þe peþ. Forþ meud þem þe weþ:  
 Out of þe. erþe oðs. cometh, of. holes as. ytrmore;  
 And bloweþ up. of þis þe holes, so þat ge. mæne. a. rase:  
 And here up grette cloþes, gef heo were þer neþ,  
 And blowe. hem here and. þere, upon þe losse on. þeþ.  
 fayne: 3. mæne. monþon þer þeþ in Engelond;  
 Ac fourt mæst of. alle þer þeþ, ich vnderstande,  
 þat þe. alþe. bynges mad, meþ þorn me. meþ. meade:  
 from þe on. ende of Engelond neþ to þe æþer. ende  
 from þe Souþ till þe in to þe Norþ. Eningsfret:  
 And from þe Est in to þe West Ikenildestrete.

1. Defunt in *Ar.* 2. Stonþyngel pro Eningsfret habemus. Sic enim illic:  
 Antiquities of Warwickshire, l. yne me clepeth eke thulke  
 p. 6. & *Duchum nostrum Historium*, Vol. II. p. 77. 4. *Cr.* weþ, he goth thorgh Glou-  
 ceter, And thorgh Cērcetre euene  
 alfo,

from Donere in to Cheſtre tille þ Watlingſtrete,  
 from Houþ Eſt in to Houþ Weſt, and þat ys ſouþel grete.  
 þe ſerþe ys meſt of alle, þat tilleþ from Tottenais,  
 from þe on ende Cornewaye anon to Catenays,  
 fro þe Houþ Eſt in to Houþ Weſt in to Engolonde's ende:  
 forþe me clepuþ þike wey, þat by mony god touu doþ mende.  
 So clene <sup>1</sup> lond ys Engolond, and ſo pur with outen ore,  
 þat þe faiſteſt men of þe world þer inne beþ y bore.  
<sup>2</sup> So clene, and fair, & purwyt, among oþer men heo beþ,  
 þat me knoweþ hem in eche lond bi ſyhte, where me hem ſep.  
 So clene al ſo is þat lond, & monne's blod ſo pur,  
 þat þe gret buel comeþ not þer, þat me clepuþ þe <sup>3</sup> holy fur,  
 þat <sup>4</sup> for freteþ monnes lymes, rygt as heo were <sup>5</sup> brende.  
 We men of France in þilke buel <sup>6</sup> me ſpþ ſone a mende,  
 geþ heo ben brought in to Engolond: war þow me may wyte,  
 þat Engolond ys lond beſt, as yt is y write.

alſo, and thorgh Wynecheſtre. Verum his de viis videlicet tractatum egregium, (ab Amico doctiſſimo Rogero Galeo ſcriptum, & a nobis in VI. Volumine Itinerarii Lelandi editum,) cui titulus, *In Eſſay towards the Recovery of the Courſes of the four great Roman ways,*

ubi (p. 106.) fragmentum Roberti noſtri de iisdem, ad fidem Codicis Digbeiani, exiſtat.

1. A lond *ſr.* 2. So clene, ſo whyte, ſo fayr of hem, among *ſr.* 3. Wille ſayr *ſr.* 4. Deest *ſr.* 5. for brende *ſr.* 6. Ofte me ſpþ amende *ſr.*



**T**HAD he by gynnynge of þe world, to þe tyme þat  
now is,

Sene ages þer haddeþ y be, as sene tyme y wys.

þe firste age & tyme was from oure firste fader  
Adam

To Noe, & seþþe þe oþer from Noe to Abraham.

þe þridde was from Abraham forte Moyses com,

þe ferþe fro Moyses to Dauid kyndom.

þe fyfþe was from Dauid to þe transmigracion

Of Babilonye, & þe sixþe to þe incarnation,

þat is, forte God was y bore. þe sene was & ys

from oure Lorde's burþe time to þe worlde's ende y wys.

þe Adam was first y mad, & hys of spryng wex wyde,

þeo by gonne at þe on ende of þe world, al in þe Est syde.

Seþþe it wex wyde a bonte, fro lond to lond,

So þat in þe þridde age it wex er it come to Engelonde.

for in þe tyme bi twene Abraham & Moyses it was,

þat men come to Engeland. ich wol telle you þat cas.



**A**tatyle þer was while in þe contre of Rome,

þe meste þat euer was, as me haþ herd y lome :

þe bataille of Troie, þat laste fele ger.

þony was þe gode body, þat y flame was þer.

for þer nas knygt in mony londe, ny stalerwarde man,

þat in þe o syde þer was ; & al for a<sup>2</sup> woman,

---

1. After þat Adam maketh gan in þe Est syde Ar.  
was his offspryng wex wyde, | 2. Woman Ar.  
At on eynde of þe worlde hit |

þat Elyne was ⁊ clepud, þis bataille first bi gan.  
 An heȝ mon þer was by fore, þat me clepude Dardan.  
 Of hym com þe gode Bruyt, þat was þe firste man,  
 þat lord was in Engelond, as ⁊ þou telle can.  
 Dardan bi get Trope, þat god mon was & wys.  
 Troie bi get Priamus, & al so Anchis.  
 þese were in þis bataill of mest myȝt and mayn.  
 Anchis bi get Eneas, and Eneas Alcayn.  
 Alcayn bi get Silui, of whom þe Brut com.  
 For Eneas astur þe bataille Alcayn ys sone nom,  
 And Silui Alcaine's sone, & oþer þat þer were,  
 In to þe lond of Lumbardy wende, & wonede forþ þere.  
 þo Silui hadde bi gete a child, sayn he wolde ⁊ wyte,  
 What mon þat child schulde be, þat he hadde ⁊ gete.  
 A clerk þoru enchantement hym bi gan to telle,  
 1 þat þe schulde first fader and moder quelle:  
 And seþþe he schulde mony lond ouer passe and wende,  
 And mony bataille ouer come, & seþþe, at þe ende,  
 To a noble lond he scholde come, & þere al lord be,  
 And kynges come of hys blod, & þat me schulde se.  
 2 þat Eneas bi gan hys of spryng to Lumbardie first brynge  
 þre þousant & sixe & tuenti ȝer fro þo worlde's bi gynnynge.  
 þo þe clerk hadde ⁊ seid hys enchauntere,  
 þer fore Silui hym let fle. ac þat was lytel maistris.

---

1. þat þat childe sholde furst þus gan brynge. þo þis clerk  
 2. þre þousend ȝer and hadde ⁊ sed al hys enchaun-  
 soure þer fram þe worlde's terpe, Siluius let. hym fle.  
 gynnynge Was, before þat lute was þat maistris.

for

for hit com ner þe later, as he hadde y seyd.  
 for <sup>1</sup> in transyl of hys beryng hys moder was first ded.  
 þo þis child was y bore, me lette hym clepe <sup>2</sup> Brut.  
 first lord he was in Engolond, of wham me spekeþ <sup>3</sup> get.  
 þe child wer & wel þrof, as þe clerk seyde er.  
 Seþþe þo yt hadde þe elde of tystene ger,  
 As he wolde schete an hert, al a geyn hys wille  
 To depe he schet ys owne fader, þat he lay þer stille.  
 Hit hym for þougte sore y now, at noþeles get he was  
 Out of þat lond ydrine for þat desiful cas.  
 In to þe lond of Grece he wende, <sup>4</sup> & þo wolde he þere  
 Of þe kynde of Priamus mony men, þat þor were,  
 þat wer þer of hys nexte blode, þat were þer in seruage.  
 Here elderne þer by fore were y nome in offage  
 fram þe bataille of Troie, in wreche as it wert,  
 for þe grette slaugt and wo, þat here kynde dunde þere.  
<sup>5</sup> þe Brut among hem com, to such prowes he drom,  
 þat <sup>6</sup> al þe kyn, þat hym lay, hadde of hym soye ynow.  
 So þat at þo laste, þo he <sup>7</sup> in stat was,  
 And hem þougte, þat ys þere in þe world nas,  
 þe folk of þat ilke blode aboutein hym drome faste,  
 þat he scholde ys owne kynde of þat seruage caste.  
<sup>8</sup> heo comen alle a bouten hym, so þat þe Brut y sey,  
 þat heo were of gret power, & noble folk & þey,

1. In transyl as he was bore, his moder was þo deed  
*re regione vero (in margine)*  
*manu rectioni, his mother*  
*died in childre bede.* 2. Brut  
*Ar.* 3. Put *Ar.* 4. And þenne  
 fond he þere *Ar.* 5. þo þat  
 Brut *Ar.* 6. Al his kyn, þat  
 wisten hit, þer of had soye y  
 now *Ar.* 7. Whanne's stat *Ar.*  
 8. Hy come al a bouten hym,  
 & whanne hem alle he sey,  
 B 2                      hym

Heo garhede hem to gedere, þat a fair oft yt was.

To þe kyng of Grece he sende, þat hatte Pandras,  
þat heo schalde so noble soke, þat of so gret blod come,  
Out of seruage lete, and out of þraldome,

Or hym ne schalde not wondry, þay heo dude here mygt  
With here bodies, þat agte be so free, for to wyne here rygt.  
þo kyngs hadde in hys þegt gret a bysmar of his þing,

**Bellum.** He 3 garhede is oft anon, to grounde hem to bryng.

þis Brut a geys hym with ys oft wel myflyche drome.

4 Heo smyton þer a batayle hard and strong ynow.

þe promes þat þe Brute dude no tonge no telle ne may,

þony was þe gode body þat hym self flou þat day.

What halt yt longe to telle? Hys son he ouercom,

**Capcio** **regis.** And Pandras, þe strange kyng, as a prysen he nom.

þis kyng þo he was a nome, here wille dude anon,

And brogte hem out of þraldom, þo he say non oþer mon.

He by gan to leue Brut so muche, for ys faire cheiauce,

þat he mylde, mest of alle þenge, to hym enlauce.

"Brut," he sepe, "þou art now þe beste body þat ys.

"For þe noble kyn, of wom þou art, & for þi promes a wis,

"Ech obligi me to þe, and my kyndom al so.

"A dogter ich hane of gret prys, & noble & god al so,

"A geue here þe to þi wyf, &, gef þou walt by leue here,

"þe þridde del a my kyndom a geue þe to be my fere.

Hym þoughte he hadde power  
a now of noble folk & he. He  
gaderede hem alle to gedere  
faste, a sayr ofte þer was a.

1. Oþer hym ne wolde  
nought wondry, þough þe, for  
þure ryht, Wiþ þure bodies

make hem fre dude þer to  
hure myght a. 2. Shorne  
a. 3. Ordeyned a. 4. Wy  
a. 5. Prisoner a. 6. þo  
he non oþer bote a sepe, he pass  
hem hure freedom a. 7. Of  
my a.

"And

"And get þou nyȝt not here be, ac wolt get soude more,

"Guld & seiner ich wel þe gene, & ȝ now of eche ſore :

"And take ȝ þe my dogter : for mon þou art ȝ wyȝ,

"To wyȝne get a kyndom, wel beter þan myȝn ȝȝ.

þis kyȝg & þe Brut were at ou, þat to wyȝ he tok

ȝȝ dogter Innogen, ac ȝȝ lond he for tok.

Sponsacio  
Innogen.

ȝ þe kyȝg tok Brut ȝȝ owne body, in oſſage as ȝȝ were,  
for te hit were to gedere ȝ broȝt al þat ȝ he wolde a rote.

ȝȝ lette ſende ȝȝ meſſageres in to al Grece wel wyȝde,

And ȝ lette ſulle corn, and oyl, & wyȝn, by ȝ iche ſyȝde.

ȝȝ chargeȝde þre hondret ſchippes, & foure & twenti þer to,  
þer wyȝ, & mid al oþer god þat myȝt þer tunc do.

þo þis ſchippes ȝare were, and ful of ȝ ruche gods,

And þis mayȝde ȝ ſponſed was of ſo ȝ riche blode ;

þe kyȝg de lȝuereȝde þat folk out of ſeruage,

Receſſus  
Bruti.

And Brut de lȝuereȝde þe kyȝg out of ȝȝ oſſage,

And nom ȝȝ leue ſapre of hym, and þonkȝde hym all gode,

And nom with hym al þat folk, þat he ſoud þer of ȝȝ blod,

And ȝȝ wyȝ Innogen, and to ſchip wende,

ȝȝe nuȝte toward wuche lond, but as God hem ſende.

þe deȝl þat made Innogen, no tonge ne tells ne may.

ȝȝe cryȝde and weȝ with ſorwe ȝ now, & ofte ȝ ſwoue lay.

ȝȝ þo he wende from al hire kyȝn, & from al þing þat heȝ knew,

And nuȝte on erȝe whiderward, bute as þe wyȝnd hem blew,

And wiȝte þat heȝ ne ſchalȝde neuer a ȝeyȝ com nyȝ go,

ȝȝe ſe ſader, ny oþer kyȝn, lord ! þat hire was moȝ

- |                             |              |                  |
|-----------------------------|--------------|------------------|
| 1. To þe my doughter, for   | ȝȝ. 5. Euery | ȝȝ. 6. He        |
| noble þou art and wyȝ, ȝȝ.  | 7. Eche      | ȝȝ. 8. Myȝȝ      |
| 2. þe kyȝg to Brut his body | 9. þer       | ȝȝ. 10. When heȝ |
| toke, ȝȝ. 3. By             | ȝȝ. 4. Met   | wende            |

Brut



Brut hire clappede and cussede, & comfortede hire þæt nioþ,  
 1 þat he ne myȝte hire herte change, þat heo to fore ne drow.  
 Twy dages 2 heo wende in þe se fro þe lond of Grece,  
 3 So þat heo comen to an yle, þat ure clesap Aeogere.  
 þider 4 heo gonne ryne, and Brut sende by þere  
 þre hundred men ȝ armed wel, to loke wat land ȝt were.  
 þis mon wende a bouȝte wyȝe, & mon soude 5 heo non,  
 Wite faire contre & wyȝe beſtes mony on.  
 A temple 6 heo soude fair ȝ now, & a maxmed a miȝde,  
 7 þat ofte tolde wonder gret, & wat þing mon bi tȝde.  
 þis men of þis wyȝe beſtes carye & schete ȝ now,  
 And to a ſtore hem of mete ſaſte to ſchip drowe.  
 8 Of þe manet heo tolden Brut, þat heo ſouden þere,  
 And he nom with hym twelue men þe beſte þat with hym were,  
 And a clerk þat bouȝe enchantement, & to þis temple drowe,  
 And oſſrede to þis manet, & 9 honourede hym ȝnowe,  
 10 And 11 forto wryte in what ſtude hys wonyng were.  
 þo he hadde hys bouȝe ȝ do, he ſei on ſlope ryȝt þere.  
 Hym þouȝte þe ȝmage in hys ſlep tolde hym hys cheance.  
 "Brut," he ſalde, "paſſe norȝe al þe lond of France  
 "Weſt, toward þiſe ſtude as þe ſonne draweȝ agen ene.  
 "þer þou ſchaſt fynden a place 12 god in to bylene.

1. He ne myȝhte hite ſorwe  
 ſlake nouȝt, to ſorwe ſo  
 heo drow Ar. omiſſo þat.  
 2. He ſailleyde Ar. 3. Forȝt he  
 com to Ar. 4. þeȝ Ar. 5. Hy  
 Ar. 6. Hy Ar. 7. þat Dyane  
 godeſce clesped was, and tolde

ofte what bi tȝde Ar. 8. Of  
 þat godeſce hy tolde Brut,  
 þat hy Ar. 9. Worſheped Ar.  
 10. Omittit Ar. 11. forto Ar.  
 12. God and ſaſt inne to by-  
 lene Ar.

"In þis god & riche y nowe, þe so goþ al a bouten  
 "Wile þat lond was y fulled with 'geandes strong & pronde.  
 "And now yt ys as a wilbernelle, for no mon þer lene nys.  
 "To þe it wole be god and riche, & to alle þynge & wys.  
 "And yt wox an oþer Troie to þe, and so god,  
 "þat þer schul kynges come & springe of þi blod.  
 þo Brut a wox of hys slep, & al þis under god,  
 hys men he tolde al þis cas with wel<sup>2</sup> bliþe mod.  
 heo garheden hem & wenden norþ, þe wynd was god y noȝ.  
 So þat toward þe West here schippes euens dromg.  
 So þat<sup>3</sup> with þritty dayes to Afric heo come,  
 'And aris heo wende by on þe lond, & sette hem prey y lome,  
 And forȝe & flowe muþe folk, for no mon hem at god.  
 from Afric þe wente norþ with þe wynd þat was god.  
 So þat heo fonden in a stude here kyrede bi cas  
 'Of noble mon Hercules, þat wyle of Troie was.  
 Corineus hatte here souereyn, þat so strong was of honde,  
 þat hym ne myȝte no mon ne geant at stonde.  
 þo þis folc to gadere com, and Brut Corineus fond  
 þo strengest mon & þe meste þat hym þoȝte in eny lond,  
 'Heo a coryntede hym a non, and bi comen frendes gode,  
 Woþe for here promes, and for heo were of on blode.  
 þo þis company was strong, & more þan hit was er,  
 Bi in on company heo wenden norþ þe  
 In þe les with god wynd, so þat at þe laste  
 In to þe on ende of Gascoyne þe wynd here schippes cast.

1. Geantys ferre & pronde	wende eft a lorde, and hure
2. Joyful	2. 3. Wyþ- preye name
3. 4. And þer by	3. 5. Of þe na- ble
	4. 6. By a queyntes
	Corineus

Corineus his stronge mon to hondred men with hym now,  
 And wende <sup>1</sup> on lond to honty þo he to lond com,  
<sup>2</sup> forte porchase hem mete, and þe kyng Goffare  
 (þat was kyng of þe lond) þo he was ware,  
 þat such folk was & armed (as me seyde) & ryuch vp hys lond,  
 And nuste wat folk it was, to hem he sende hys sonde,  
 To wyte, weþer <sup>3</sup> he wolde pes, oþer <sup>4</sup> heo nolde non.  
 þe messageres <sup>5</sup> þei wenden norþ metten hem ech on.  
 Corineus with hys company as heo dude hante þere,  
 Heo alschede at Corineus, how heo so hardi were,  
 To honte vp þe kyng's lond, bute he lene hem gene.  
 Corineus saide, þat he nolde nomon asche lene,  
 To <sup>6</sup> honto and to wyne hys mete, & habbe solas & game.  
 þe maister of þe messageres (<sup>7</sup> Imberd was þs name)  
<sup>8</sup> Wende þs bowe & schette a non to Corineus to gronde.  
 Corineus tok hys bowe of hym, & smot hym a wounde  
 A bouen on þe scolle with þs owne bowe a non,  
 þat þe scolle to breke in peses mony on.  
 Hys selawes þo heo say þis bi goune to fle echon,  
 And tolde þe kyng fore how þe game <sup>9</sup> was al igon.  
 þe kyng <sup>1</sup> made hym wroþ & now, & no wonder yt was,  
 þat strange men in hys owne londe dude hym such trespas,  
 þat a sailde þs lond, and to robbery drome,  
 And robbede þs bestes and þs game, and hys men flome.

1. Up to hunt. 2. forte  
 3. Hy 4. As hy  
 wende forþ mette hem  
 5. L. honte. 6. Imbert  
 7. Wende his bowe to shete  
 hym, & Corneus in þat stonde

Wynam Hyumbert his bowe  
 anon, & ryght hym one wounde  
 Right euene vpon þe shulle  
 8. Hym made wroþ &  
 now, 9.

He wende with al þis power, and sailde hem a non.

Bellum.

And Brut & Corineus <sup>1</sup> prest were, and here men echon;

And smyten a batail so strong, þat no tonge telle may

þat folk, þat þer was y slawe on eyþer side þat day.

Corineus: ys <sup>2</sup> swert sone drac, so strong he smot & fuste.

For no swerd myȝte with ys dunt none lengur laste.

Mid hym he hadde a stronge axe, þat mony man broȝte to deþe,

So strong & so gret, þat an oþer hit scholde hebbe vn neþe.

Corineus þer with harde smot & sturede <sup>3</sup> hym a bonte,

And made his wey bi eiþer syde, and percede þe ronte.

Mid þre hondred knyȝtes a duk, þat het Steward,

3 sailde Corineus hymself <sup>4</sup> a forward.

He smot Corineus harde y nog, þat he hit sore felde,

And zet he hente þe stroc muche del by on þe schelde.

Corineus was þo somdel wroþ, ys axe on heȝ he drow,

And smot hym byon þe hed mid god ernest y now,

And for cles al þat hed, & þe bodi a non to gronde.

þo myȝte Steward segge, þat he hadde ys <sup>6</sup> is"pere y soude.

þo Corineus <sup>7</sup> was alles wroþ, so grete strokes he gaf,

þat þe body of eche þat he smot or þe hed he to cles,"

Oþer he smot of þe <sup>8</sup> arm, or þe hond, or þe heued :

þo lym þat he smot <sup>9</sup> mid þe bodi bi lened.

Anty place he made a bonte, <sup>10</sup> & folc fleu hym faste.

3 wonder maister <sup>11</sup> he was on, þat hem so homþe a gaste.

1. 3 redy were, to meten

hem echon, Ar. 2. Swerd Ar.

3. Hym swyþe aboute Ar.

4. Al a boreward Ar. 5. He

for cleuede al þat heued, his

body fel to gronde Ar. 6. Re-

dundat. 7. Was forloþ so

Vol. I.

wroþ, þat such dundes he gaf,

þat enery þat he hitte aright,

his deþ forloþ he haf Ar.

8. Eren Ar. 9. Was wif Ar.

10. þe folk fleȝh fulfaste Ar.

11. þere he was, þat hem Ar.

C

Se

So faste he flew of his men, and to gronde caste,  
 þat þe kyng with a fewe men hymself flew at þe laste.  
 þo þe batall was y do, Bent and þis Corineus  
 A storede hem a bout of richesse and chatens,  
 Of corn, of wyne, of alle god, & to schippe faste drewe,  
 And bronde þe contre, and þe folk faste slawe.  
 þo heo hadde al bare imad þe contre al aboute,  
 And heo wol y stored, of noþing þei were in doute;  
 Heo woude to schip anon, & ewene gonne dryne  
 To þe contrai of Toures, & here þei gonne a rane.  
 A fair place heo cheson hem, & here heo gonne a rere  
 Walles wyde and strong puros, castles as hit were,  
 And a storede hit wel y now, & here god þer tene here,  
 For to a lide þe kyng, gif he wolde a saye him þere.  
 þe kyng Gollar þiderward gret power and all now  
 Of france and of oþer londes, and toward Toures come.  
 þo heo sepe þe grette walles, castles as it were,  
 Ða he seide, þe grette despit, þat y se to me here,  
 þat þis sike and homelynges castles letþ rere  
 Op on my lond haldeþe, as me for to a fore.  
 He doþ þe me schine purg, how mygite heo do more?  
 Wute y be þer of a wreke, y schal þe for fore.  
 For Gode's love, halewoþe men, arneth gon faste,  
 To se þe konynges, & here castles a down caste.  
 þis folc hem arnede anon, and banneres gonne rere,  
 And departede here off in twolf partyes þere.

---

1. Hem self þe in M. 2. þe M. 3. þe soule konynges M.

Brut ordeynede ys oſt, and ſette hem myſſyche,  
 And with god herte a geyn þe folc wende baldeliche.  
 þere heo ſumpton a bataill, harde and ſtrong ynow,  
 And þis folc of Troie of þe frenſche laſte ſlow,  
 7e two þouſand and mo in a lytal ſtonde,  
 So þat þe frenſche were neȝ y brouȝt to gronde.  
 And naþeles here 1 ſerð wax ſaſte a boute wyde,  
 For heo hadde ſuche þritti men, as were on þe 2 oþer.  
 For here power and here oſt wax euere ſo faſte,  
 þat þis gode folc of Troie ouer come were at þe laſte.  
 And ſlow into here caſteles, þo heo nadde oþer won.  
 þe oſt withoute of France bi ſegede hem a non,  
 And bi lai hem ſo faſte, þat neȝ to gronde hem broȝte.  
 So þat Brut and Corineus an quoyntyle hem by þoȝte,  
 3 þat þis Corineus bi-nyȝt wende out with gret ronte  
 At a poſterne ſtilleliche, þat heo nuſte it not with oute.  
 A morwe Brut with inne with ys oſt out drowe,  
 And ſmot with þis frenſche men batayle ſtrong y now.  
 þere were mony þouſand 4 ſlawe in a ſtonde.  
 Brut hadde a 5 nenen, þat mony broȝte to gronde.  
 For he ſlow mid his power, and 6 broȝte to ſchame,  
 Six hondred, as me ſeiþ, 7 Courus was ys name.  
 At þo laſt he was hym ſelf y ſlawe, þer was deol. y nowȝ.  
 þo þe bataill was neȝ y do, Corineus uorþ hym drowȝ.  
 With fix þouſant noble men, out of an wode þere,  
 And com up þis frenſche men, þo heo al wori were,

Bellum.

1. Oſt *Ar.* 2. Adde, ſyde. 4. A ſlawe in a litel ſpunde  
 3. þat þis Corineus wolde out | *Ar.* 5. Coſyn *Ar.* 6. Broughte  
 wende by nyȝhte wiþ *Ar.* eke to *Ar.* 7. Courus *Ar.*  
 C 2 And

And flow hem to grounde al for noght, so þat at þe laste,  
 heo, þat mygte of scape, bi gone to ðe faste :  
 And heo of Troye swede with oute eny frentysle,  
 for wen þe strengþe failþ, me mot take quoyntysle.  
 1 þe Brut and Corineus hadde here wylle of þis þing,  
 heo lette here men, þat were ʒ slawe, faire on erþe bryng.  
 And Tours þe gode knygt, þat so muche saic ex flowg,  
 Brut lette bryng on erþe with honour ʒ nowg,  
 And lette a fair tabernacle in honour of hym vere,  
 And fair hous al abouten hym, & bi gau þe cite here,  
 þat noble cite was and ys, and for Tours þat þer lay  
 þe cite me clepede Tours, as me doþ get to þis day.

**B**ut & Corineus þo he hade here wille in al þe londe,  
 he 2 wende & saide al a bonte, for noþing mygte hem  
 at stonde.

heo chargede here schippes faste and wel with alle gode,  
 And wende norþ with god wynd & wel drypyng flode ;  
 And drine euer West ward, so þat in god pais  
 heo come here-to Engolond to 3 hauene of Tottenais,  
 To þe on ende of Engolond, as in þe West Souþe,  
 4 A lute bi fors Cornewall, as is an hauene's mouþe.  
 þis was þre þousant, and foure score, and þre ger  
 from þat þo world was first mad, þat 5 þat" heo arinede þer.

---

1. þo *Mr.* 2. Wende a bonte | Cornewaille, in Deneneshire  
 & prepede faste, ne myght hem | hit is couþ. Hit was þre þou-  
 nought astone *Mr.* 3. þe ha- | sand *Mr.* 5. Redundat.  
 gene *Mr.* 4. A lyte by Norþe

And

And er God were y bore enene yt was al so  
 ' Ellene hondred yer and þritti yer and two.  
 þus com to Engelond þe firste men y wis,  
 þat euere monede in Engelond, þat were Brut & hys.  
 þo Brut and his men þus come first a londe,  
 heo wende a doute wyde þe<sup>2</sup> contris forto soude.  
 Gret plente heo soude of fisch, as heo mente, by þe weye,  
 Of wodes and of riuers, as is in þe contrey.  
 And heo soude god y now to tilte, and alle god,  
 So þat<sup>3</sup> to bi leue þer here herte fel and stod.  
 ' Heo souden a bewe geandes, for broðe men as yt were. Gigantes.  
 In to Cornewalle heo drine hem, in to elde dicheþ þere.  
 Heo howlede and bulde faste, and erede and seme,  
 So þat in lutele while gode cornes hem grew.  
 Corn & frucht hem wex ynow, & fisch ynow þei soude,  
 And of fisch, so þat heo were riche y now in astoude.  
 Bruyt bad Corineus forto cheste of eche contre ywis,  
 Much hym were leuest to habbe to hym and to hys.  
 Cornewalle hym likede best, þerfore he ches þere  
 To hym and to hys olþryng, ' & for þer geandes were."  
 for he willede to fygte with geandes, & do hem schame.  
 þat londe þe clepude Cornewalle, astur hys owne name,  
 Cornewalle astur Corineus, and in þis maner y wox  
 Corineus bi man Cornewalle, to hym and to hys.

Corineus  
 elegit  
 Cornu-  
 biam.

- 
1. Eneleue hundred hit was, & þrytt y per to (omisso two) in *Ar.* 2. Contrey *Ar.* 3. þer to þleue hure hertes wel stod *Ar.* 4. Geauntes a fewe by soude her, bunte men as hit were *Ar.* 5. þe Geauntes to a fere *Ar.*

Brut



Brut huld to hym Engelond, he ne durste ' hym not playne,  
 And aftur Brut ys swore ' nome he clepede hit Bectopne.  
 Brytounes me clepede alle men þat were of Engelond,  
 As me clepede hem longe leppe ' for to now late tch vader:  
 stonde."

Gogmagog.  
 808.



Gogmagog was a geand swiþe grete and strong.  
 I boutz four & twenti fet me leþ he was long.

I gest ok he wolde ' bredde a down, as it a smal  
 gerde were,

And here forþ in his hond, ' þat sole forte a fere.

He com with twenti geandes, and a lallede Brut faste.

Brut with ys power slow þis geandes ' at þe laste,

Alle bute Gogmagog, for hym ne slow he noȝt;

for he schude with Corineus wrestele he hadde y þougȝt.

' So þat Corineus and he to gedere were y broȝt,

Lustacio. þe wrastelþȝ bi twene hem was som del toȝt.

þer was many a strong breid, so þat ribbes þre  
 þe geant brak of Corineus, as me myȝte þer y se.

In þe riȝt syde two, and in þe liȝt syde on.

þo was Corineus foundel wroȝ. he keredde hym a non,

And gripte þis geant, and to an heȝ roche hym drew,

þat stod a boue þe see an heȝ, & þer a down hym ' slow.

So þat he was al to rased pecemel in a stonde,

Eche ym from oþer, among þe roches, er he com to gronde.

- 
- |                       |     |                 |     |       |
|-----------------------|-----|-----------------|-----|-------|
| 1. Hym no þȝȝȝ playne | Ar. | 4. Braye a down | Ar. | 5. þe |
| 2. Name               | Ar. | 3. Forþ Saxo-   | Ar. | 6. þo |
| nes gonne hit sonde   | Ar. | 7. flough       | Ar. |       |

þat

þat Corinthus was al one lord of Cornwalle þo.  
 Wan þe geandes were alle y flawe, þat þer bi londe noma,  
 Brut wende forþ into Engeland, and aþiede up and down  
 for to soche en eke place, to make an þenod town.  
 He com and found al þp Temese a place fair y non,  
 In god contris y plantens, þat is heris muche to dung,  
 þat " þe" schippes myȝte from eche land bring " so" god gards.  
 þer he rerode hyr þenod town, þat London i cleped is:

Inceprio  
Londini.

Ac so ne clepede he yt noȝt, bute þe floure Teme.  
 þer habbeþ hynges and mant wþer aftir y he is tode.  
 Brut þis noble prince sonas hadde þis  
 By hyr wif Hanogen, noble men and fre:  
 Locryn, and Hamber, and Albanak al so.

At þe laste dæde Brut, þo al þis was y do,  
 Aftur þat he com to Engeland in þo four & twentiþe yre.  
 Y buried he was at London, þat he lette first rane.

Obitus  
Bruti.

þis land was deled a þre among þre sonas y wif,  
 Bi West Senerne Hamber hadde, and so al Aldes.  
 Albanak bi gonde Hamber: ac Locryn hadde twi  
 Al out þat land bi twene þen, fro þe Est to þo West.  
 for þat he was rideste, me lokede hym best by wif.  
 þese were as þre hynges, and men of muche myȝte.

þe kyng of Hungri: sehþe com, Hamber was ys name,  
 In to Scotland to merre, and do Albanak schaw.  
 And werrede wþ hym faste, and at þe laste hyr slay,  
 þo Locryn herde þis, fori he wes y noȝ.

Aftur hyr broþer Camber hasteliche he sende,  
 And hiȝe with gret ost to ward þe kyng wende.

Bellum.

1. Deest *Ar.* 2. Deest *Ar.* 3. Sup *Ar.*

þe

He smyte a bataill strong ynow (ne strengor mygte be)  
 So þat Humber kyng of Hungri ' seþþe bi gan to fle  
 In to a gret water þer, & a dreynt hym self with schame;  
 þar fore me clepade þat Water þo Humber, astur þys name,  
 As me deþ get, and euer more wole, for þe cas  
 þat Humber, kyng of Hungri, þer ynn a dreynt was.  
 þo Locryn hadde al his wille, he a storede wel ys loud  
 Mid Humber kyng's god, þat ' me of þys fond.  
 þo fond ' he þre dampseles, gent and fair ynow, &  
 þat Humber with hym broȝte, to þe on ys herte drow,  
 þat was of hem cheuenteyn, and þe kyng's dogter was  
 Of Germanie, as hym þougte, in þe Worlð hire pere nas,  
 So whit, ne of such colour, ny in ecche maner so gent.  
 Kyng Locryne's herte was al clene bp hire y went,  
 And tok hire forþ with hym mid gret honour y now, &  
 And þogte hire to spouse, so ys herte to hire drog.  
 Ac Corineus, duk of Cornewalle, ' wroȝ y now was  
 Toward kyng Locryn, þo he herde þis cas.  
 For he hadde hym a forward þys dogter hadde to wyue,  
 Hys gret axe he nom in hys hond, & to hym ' hyede bi lyue.  
 His axe þo he to hym com, so griffliche he schok & faste,  
 þat þe kyng quakede & ys men, so sore heo were a gaste.  
 "Sei (he seide) Locryn, wat þenkestow for to do ?  
 "þenkestow me Corineus to bi trape so ?  
 "Hast þou for gete þe gret wo, and þe mony harde woude,  
 "þat ich hadde y þoled for þi fader, & ' þe" mony ' luper stonde,

1. Sone *Ar.* 2. He *Ar.* | *Ar.* 5. yede as blyne *Ar.*  
 3. Men pro he in *Ar.* 4. Wroth | 6. Deest *Ar.* 7. Wicked *Ar.*

"for to wyne hym lond & gou, & þou hast now forlake  
 "My doghter, þat schulde be þi wif, & to a keneþing take?  
 "þou ne schalt (bi hym þat made me) of schaple to lyste,  
 "þe while þer ys in my rygt hond eny strengþe & myghte;  
 "And while y may þer wot myn hond are þy drawe,  
 "Wher with ich hadde graundes mony on þe flawe.  
 He bi gan to schake þs are, for to smyte anon;  
 He klygte & criede, & geue bi twene hem mony on.  
 So þat þo kyng Lotryn vnder song wel saþn  
 And spoused þe hys doghter, þat heite Guendoleyn,  
 And vnde al his wille, (for he lokede so to þe),  
 More for eye þan for loun, (mony mon leueth hōwe)  
 And wot for þan þat oþer maide he louede more y now;  
 Whil þis hire name was, and more to hire he drow.  
 He made hire vnder erpe a wonyng countelleþe,  
 And huld hire þer to his wille longe pryncelleþe,  
 And drow to hire wan he wolde, þat no mon yt nulle,  
 But if were eny priue mon, þat hys priute al wolle.  
 When he wolde to hire go, to hys mayne he seþde,  
 þat he wolde to his Godes his offryng lede,  
 And þat he hadde, to honoure hem, a priue stude þere,  
 To sacrifice to his Godes, þat mont war nere.  
 Segge he wolde eke al to þe Quene þs spouse,  
 "And noþeles such sacrifice y ne keppe not at myn howse."

Sponsacio  
 filiz Co-  
 rinci.

1. He) a scapy Ar. 2. Cor-  
 neus pro hys in Ar. 3. Dube  
 tho al Corneus wille, Ar.  
 4. Rough Ar. 5. And that he  
 hadde made a bow, to do a  
 sacrifice Princeliche to his

Vol. I.

God, as he gan hym deuple.  
 Segge he wolde right al thus  
 to his owene spouse, "Thes  
 "wines sache sacrifice loueth  
 "at hire owene howse." So  
 longe Ar.

D

So

So longe he dade þs sacriffe, and pleide such game,  
 þat he hadde a dogter, <sup>1</sup> Inerne was hire name.  
 And þe Quene hadde al so in <sup>2</sup> spoiled bi gete  
 A sone, þat hette Madan, as it is <sup>3</sup> y writon.  
<sup>4</sup> Sone so þe quens fader Corineus was ded,  
 þe kyng hadde þer astur wel sone y nome red.  
 He for lok is wyf al out, and Atrild made quene.  
 He ne dradde nogt þo <sup>5</sup> þat handaxe, as it was y sene.  
 þo wende þe quene forþ to Cornewail a non,  
 And <sup>6</sup> yonge stalemorþe men gedereþe mony on.  
<sup>7</sup> þat poer al þat was hire fader, & also of Engelande,  
 So þat heo hadde sone gret power on honde,  
 And grot oft made and strong, and bp þe kyng sette,  
<sup>8</sup> And þe kyng al so a ȝeyn hire, so þat heo hem mette,  
 And a bataill bp Stour smite strong y now,  
 And þere þe quene folk þe kyng Locryn flow,  
 And mucþe of his folk eke bute hem þat slowe.  
 So þat <sup>9</sup> a lufþer benerege to here bi hosþe þet browe.  
 þo kyng myȝte segge er þe while he was aline,  
 þat in a lufþer time he strinede with his wyue.  
 ȝef alle <sup>10</sup> lufþer holers were y serued so,  
 He schulde fynde þe les such spouse bruche do.  
 Ellene hundred ȝer þis kyng was þus bi fore  
 And <sup>11</sup> eyȝte ȝer y flawe er God were y bore.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 1. Sabrene <i>Ar.</i> & in marg.<br>(à manu recenti) Sabrine.<br>2. Spoiled <i>Ar.</i> 3. Y write<br><i>Ar.</i> 4. So sone to the quene's<br><i>Ar.</i> 5. The pro þat in <i>Ar.</i><br>6. yonge <i>Ar.</i> 7. Al the power<br>that was hure fadere's, and | mucþe of Engelande, <i>Ar.</i><br>8. The kyng also a yent<br>hure, so hy to gedereþe mette,<br><i>Ar.</i> 9. A foul benereche to<br>hure byþone they brough <i>Ar.</i><br>10. foule holopers <i>Ar.</i> 11.<br>xviii. <i>Ar.</i> |
|--|--|

þo

þo was þis sturne wommon Guendolyn þe quene  
 Kyng y mad in þis maner, for heo was som del kene.  
 Aðrille hire bedfister (hire lorde's concubine)  
 And hire dogter 1 Auerne heo let nime atte sline,  
 And drence bope two in þe water of Senerne.  
 And for yt was hire lorde's dogter þat mayde 2 Auerne,  
 And for honour of hire lord, and for heo was of hys kynde,  
 Heo wolde þat hire name were euer more in mynde,  
 And lette clepe þat water astur 3 Auerne,  
 And seþþe þorg diuerse tonge me clepede hit Senerne,  
 And deþ a letre þer to, and no more y wys.  
 In þis maner þike water Senerne y clepuð is.  
 Guendolyn was kyng sittene ger þo.  
 And hire lord was kyng bi fore hire ten ger, & no mo.  
 4 And Madan here sone fourti ger, þilke tyme þat Samuel Samuel.  
 þe prophete wardede þat folk of Israhel.  
 Meynpris, Madane's sone, kyng was tuenti ger,  
 5 þe kyng Saul was of Israhel kyng, and non er. Saul.  
 þis was (as me may in bok rede and se)  
 6r God were bore a housand ger, and fourscore & þre.  
 6 Ebran, Meynprise's sone, sixti ger was kyng.  
 He made þe toun of Euerwik, þat strong ys in alle þyng,

1. Sabrene. 2. Sabrene, pris is sone, sixty ger was  
 3. Sabrene, 4. Ma- kyng. He began Ebrac with  
 dan here sone kyng was the atte biggnyng. And saþh  
 forty yer ech del, In pro- me clepeth Euerwik this  
 phete's tyme Samuel that like toun y wis, And Þork  
 wardede Israhel. 5. When also, thorgh light speche, y  
 that Saul of Israhel was hote also hit is. After þis  
 kyng, 6. Ebrac, Mem- kyngus name his name hit.

David  
rex.

And, aftur his name **Chran**, **Engwyth** clepede it wel,  
 þat tyme **Dauid** was kyng in **Prasel**.

Brut ys sone brottere kyng was, and no mo.

And <sup>1</sup> Letr kyng <sup>2</sup> syue and twentiger Brutefone was þo.

And he rerde þo town of **Leyctre**, & nempneþe yt owne name,

Salomon. þo þat **Salamon** þe wyse (mon of gret fame)

Kyng was of <sup>3</sup> **Israel**, þat kyng **Dauid** sone was,

þat made þe temple of **Jerusalem**, such temple ner nas.

<sup>4</sup> **Leile's** sone þritti ger kyng was <sup>5</sup> and syue <sup>6</sup> al so,

He rerde first **Canterbur**, and **Wynchestre** þer to.

<sup>6</sup> **Bapul** his sone aftur hym kyng was twenti ger.

He bi gan þe tonn of **Bape**, and <sup>7</sup> þo hote **bapes** <sup>8</sup> þer

In þe beynes of þe water, as yt doþ by walle.

He lette close <sup>9</sup> fupr in metal quoynteliche withalle,

þat as <sup>10</sup> þo water comþ þer bi þer it cacheþ hete.

þat metal ys now y turned into roches grete,

þat beþ ener y liche <sup>11</sup> hoto, & þo water þer of al so.

And eke þoru enchauntement yt was first y do.

for þe kyng **Bapul**, þat yt made, gret enchanter was,

And þat hym mygte <sup>12</sup> seþþe rewe. ich wol telle þat cas,

for þat me schulde ys chauntement y se,

He lette hym make wyngon, an heþ for to fle.

hym by sei. This was whan  
**Dauid** kyng regned in **Is-**  
**rael**. Went grenhild, his  
 sone, aftur hym tho Regned  
 her in **Engelond** xxx. yer and  
 mo **Ar**.

1. **Isrl** **Ar**. 2. xv. yer **Ar**.  
 3. **Israel** **Ar**. 4. **Is** his sone

**Ar**. sed *Rodhpidras* dicitur aliis.  
 5. Omittit **Ar**. 6. **Bladup** **Ar**.  
 7. **pe** **Ar**. 8. Potest etiam ita  
 distingui, ut periodus post **þer**,  
 comma vero post **walle**, ponat-  
 tur. 9. **Fure** and metal **Ar**.  
 10. **pe** **Ar**. 11. **Note** **Ar**.  
 12. **Syth** **Ar**.

And

And þo he was y floure an þer. & he coude not a lyste.

And down mid so gret eis to þe erþe he fel and grette.

þat al to gretes he to ref. þat hater hym hadde y þe

Dane bi leued þer doun. þan y lered. for to se.

1 þis þilke tyme þat he prophete. Elye

Tempus  
Ely.

In 2 Israel prophete was and 3 in oure land he gan to cote.

þat þer ne schulde þe get. 4 nu þis monethen þe to.

5 þu regn no come on erþe. and et bi fel al se.

**A**four kyng 6 Robt. His ys sone was þing.

And reigned. 7 first. for wel þan alle þing.

Up þe water of 8 Soure a cite of gret fame.

þe 9 endede. & cleyede. & Leicestre. a four. ys omne name.

þe dogtren þis kyng hadde. þe eldeste. 10 Cornwille.

þe mydmost hatte Regan. þe 11 songost Cordelle.

þe fader hem loped. alle yþer. ac þe 12 songost meth.

for þe was best and fairest. & to hantenelle drom. lest.

þo þe kyng to. eld. com. all þe he brohte.

þys dogtren to fore hym. to wite of here þohte.

for þe. þohte þys kyngdom. 13 dele among hem þe.

14 And lete hem þe with soonst. wel. wher. he myhte. bi se.

To þe eldest he seide. first. "Doxter. ich bidde þe.

"See me. al cleye þin herte. þan muche þou louest me."

"þen þe. Goden." quoth þis man. "to myneste I take echon.

"þat y loue more in myn herte. þi. iene. bodi one.

1 This was in thilke tyme. and cleyede. 10. Cono-  
2. Israel. 3. In. 4. Cornwille. 5. 11. Pongeste.  
6. Re. 7. Regn non in. 12. To dele. 13. And eke.  
erthe come. and a four hit fel. forto. wite þe. wel. wher  
so. 6. Bladuth. 7. xxx. he myhte. by se.  
get. 8. More. 9. Berde.

"þan



"þan myn soule and my lȝf, þat in my bodi ys.  
 þo fader was þo glad ⁊ now whan he herde þis.  
 "My leue dogter," he seide þo, "for <sup>1</sup> þou hast in loue ⁊ do  
 "Myen olde lȝf by fore þis, and bi fore þi soule al so.  
 "Ych wol þe marie wel with þe þridde part of my londe  
 "To þe noblest bacheler, þat þyn herte wol to stonde.  
 þo oþer dogter he ascheþe þo þat same askyng.  
 "Sire," quod heo, "bi hye Godes, Lordes of alle þyng,  
 "Y loue more þi leue lȝf þan al þat in þe world ys.  
 "And þei al þe world were myn, ⁊ al þe richesse þwys,  
 "Al and eke myn owne lȝf leuer ich hadde lese,  
 "þan þi lȝf, þat me is so les, gef ⁊ mygte chese.  
 þe fader was þo glad ⁊ now, and bad hire vnderstonde,  
 To whom heo wolde ⁊ married be with þe þride del ys londe.  
 þe <sup>3</sup> gongost he askede þo as he hadde þo oþer ⁊ do.  
 Heo <sup>4</sup> no kouþe of no sikelyng, and ne onswerede not so.  
 "Sire," heo seyde, "y leue not þat my sustren al soþ seide.  
 "Ac for me my self, ich wol soþ segge of þis deþe.  
 "Ych the loue <sup>5</sup> as þe mon þat my fader ys,  
 "And euer hadde y <sup>6</sup> loued as my fader, ⁊ euer wole y wys.  
 "And gef þou wolt get þer hye more asche ⁊ wyte of me,  
 "Al þe ende of loue ⁊ þe grond ich wol segge þe.  
 "As mucþe as þou hast, <sup>7</sup> as mucþe þou art worth ⁊ wys,  
 "And <sup>8</sup> as mucþe ich loue þe: þo ende of loue ys þis.

---

1. Though hast thi loue y | 4. He couthe of no flateryng,  
 do In myn old lȝf to fore | ⁊ answered nought so *sc.*  
 thyng, ⁊ to fore thi soule also | 5. As a man *sc.* 6. The ad-  
*sc.* 2. By the heyghe God, | dit *sc.* 7. So mucþe *sc.*  
 Lord *sc.* 3. Pongeste *sc.* | 8. So *sc.*

þe kyng was þo wroþ y now, for heo seide al þat seþ.  
 for he seide, "þou ne louest me noȝt as þi sesters doþ,  
 "Ac despitest me in myn olde line, þou ne schalt neuer ȝnol  
 "Part habbe of my kyndom, ne of lond þat myn ȝs.  
 "Ac þyn systers schulle habbe al, for here herts ȝs kynde,  
 "And þou for þyn unkyndenesse be out of al my mynde.  
 "Ac y ne segge noȝt for þan, ȝef y mai to mariage þe brynge,  
 "þat y ne wol with oute lond with som lytel þinge."  
 "for þou art my dogter, & ich habbe more þan þi sesters boþe  
 "I loued þe one, & þou ȝeldest now my lone wroþe.

þer astur enene a two he deleds hys kyndom,  
 And ȝef hys twei dogtren half, & half hym self nom.

Particio  
regni.

And þe eldest dogter mid hire del he ȝaf with oute satle  
 þe kyng of Scotland, and þe oþer þe 2 kyng of Cornewale,  
 To hane half ȝs lond myd hem at þe bi ȝynnyng,  
 And seþþe al ȝs kyndom astur, ȝs endyng.

Maritacio  
filiarum.

And þe gode Cordeille vn married was : so.  
 for heo 4 noide sikele, as hire systers hadde y do.

Ac : God þouȝte on hire for hire trewnesse.

for þe kyng of france herde telle of hire godnesse,  
 And bad hire fader graunt hym þe gode Cordeille.  
 þe kyng send word a ȝeyn, þat it was ȝs willis :

1. Ac nought for than,  
 with oute lond, with some li-  
 tele thyng Ich wole the to  
 some god man to mariage  
 brynge. 2. Non dico tamen,  
 cum filia mea sis, quin te alicui  
 externo, si illum fortuna obtu-  
 lerit, utcumque maritem. Illud  
 autem affirmo, quod nunquam

eo honore, quo sorores tuas, te  
 maritabo. Quippe cum te plus-  
 quam ceteras huc usque dilexe-  
 rim, tu vero me minus quam  
 ceteris diligas *Galfredus Mon.*  
 2. *Chr. Ar. 3. þo Ar. 4. Conthe*  
*flattery nought, as Ar. 5. He*  
*myghty addit Ar.*

Ac

Ac he wolde with hire gheue trefout, hi lond.  
 For þe lath oþer boghten hadde it al on hono.  
 So þe kyng of France herde þis, he answerede þer to,  
 þat he hadde hym self lond & adw, and trefout al to.  
 Ac þat he ne kepte durt hire one, withoute oþer þing,  
 þat heo myȝte loke eyles bi twene hemi forþ bryȝte.  
 So þat at þe laste þis maide & spoused was  
 To þis kyng of France, as God gaf þat cas.  
 þe þis kyng lett eibore was, heo bi gan to lþe,  
 for he so longe liuede, his leue doghten bþe.  
 Here lordes heo entisebe, to geberere to howe faste,  
 And wrytne al þis lond to hem, & hete fader out cast.

Spoliatio

88

þis twel kynges nome here oð, and enbede þis deie,  
 And bi nome þis orde mon þe lond, as here wrytes bede.  
 Ac þe kyng of Scotland, for sawpe and kandebe,  
 hym nom to hym in to his hows, & gef þe wyue's redi,  
 Sixti knyghtes with honour to spide hym al þe lþe,  
 As wo seþ, for þe kyndom, & for honour of þe wyf.  
 With inne two ȝer þer aftur it þouȝte þe luf þe quene,  
 þat : hire hadde to muche, & wolde to muche spene.  
 heo made, þat of sixti knyghtes hire lord with droȝ,  
 And made hym hilde to pite, & þat was hire þoȝte þing.  
 þe þer was a schamed þe, & in wrappe at þe ende  
 To þis oþer dogter, þe quene of Cornewail, he gan wende,  
 And playnode of þe unkenne dede of þis dogter : Cornorthe,  
 And wende þere amendement to habbe aftur þe orde will.

r. To howe to gedre faste	and to midde wille
2. Spilide; To hym	4. xxx. knyghtis þat lond
hom in to his hows,	3. þat withþouȝt
þere fader hadde so moche,	5. 6. nōtill, 7.

þike

þilke dogter hym to fonge with honour, as he wende,  
 Ac heo was al ful of hym er <sup>1</sup> þe gere's ende.  
 For heo entifede hire lord þo, þat þs knyghtes echone  
 for cost by nyme hym alle, bute a <sup>2</sup> fyne men one,  
<sup>3</sup> Wuche so it were to serue hym, & þat was þe nome.  
 þo þis seli mon þis herde, to forme þs herte drawe.  
 He nuste to weper dogter beter truste þo,  
 And nopeles he wende ageyn to þe ofer with muche mo,  
 And hopede for to fynde of here beter <sup>4</sup> menske & grace.  
 And heo swor bi hire hpe Godes anon in þe place,  
 þat he ne schulde mid hire be, bute it <sup>5</sup> one were,  
 And on knygt with oute mo, þe while he hym wel dore.  
<sup>6</sup> And askede, wad forme hym were, wan he naddþe hym self  
 no god,

To wylne so gret cost, and be of so gret mod <sup>7</sup>  
 þis word dade muche forme þis seli olde kyng,  
 þat atwptede hym & þs stat, þat he naddþe hym self noþing.  
 þat word brak neg þs herte, & longe he yt understod,  
 þat þs child at wiste þs ponerte, þat hadde al is god.  
<sup>7</sup> Fleuer kyng ne quene glad, when heo hym sepe,  
 Ac to þe soiful day hopede, þat heo mygte dpe.  
 He bi leuede, as he nede mošte, forþ mid on knygt,  
 And þe quene þs dogter alle wo hym dade bope day & nygt.

1. þre pro þe in *Ar.* 2. x. *Ar.*  
 3. That were bilest to seruy  
 hym, and that hure thoughte  
 þe noughe *Ar.* 4. Wylice *Ar.*  
 5. Onliche were, With o  
 knyght, with oute mo, *Ar.*  
 6. And sepe, what sholde an  
 old man be so heghe of mod,

And an [f. in] ydel, and in  
 wast, spende so muche good *Ar.*  
 7. Ther nas ther nother  
 kyng ne quene glade, whan  
 he hym sey, But lokeþe ener  
 after his deth, whan he sholde  
 dey *Ar.*

So þat he moſte<sup>1</sup> for ſyn myſeiſe awei at þe ende.

- þe oþer dogter he hadde a ſayed, þat he ne durſte to hire wꝛode.  
þe queene of France þe þeiðde hym þog mid vn rygt  
þe miſdade hire, þat he ne durſte come in hire ſygt.  
Ac at þe laſte þo he lei, þat he moſte neðe at þe ende  
for þore miſeiſe, (for ſare leuor he hadde wende,  
And biðde yꝛ mete, geſ he ſchulde, in a ſtrange lond,  
þan þer he hymſelf kyng was, & ſach þing hadde on bonde)  
At þe laſte in ſorwe gnow in to þe ſee he wende,  
To do yꝛ beſte yꝛ meſeiſe were ſo God hym ſende.  
In þo ſchip as oþer prynces in gret prynde he<sup>2</sup> bi halde,  
And he hadde mid hym bote twai men, <sup>3</sup> hym þogte yꝛ herte  
feld;

þe þogte on þe noblei, þat he hadde in y þe :

Planctus. We wep, þe terns ronne down, þat deol it was to ſe.

“ And goyng & mid gret wop þus bi gan yꝛ mone.

“ Alas! alas! þe luhur<sup>4</sup> wate, þat ſpleſt me þus one,

“ þat þus cleneme brynguſt a down, wyðer ſchal y be brogt :

“ For more ſorwe yt doþ me, when it cometh in my þogt

“ þe noblei þat ich hadde y had, þat ich was wond to wynde

“ And ſo many hondred knyghtes a bonte in eche<sup>5</sup> ende,

“ And caſtles nyꝛe & tonnes, & myn ſon brynge to gronde,

“ þan do al þe miſeiſe, þat ich in i bonde.

“ Neue dogter Cordeille, to ſoþe þou ſerdeſt me,

“ þat as muche as ych hadde y was worþ, þei y ne leuede þe.

1. For myſſe (ommiſſo ſyn)  
in Ar. 2. Bi held Ar. 3. A=  
las! his herte was cheid Ar.  
4. With wepyng & wailynge  
thus he made his mone: “A=

las! though lethur deſtery,  
whi leueſt though me thus al  
one & Ar. 5. I. e. ſate. 6. Of  
the Ar. 7. Gynde Ar.

"þo wyle ich ogt hadde ich was wery, & now it ys al a gou.  
 "And children, þat ich get my god, beþ myne moste son.  
 "For my god heo louede me, & now he habbeþ enery del,  
 "He nol not gene me of myn omne mid god herte a mel.  
 "I wey! dogter Cordeille, wyder schal ich now fle?  
 "So muche ich habbe þe! myf do, þat y ne dar þe y se.  
 "And wuche bodi dar y come in þi sigt ene,  
 "þat bi nom þe myn frenschipe for þi soþnesse al clene:  
 "þis men mowe here ensample nime, to late here sones wyne,  
 And gene hem vp here lond al bi here lyne.  
 For wel may a symple<sup>1</sup> Francoleyn in mysele hym so bringe  
 Of lutei lond, wan þer sei such of a kyng.  
 þo þis kyng hadde go a bouste in such sorful cas,  
 At þe last he com to Caric, þere ys dogter was.  
 He bi leuede with oute þe toun, & in wel gret fere.  
 He sende þe quene ys dogter word, wuche is<sup>2</sup> antres were,  
 And þat pur wiseise hym þider drof, & defant of bi line:  
 And bed hire, for þe lone of God, hire wrappe hym for gene.  
 þe quene þo heo herde þis, nei yswounyng was.  
 "Alas!" heo seþde, "ys my fader y brogt in such deoful cas?"  
 "And how mony knyghtes ys he comen?" þe oþer ageyn seþde,  
 "Oþa dame, bute mid o mon, & get þilke in<sup>3</sup> feble wede."  
 "Alas!" quoth þe quene þenne, "ys it now mid hym so?"  
 "Smyeth anon trefour y nowg, þat he haþ nedē to,

Mandavit  
slix.

1. I gylt pro mys do in *Ar.* | wyne, *Ar.* 3. Wan pro fran-  
 2. These sample men moughe | coleyne in *Ar.* 4. Antres  
 y se, to lere hure children *Ar.* 5. Simple wede *Ar.*

" And cloþeþ hym myd þe beſt cloþ, þat ge mome y fe,  
 " And fourti knyghtes mid hym, þat of þys ſtote be;  
 " And doþ hem alle wel an horſe, as a kyng bi comeþ to,  
 " And whan ⁊ no deſaute nys, þat al þis nys wel y do,  
 " Sendeþ my lord word & me, þat my fader in londe ys.  
 What halt it to telle longe? Y do mæſ al þis.  
 þo kyng Leir arayed was, & men hem word ſende,  
 þe kyng & þe queene ſaire y now ageyn þe oþer kyng wende,  
 And with gret honour hym ſongon, þo he to hem com,  
 ⁊ And token hym to ys owne wille al clene þe kyndom.  
 þis was, lo! þe gode dogter, þat wolde ſikele nogt.  
 Ofte þing þat is ſikeled to worke ende ys brogt.  
 þe kyng of France aſtur ſolc wiðe aboute ſende,  
 Reditus Angliz. To a wreke hym of þe luþer men, þat ys frend ſo ſchende.  
 ⁊ þo he hadde power y now, þe kyng Leir he nom  
 And þe queene ys dogter, & to þis lond com.  
 Mony kynde men of þis lond wið kyng Leir hald alſo,  
 For þe unkynde ſaukedom þat his dogtren hadde y do.  
 So þat of France & of þis lond poer he hadde y now.  
 Toward his ſon with hem alle wið god herte he drow,  
 And oner com þis falle ⁊ knyges & here wryues alſo,  
 ⁊ And a geyn in his kyndom mid gret honour y do.

1. Bad hym clothe in the  
 beſte, that he myghte byſe,  
 And xl. knyghtes wið hym  
 of his ſuyt to be; Ar. 2. No  
 faulte ther nys, and al is wel  
 y do, Ar. 3. Dederantque ei  
 poteſtatem totius Gallie, donec  
 eum in priſtinam dignitatem re-

ſtaurallent *Gulfridus Mon.* 4. Quo  
 facto, duxit ſecum Leyr filiam  
 ſuam, & collecta multitudine  
 iuit in Britanniam *Gulfr. Mon.*  
 5. Lordes Ar. 6. Leir in his  
 kyndom a ye wið honour  
 was y do Ar.

Cor=

Cordeille ys leus dogter eir of al ys lond  
 Astur ys day he made, ' þo þat he so brude foud.  
 By þis tale me may yse, þat men trowest we seþ,  
 And best me may to hem truste, þat of lest wordes : beþ.  
 With inne þre yer þe kyng of France dyede & þe kyng Leyr, *Obitus regis.*  
 And Cordeille þe kyndom fong as þe rygt eyr,  
 And lette hire sadur barie with gret prude & honour  
 At Leicetre, þat he made hym self bi hie þe water of Sont.  
 þis gode quene Cordeille as kyng and quene þe  
 ' Bi leuede hire in þis lond fyne yer, and no mo,  
 Et hire twei suster sonen, Galworþe men þat were,  
 ' Hennin and Morgan, werre ' hire' gonne a vere,  
 And hadden despit, þat wommen kyng schulde ' be,  
 ' And napeles wyþ alle rygte hit were nor þau heo.  
 heo gedereþe by here aunte here oft aboute wyde,  
 And destruyde hire londes eþer in his syde.  
 So þat at þe laste to ' batle heo come.  
 þere þe quene here aunte in batalle heo nome,  
 And dode in strong prison, and þe kyndom  
 Deiden bi twene hem, and eþer ys part nom.

Capcio  
 reginz.

<p>             1. So kynde he hure soude              2. L. beþ. 3. Cordeille              astur hym auenge Brutayne              as ryght heir 4. Cum er-              go Cordeilla regnum per quin-              quennium pacifice tractasset, co-             eperunt eam inquietare duo filii              fororum suarum Marganus &amp;              Cunedagius, quæ Maglauro &amp;              Hennino ducibus conjugatæ fu-              erant. Ambo iuvenes præclaræ              probitatis formam habebant,           </p>	<p>             quorum alterum, videlicet Mar-              ganum, Maglaurus generavit,              Cunedagium vero Henninus.  <i>Galfr. Mon.</i> 5. Hemyñ 6.              Deest 7. heo 8. And also by ryght þe were              fortherer than heo. By gader-              rede to gedere hurs oft as              boute by eche side, And de-              strude her and ther bothe in              eche side 9. Batalle              Morgan           </p>
--	--



Guerra.

Mergan kyng of Scotland, as heo dele kouþe,  
 Hadde al þat lond bi Ryþ, and 1 þe oþer bi Souþe.  
 With inne two ȝer þer astur somme to Mergan come,  
 And, for þe of þe elder sester was, bed hym nyne gome;  
 And, seide hym it was gret despit, þat þer wer in þis lond  
 Twel kynges, man ryȝt was, þat he it hadde al on hond.  
 þis kyng was enticed so, þat he nom atte laste  
 En aft, and by þys colys bi gan to werri faste,  
 And bi gan to bronne & quelle, & atte laste ȝ wys  
 þe oþer bi gan to turne a ȝeyn, and dros hym in to Walis.  
 And þer heo surte a batail in þe Souþ half of þe londe,  
 And þer was Mergan ȝ slawe, þat longe 2 was underfonde.  
 þe slude, þat he was at ȝ slawe, me clepuþ ȝet Mergan,  
 And enere wale astur hym, for he was so worþi man.  
 Cunedag was þo al one kyng, & þe kyndom to hym nom,  
 And nobliche 3 þre and 4 þritti ȝer held þe kyndom.  
 þe tweȝ holȝ prophetes were Olee and Pise  
 þis time in 5 Israel, and duðe here prophetic.  
 Romulus and Remus þe twei breþeren ȝ wys  
 Bi gonne þo first Rome, þat noble cite ȝs.  
 four hundred ȝer it was, and 6 fourti enene al so,  
 Astur þe batail of Troie, þat al þis was ȝdo.  
 And Rome was syne hundred ȝer þus ȝ mad bi fore,  
 And þre and fyfty ȝer eke, er God were ȝ bore.  
 Astur þis kyng Cunedag þys 7 sone, þat hatte Rinal,  
 kyng was mad astur hym, a wys mon þorȝ out al.

Incepicio  
Romæ.

1. Hemen pro þe oþer in *Ar.* | sunt *Ar.* 4. Israel *Ar.* 5. four-  
 2. ȝs pro was in *Ar.* 3. De- | tyne also, *Ar.* 6. Brothur *Ar.*

Astur

Aftur hym Gargak ys lone, and leſſe anoþer ſtille,  
 And mony on : leſſe aſturwar, of wam mote be ſtille.  
 So þat atte laſte Gurguont was kyng,  
 Statworþe mon and hardy, and wys þorg alle þyng.  
 Þuþe þing, þat ys eldere loren þerw ſeyntyle,  
 þorn ſtrengþe he wana leſſe a geyn, & þorn ys koryntile.  
 þe kyng of Denemark : ber eche ger with lawe  
 Truage to Engeland, and bi gan hym to wyþdrame.  
 þe kyng Gurguont hym þorneþede of power & now,  
 And þer wyþ in gode ſchippes to Denemark he drow,  
 And þe kyng of Denemark in bataile he floȝ,  
 And wana a geyn þe truage þat : he held with wog.

**A**S þe kyng Gurguont fro Denemark wende a ge  
 hyder toward Engeland, he mette in þe ſee  
 þretti ſchipful of men. and of wymmen alle,  
 Of children, and of oþer god þat heo hadden with hem & do.  
 þe kyng aſkede, wad heo were : þet were a deað ful ſore.  
 þe maiſter ſei a down on kne, & criede mercy & ore.  
 "Lord," he ſeyde, "we beþ men wyde & drine aboute.  
 "From contrey to contrei, þat we mown nower route.  
 "Of þe kynde of Egypt oure ſirke more com.  
 "For þoſolk of Iſrael Moyses with hym nom,  
 "And ladde hem out of Egypt bi þe : liuerede ſee,  
 "And þe kyng a drehte & alle þys, þat he ne com noner age:

1. Both afterward, of whom we mote be ſtille. 2. That bar ech yer with lawe Tru- age to Brantayne, gan hit tho with drame. 3. It held with wrong. 4. For tho that folk of Iſrael. 5. Made. 6. They.

"Among

"Among hem, þat bi leuede o line, stryf me myghte se,  
 "Wuche mest maistres were, & heo schulde lord be :  
 "So þat heo, þat maistres were, hadde wel gret onde  
 "To þe kyn þat we come of, & dryue hem out of londe,  
 "For drede þat heo ne schulde nogt here maistres be.  
 "þus heo were y dryue a wel, & nuste wyder to <sup>1</sup> tee.  
 "Heo baden hem forþ in to þe se, & by many a lond wende.  
 "<sup>2</sup> Se þat God in to Spayne atten ende <sup>3</sup> hom sende.  
 "þer heo bi leuede, & wor, & al þat of hem come  
 "For to now þis oþer day, þat we myghte not be y some.  
 "<sup>4</sup> For þe kunde folk of þe lond hadde to ows onde,  
 "And, þat we to grette maistres nere, drine ons out of þe londe.  
 "Oþer half ger we habbeþ nowe y went with oute reste  
 "In þe grette ses of ocean, for to seche us bestre,  
 "þat owre luf ys us loþ, & we nuste war bi leue ;  
 "þer fore we wolde bidde þe, þat þou us sum place geue  
 "þat amty were in þi lond, ware þou woldest by þenche,  
 "<sup>5</sup> þat we myghte of swynke oure mete, & libbe by oure swynke.  
 þe kyng hem nolde graunte noþing of þis lond,  
 "Ac þe sende hem by god condyt in to Priond,  
 þat al amty was of men, & no mon ne wouede here,  
 "And þese were þe firste men þat in Priond were.  
 A þousant ger yt was and two, þat y þe was al þis,  
 "Athur þat <sup>6</sup> folc of Israel of Egypt wende i wis.  
 Aþ hundred ger and <sup>7</sup> tuenti it was eke bi fore,  
 "Er þan oure Lord Ihesu Cryst on erþe was y bore.

Prima  
 gens in  
 Ybernia.

1. fle	2. Ho	3. Hem	doth, byswynke	6. The
4. Therefore the vynes	kynde folk	5. That we	folk of Israel	7. Ryne
moughe oure liflode, as athur			pro tuenti in	

1. Wit

1 Hit bi sel þer asturward swyþe longe ynow  
 Out of þe lond of Scittie oþer folk þider drog.  
 For into þe grete see of ocean a gret compayn  
 Of Pycars wende som tyme out of 2 Scille.  
 From lond to lond wyde 3 he goune wende,  
 So þat atte laste hec come to Prioude's þorþ ende,  
 A geþu þe lond of Scotland, & 4 þo folk þat hec fouden þere  
 Of 5 þis eldore kande, Scottes & clepad were.  
 þe 6 Picardes bede þe Scottes an ende of here lond  
 To geue hem, forto libbe by with swyþk of here heud.  
 þe Scottes seide, þat þat lond wolde not & now be  
 To hem boþe to lyue 7 bi, as heo mygte & se.  
 Ac þat heo mygte ofte & se, in cler weder, þere  
 Est ward, as þe sonne a ros, a lond as yt were.  
 Murþ & fair yt forhte & now, & þat hec þider wende,  
 To wonne & to lyue þer, & þat hec hem word fende,  
 Gef any mon hem greuede, & þat hec wolde, hec seide,  
 Warde hem from alle men, þat hem bi tidde no drede.  
 8 þis Picardes þenne wende forþ Edward enen fæte.  
 To þe þorþ ende of Engeland hec comen at þe laste.  
 þat ende hec fouden al bare. hec bi leuede þere,  
 And swonke & tilede here lylode, & al matkres were.  
 9 Heo fouden hem sustynance & now, and 10 lyueden þus forþ Missio  
 þe Brytones in 11 þe Souþhalf, and hec in þe þorþ. post mu-  
 lieres.

1. The compynge of Pittes, that some clepeth Piker-  
 bys, *Ar.* in margine. 2. Sit-  
 thie *Ar.* cum f. Hauerne (ab-  
 ead. manu) supra lin. 3. His  
*Ar.* 4. The *Ar.* 5. The el-  
 dere *Ar.* 6. Pittes *Ar.* 7. By,  
 by aught that his couthe se  
*Ar.* 8. Then Pittes *Ar.* 9. His  
 wonne hem *Ar.* 10. Lyuede  
 do forth *Ar.* 11. The *Ar.*

1 Bycars souden ele know, and defant none,  
 To libbe in plente y now, bute of wpmen one.  
 For per net none among hem. per fore to Prioude  
 heo sende to Scottes þat per were, þat heo schulde hem vns  
 derhoude

And leus hent wpmen, þat heo mygite here 2 ofþryng eche so.  
 For þyng þat 3 wotles, & noþing wepeth, & sone it ys gdo.  
 Scottes hem sende wpmen in þis forme þere,  
 þat want a child were y bore, and me in doute were,  
 4 Who were þe fader, þat me schulde name & eritage  
 Boþe habbe in þe moder half, for drede of our rage,  
 Lasse yt geode out of kynde þerz child myf bi gete.  
 For us may bet soþnesse of þe moder þen of þe fader myte.  
 In þis maner 5 Picars wth Scottes 7 myngen here blod,  
 So þat yt skode þe wpmen, when me ogt anflunderstod.  
 And when moost withouten ege of hym to depe were ybrot,  
 Hys moder han was ys eir, & ys fader han tegt noxt.  
 And for þe moderes Scottes were, 8 so forþ yt ys bi come,  
 þat 9 Scottes name ys al a done, & 10 Picars at bi nome.  
 11 þus Scottes among Bycars come out of Prioude,  
 And 12 þat leus me clepyn after hem seþþe Scottende.

1. These Pities. 2. Dis-  
 spring forth brynge. 3.  
 Waneeth. 4. Hath sone an  
 endynge. 5. Who the  
 child's fader were, the name  
 and heritage. Of his moder  
 hit sholde bere, for drede of  
 outrage, lest the name yede  
 out of kynde thurgh anflun-  
 deryng. Of the moder half

rather than in the fader's me  
 may haue knowyng. 6. These Pities. 7. Wre-  
 lede blod. 8. So fer forth  
 hit is y come. 9. The  
 Scottes. 10. Pities. 11.  
 The Scottes myd the  
 Pities. 12. The prothat  
 in.

Prioude

**D**irend ys ' aler yle best with outh Engelande.  
 he see goþ al abouten hym the as ich vnderþonde.  
 More he ys þan Engeland, & in ' þo souþ half he ys  
 3 Bradder & more of ynow þan in þe Norþ ende y wys.  
 Geyn þe lond of Spayne he stonde in þe 4 Norþsyde rygt.  
 Seide knowe þer inne 5 lith, & nameliche þre rygt.  
 So euene 6 hot þat lond ys, þat men durre 7 seide  
 Here orf in howse anynter veynge out of þe seide.  
 Lese lasteþ þer al þe wynter. Bute hyt þe more wonder be,  
 Seide me schal in þe lond ony soule wormes se.  
 For nedres ny oþer wormes ne mow þer be nogt.  
 And gef he beþ þider 8 bi cas" from oþer 9 loundes y brogt,  
 heo drep þorg suel of þe lond, oþer þorg trowchþung y wys.  
 Eche gras þat þer inne wexep a geyn benym yt ys.  
 For men, þat ben benymed, þorg grades of Priand  
 2 dronke he beþ y clauded soue, þern Gode's londe.  
 Mony & myk þer ys muche. mony folk & helde.  
 þis ys þe stat of Priand, as iche habbe y tolde.

**A**stur kyng Gargnont, kynges mony on  
 þer were here in Engeland, me may not telle eþen.  
 3 boute a four hundred 7er astur hym þer com  
 4 kyng, þat was Lud y clepud, þat wel hult þe kyndom. Lud.

- |  |                   |   |
|--|-------------------|---|
| 1. Al ther Ile best, ontake<br>Engelande <i>Ar.</i>            | 2. The <i>Ar.</i> | lith, nameliche but thre<br>ryght <i>Ar.</i>    |
| 3. Bradder a gret del than<br>in the Northside ywys <i>Ar.</i> |                   | 6. A temple pro<br>hot in <i>Ar.</i>            |
| 4. Northwest ryght <i>Ar.</i>                                  | 5.                | 7. But seide þure<br>bestes an house <i>Ar.</i> |
|  |                   | 8. Wy<br>happe <i>Ar.</i>                       |
|  |                   | 9. Lond <i>Ar.</i>                              |
|  | F 2               | Grete   |

Grete townes in Engelond he amendede y nowe.  
 And London <sup>1</sup> aller most, for þer to hys herte drome.  
<sup>2</sup> þat folk he hett of þe town so noble bold þer rere,  
 þat in al Engelond so noble a cite nere.  
 Welles he lette make a bonte & gates bp & down,  
 And astur Lud, þat was hys name, he clepude yt Lude's town.  
 þe herte gate of þe town, <sup>3</sup> þa get stond þere and is,  
 He lette yt clepe Lude's gate, astur ys owne name ywis.  
 He let hym, þo he was ded, burye at þilke gate.  
 þer fore get astur hym me clepoh hit Lodagate,  
 þe town me clepuh Lude's town, þat ys wyde comþ:  
 And now me clepeh it London, þat ys lygter in þe monþ.  
 And þewe Troie hit hette er, <sup>4</sup> ac þus yt is a go  
 þat Londone he ys now y cleped, and worþ enerma.

**E**ngelond hay i be with strengþe y wonne y lome,  
 And first, as ich telle can, þorþ þe emperoures of Rome.

Astur kyng Lud þer was kyng ys broþer Cassibel,  
 þat noble Prince was y now, & þat lond gouernede wel.  
 Julius. July þe emperour of Rome by his day com,  
 And muche del of þe world bi Est to hys power nom.  
<sup>5</sup> Seþþe he drom hym Westward, & werrede in mony londe,  
 And wan lond <sup>6</sup> astur oper, hym ne mygte non at stonde.  
 þo he hadde y wonne France, þe see he wende ney,  
<sup>7</sup> And bi huld Westward, and som del of Engelond y sey.

1. Alther *Ar.* 2. He het in hit cleped, *Ar.* 5. And tho þe  
 thulke toune the folk suchþe *Ar.* 6. Astur lond, ne myghte  
 buldyngþe a rere, *Ar.* 3. That hym no man astonde *Ar.*  
 yut stant *Ar.* 4. Ac nough hit 7. And as he lokede West-  
 is so ago, That Londone is ward, Engelond he seygh *Ar.*  
 he

He askede, wat lond yt were, & wat folk þer inne was?  
 He seide hym þat it was Bretayne, ne betur lond nas,  
 And þat þe folk was of þe kynde of Troie, & of þe Bent y come.  
 " þenne beþ heo, quop þe emperour, of þe kynde of Rome.  
 " For, astur þe batail of Troie, þe noble men Eneas  
 " To Lumbardye com, and oure kirke fader was.  
 " And Brut al so com of hym, þat seþþe hys fader flowg,  
 " And þer fore was þenne y dryne, & to þilke lond drowg.  
 " þanne we beþ of on kynde, <sup>3</sup> ac, wate ich þer to lye,  
 " A gen kynde he beþ a gegn vs, as of chynal rye.  
 " For þer of ne mowe heo konne nogt, y not how he mygte,  
 " To be by hem self in an hurne as þe ras with oute sygte.  
 " For nogt we schulleþ hem ouercome, ac napeles as þe hende  
 " We schul hem warne of oure pozt, er we to hem wende.

1. Cumque nomen regni didicisset & populi, dixit, Hercle ex eadem prosapia nos Romani & Brittones orti sumus, quia ex Trojana gente processimus. Nobis Æneas post destructionem Trojæ primus pater fuit. Illis autem Brutus, quem Silvius Ascanii, filii Æneæ, filius genuit. Sed, nisi fallor, valde degenerati sunt à nobis Nec quid sit milita noverunt, cum infra oceanum extra orbem commaneant. Leviter cogendi erunt tributum nobis dare, & continuum obsequium Romanæ dignitati parare. Prius tamen mandandum est eis, ut inaccesſi à

Romano populo & intacti vestigal reddant, ut ceteræ etiam gentes subjectionem senatui faciant, ne nos, ipsorum cognatorum nostrorum sanguinem fundentes, antiquam nobilitatem Priami patris nostri offendamus *Ga'fridus Mon.* 2. To Itaille com, that is now Rome, and oure auncestre was *Ar.* 3. And ich can a spie, hit were a ye kynde to be a yensl vs, as of chynalrie. For ther on ne mowe hit konne nought, y not how hit myghte, To be in an herne by hem self, ther with oute fighte *Ar.*

þe



þe emperours' messengers to Engelond hire come,  
 þat þe kyng shewe þu þerte : to þe noble cite of Rome,  
 And alle oþer bynges dide, and þu eȝt seruaȝe  
 Dide to þe hys emperour, and sende hym þys truaȝe,  
 And þys lond hold of hym, and dide hym homage,  
 Lest þe hys emperour for þis outrage  
 Come and destruye al þys lond ; & got þat marke were,  
 ⁊ þe blod schelde of þu owne kynde, & defoule yt so þere.  
 And þe olde þaynys of Priamus werrede so,  
 Of was kynde heo come echon, & þat were hym loþ to do.  
 For þu : schelde in al : þu world no lond be for þore.  
 þis was enene firtȝ for æt æðen were y bore.

Mandat-  
 tum regis. " þe kyng ⁊ sende þis word a goȝn a non for þis tyȝing :  
 " Caſſhel, byng of Wrecſſyre, to July sendeþ gretȝing.

" Wonder it ys, Sire emperour, ⁊ þat noble gentrile  
 " þat is so noble & eke y ſuld with so ſpl conetȝle,  
 " þat 7 worde's nobleȝe haſt ſo muche, of eke mon meſt,  
 " þat for conetȝle art y came ſo fer fro þe Eſt,  
 " To wiſne pure intel god, þat God us wolde ſende  
 " þat beþ hire hi pure ſelf, as at þe worlde's ende :

1. To the cite of Rome, And  
 alle oþer bynges dide, in  
 his ryȝt ſeruaȝe, And þis  
 lond holde of hym, & dide  
 hym homage, Lest the heigh  
 Ar. 2. To hede his owne  
 kynde blod & defouled there ;  
 And take hede of Priamus  
 prude, that werrede ſo. Of his  
 kynde hi come echon, & that  
 hi were loth do Ar. 3. Re

holde Ar. 4. The Ar. 5. hym  
 ſende word a ye, tho he haude  
 this tyȝing : Ar. 6. Of thy  
 gret gentrile, That though ſo  
 ſoule anetherſt hit with the  
 conetȝle, That wordles meſt  
 haſt ſo muche, of alle men  
 meſt, That for conetȝle art y  
 came ſo fer fram the Eſt Ar.  
 7. L. worlde's.

" And

"And þou nart one y payed oure tresour to nyne at one,

"But þou þer astur us bingme oure franchise at chene,

"To bryngs us so fre as we beþ in to 2 þis fornyge,

"þat we bere þe and þyne ouermore trange.

"Gret wrong þou waldest þou us, wen of ou bynde

"We beþ y come ge & we, as þou hast þi sold in mynde.

"þenne agte yt be y nemy, wen we beþ of ou bled,

"Loue & frendshipe aske us, gif þou þe wel vnderston,

"Thaw þou ne askedest þer bype þraihed ouerna.

"Sikerliche we ne konne nogt of þraihed no of mo.

"So muche we habbeþ ouer y be in 4 franchise yet her to,

"þat þei oure oune Goden wolde in þraihede us be,

"fonde we wolde a geyn hem 5 our franchise withhoude.

"þei þou þer fore, Sire emperour, grets power hadde ou þoude,

"Wyte 6 to soþe, þat we wolles for oure franchise seye,

"And for our leud, raþer þou 7 we leled with us trygt.

þis was eke four hundred ger, and four score, & þrottens,

Aftur þat þe borg of Rome first was mad ishe wone.

þe þe emperours herde þis, to schippen þe wende laste,

And al þys power forþ with hym, and sailen by caste.

þei entrede in at Temse monþ, and þer heo gonne a riss.

þe Castil be herde þis, 8 he garhede hym bi lyne.

Now hadde kyng Lud, ys broþer, gonge sonen twei,

Androge and Tennant, þat þo gonge weye beye,

1. And þat though nert

nought saliche apayd *sr.*

2. Gret *sr.* 3. Eke ther to

þealdom enere mo. for on

þealdom konne we nought,

ne of such oþer wo *sr.*

4. Franchise hider to. for

theygh that the Goden hem

self wolde in to thraldom us

do *sr.* 5. for oure *sr.*

6. for soþ *sr.* 7. We wol

leue hit with vuryghte *sr.*

8. We greithed hym as byne

*sr.*

þo

Julian ve-  
nit An-  
gliam.

þo here sader dæde to holde þe kyndom.

<sup>1</sup> þer fore þer to Cassibel al þat lond nom.

Ac þo nolde not Cassibel, þat heo schulde allyng faille.

Tennant þe gonger he made erl of Cornewale,

And Androge erl of Kent, & gaf hym London þer to.

Boþe heo were noble men þo þis dæde was & do.

þe kyng hadde <sup>2</sup> eke a broþer, Henny was hys name,

Strong knygt and hardi, and mon of gret fame.

þe kyng's chef conseileres þese þre were of þis þing.

Alle heo come to Canterburī at þe bi gynnynge.

þere þe kyng & ys power such conseil to gedere nome,

To hope þe emperoure's folc er <sup>3</sup> heo to fer income.

For geþ þei hadde eny þing & wonne of castel or of tou,

Wel þe worse it wolde be to brynge hem þer don.

<sup>4</sup> þo kyng wente toward þe se mid fair oðt ynowg,

<sup>5</sup> And as þe emperour hadde & pigt ys pancelon he dromg.

þo <sup>6</sup> he hadde & ordeyned here oðt in epper syde,

<sup>7</sup> þo batail heo smyton strong ynowg, þat comþ was ful wyde.

Bellum. Myd armen & myd quareles so muche folk <sup>8</sup> first me flow,

<sup>9</sup> And seþþe with speres smyton a down, þat deol was ynow.

þo heo were þorg out & mengd with swerdes & with mace,

Myd axe & mid anles, so muche folk in þat place

1. þerfore Cassibelan this  
lond to hym nom, And also  
he nolde, that eny thyng these  
children holde faille *Ar.*  
2. Eke a nothur broþur *Ar.*  
3. His to bataille come *Ar.*  
4. The *Ar.* 5. And toward

themperoure's tente euens he  
hym drough *Ar.* 6. His *Ar.*  
7. An pro tho in *Ar.* 8. Deek  
*Ar.* 9. And with sword and  
with speres, that deol hit was  
& nough *Ar.*

My

He flow, þat al þe erþe a boute þed<sup>1</sup> as in flode  
 Et þe bataille were y do al of red blade.  
 Henry þe kyng's brother and þe erl of Kent al so,  
 Wold al here power of Kent, & myd þe Londonis þer to,  
 Swatede hem to þilke oþt, þat þe emperour tunc men.  
 So þat Henry þe emperour bi cas,  
 Anon he willed in herte with so þey men to fyght.  
 He assailed hym & drew y sward, & smot with al y myght.  
 Ac þe emperour mid hym scheld þe strok þente gnew,  
 And drew hym sward<sup>2</sup> as þey, & to þe grounde-falle flow,  
 And smot Henry þer þe helm<sup>3</sup> soundel tenned þe droye.  
 And sette toward þilke stude he smot with more myght,  
 To hane y cleue<sup>4</sup> hym<sup>5</sup> al þat hed, ac Henry y scheld  
 nam,  
 And dede by twene, þat he smok so þey þer some<sup>6</sup> ac<sup>7</sup> com,  
 þat þe emperour ac myght yt not drawe with al y myght.  
 Henry take<sup>8</sup> cas<sup>9</sup> y sward anon a wey wel sayn,  
 And nam þet sward to hym, þat so noble was & riche.  
 for þer nas in al þe world sward hym yliche.  
 for þer nas non þer myght y wounded, þat ever hauer myght.  
 þer fore yt was rebe deþ y cleped and mid myght.  
 þe Henry hadde þat gode sward, aboute he smot to grounde.  
 Ech man þat he þer with smot, he yof hys sward.

Lucratio  
 gladii.

1. Al on a flode. 2. Dr. ny. 6. Almost in to the  
 droyed hem. 3. Henry droyne. 7. Deest. 8.  
 than Emperour y loch as sei Henry. 9. Deest. 10. He  
 by cas. 4. Sward thane ny. 11. Redundat. 12. Nam  
 strok. 5. Anon, and to to hym the emperoure's sward,  
 grounde slough. He smot He that. 13. Henry.

Victoria  
Bryto-  
num.

þe Romaynes late lone a doon, he made emty place.  
 And þe Brytones a ryle faste, so þat, þorm Gode's grace,  
 heo hadde þe maistrey of þe feild. 1 þo Romaynes slome 2 bi lyue,  
 He mony was þe moder child þat arst was brogt of lyue.  
 þe emperour and ys power to schip slowe faste,  
 And to France slow ageyn, somdel þei were agaste.  
 Here folc heo loren in þe se þorg tempest monþon,  
 3 Wat in batayle wat in se, & heore horses ney echon.  
 Cassibel was glad & now þo he hadde þe maystrie.  
 4 fayne he þonkede ys gode folc, and of gret corteysie  
 Of giftes 5 delde among hem euer as heo were.  
 So þat soþe and 6 murþe & now among hem was þere.  
 He þer was among hem deol rnow for 7 flennyn & brogt,  
 þat þe emperour þe wonde gef, þat he ne mygt hele nogt.  
 He lai for 8 pnyed in þe wonde, and to deþe dromg,  
 And dyede þe 9 sylfe day myd forme & deol & nowg.  
 Witte Norþ gate of London heo buryode þis gode knygt,  
 And buryede with hym in hys chest þat swerd þat was so  
 brygt,  
 þat þe man of þe emperour with honour & nowg,  
 þat rede deþ was & cleud, war wryþ he hym slowg.  
 & buried it was forþ with hym, as in tokenenge  
 Of ys prowes, þat he yt man of ou so þey a kynge.

- 
- |                               |                    |                 |     |                         |     |               |
|-------------------------------|--------------------|-----------------|-----|-------------------------|-----|---------------|
| 1. þe                         | Ar.                | 2. Blyue        | Ar. | courtasie               | Ar. | 5. He delde a |
| 3. Many                       | in bataille & many |                 |     | mong hem euer as worthy |     |               |
| en see, and hure hors eueri-  |                    |                 |     | were                    | Ar. | 6. Blisse     |
| chon                          | Ar.                | 4. faire gan to |     | fleny                   | Ar. | 7. Pynnyge    |
| thouke his folk, and dade hem |                    |                 |     | 9. flistenethe          | Ar. |               |

Cassibel

Cassel þe gode kyng hym gan ener vnderstonde,  
 þat þe emperour þougte get werre in hym londe.  
 þe sylf townes of þe sylf portes he lette walle aboute,  
 And so gode knyghtes dade þer, þat he nabbe þer no doute.  
<sup>1</sup> Stakes of yrn mony on he pygte in Temese gronde,  
 A bone scharpe & kene ynow, bi neþe grete & ronde,  
 þat, gef þer eny schippes come er me y wat were,  
 heo schulde piche hem þoru out & a drenchen hem so þere.  
 Here was copntysle ynow, he lette al so a rere  
<sup>2</sup> Up þe water strong hows, þat heo bu warned nere.  
 And of þe gonge folk of þe lond þer inne dade y nome,  
 To be prest to kepe here son, wen þei <sup>3</sup> to hem drowe.

**J**ulius <sup>1</sup> þe emperour with strong power y nowg, Reditus  
Julii.  
 Two get astur þe bataille, to Engeland a geyn drow,  
 And þougte sle al þat folk, & wyne þis kyndom,  
<sup>2</sup> Ac he caste þer of ambes, as þo he to londe com.  
 For as þis schippes with gret eir come toward londe  
 In Temse, as þei al þe world ne schulde hem at stonde,  
 þe pykes smyte hem þoru out, or þei wyfte wat yt were,  
 And dalschte and a dreynte fourty schippes þere.  
 And a þousant gode knyghtes þer inne were adreynt,  
<sup>6</sup> And al here atyl and trefour was al so a seynt.

- 
- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 1. Piles he pyghte manyon<br>upon Temese gronde <i>Ar.</i><br>2. Upon Temese toures<br>stronge, that his vnwarned<br>nere <i>Ar.</i> 3. To londe droughe<br><i>Ar.</i> 4. The seconde comynge, four <i>Ar.</i> | of Julius <i>Ar.</i> in margine.<br>5. And forto do this like dede,<br>gret people with hym he nom.<br>And as hure wyfes <i>Ar.</i><br>6. And hure catel and tre- |
|--|---|

And so hec myghe lerne, much Brytones were.  
 Betere hem hadde be at Rome, þan y osted þere.  
 þe emperour with drew hym þo, and by an oþer ende  
 To londe he com : wroȝ y now, þis lond forto schende.  
 And kyng Cassibel y set so muche folk y lore,  
 And adreynt of hys son, glad he was þer fore.

And napeles he was fori, and made gret mone  
 Of hem þat of scapede, þat heo nadde be dreynt echone,  
 þo þe Romaynes were y come to þe lond at þe laste,  
 Cassibel with ys power a geyn hem sette faste.

Bellum.

þeo smypton batail strong y now, þer was y do gret wo,  
 And mony slawe on eþer half, ac of þe Romaynes mo.  
 For þe Brytones wor faste, þe Romaynes by nepe were.  
 þo þe emperour say, þat ys fare nas nogt þere,  
 Mid lute folk, þat hym was bi leued, to schip he goþ faste.  
 Myt were men of a god lond þat a hem so kouþe agaste.  
 þe kyng Cassibel anon for soþe made ys heste,  
 þat alle þe knyghtes of hys lond come to ys feste,  
 To London at a certeyn day, and here wryues al so,  
 Here sacrificste to here Godes, as ryȝt was, to do.

Numerus  
anima-  
lium.

Fourti þ þousant of roþeren he lette quelle þer to,  
 And of satte weþeres an hundred þousand al so.  
 Of wilde bestes he lette þritti þousant quelle.  
 þe wylde foules & þe tame ne myghe nomon telle.  
 þo þis fest gare was, þat folk first in here wyle  
 To heore Godes as heo wolde dude here sacrificste.

---

1. Wroth *Ar.* 2. Hem so wel a gaste *Ar.* 3. Thousand  
 geyn he let kulle ther to *Ar.*

þer

þer astur þe sete to heere mete with so gret nobil echon,  
þat me mihte þer bi fore so nobil ' folk non.

Astur mete, as rygt was, þe menstres gode aboute,  
And dryghten and ' sweynes ' in carole gret rounte.

Occisio  
nepotis  
regis.

So þat þe kyng's newen, and þe erl's newen of Kent,  
þat twei yonge bachelers nobile were and gont,

' In þis noble compaigne stur bi gounes arere,  
So þat þe erl's newen þat oþer slowy rygt here.

þe was al þe court anged, as þei mihte nebe,  
þe kyng ferde eke for wraþþe as he wolde webe.

' Androge he sende word, þat he ys newen toke  
And brogte hym forþ ' forte longe þat he court hym wolde  
loke.

Conten-  
cio regis  
& Andro-  
gei.

Androge was a brad ' for he mihte þe kyng's mihte,  
And loþ ' he hadde ys newen to longe or spille.

þe kyng he sende word a geyn, þat he hadde ys franchise  
In ys owne court, forte loke domes and assise,

And þat, gef ys newen hadde mys do, in þys owne court he  
scholde

Onswere to eche man, ' þat to hym siwe wolde.

þe ' þis kyng herde þis, þat he ne mygt bi rygt lame

Ange hym, þat ys newen brogte of ys lyl dame,

He greppede ys oþ ' sake bp þe erl of Kent,

To drynge ys newen with strengþe ' to stonde to iuggement.

1. A feste *Ar.* 2. Ladys  
pro swynes in *Ar.* 3. As they  
pleide atte chesse, stryf they  
goun arere *Ar.* 4. To Androge  
erl he sende word, *Ar.*  
5. forte a longe *Ar.* 6. Tho  
he mihte *Ar.* 7. Hym was

that his cosyn hangesholde or  
spille *Ar.* 8. That hym siwe  
wolde *Ar.* 9. The pro þis in  
*Ar.* 10. Smythe anon upon  
the *Ar.* 11. To longe iugge-  
ment *Ar.*

Oþer



Oþer mid swer or mid swerd brygg he wolde al out,  
 hym to noȝt and al ys þing, ner he ner so prout.  
 þis erl bi grette lordes to þis kyng ofte sende,  
 þat he schulde for Gode's loue ys wyllle : som del amende,  
 And þat he for ys newe wolde, for to a baty stryf,  
 Do þey amendement, sawne lyme and lye.  
 þo þer nas non oþerwey, bate stonde al out to dome,  
 þe erl of an oþerwey bi þougte : bi þougte hym ylome.  
 And as he and ys conseil stabe conseil nome,

Litteræ  
 missæ im-  
 peratori.

þese letres sende to July þe emperour of Rome.

"To July þe emperour of Rome Androge, erl of Kent,

"Gretynge and stabe loue, astur wrapþe, & send.

"Gire, wyte to soþe, þat fore of þinket yt me,

"þat ich habbe for ousre kynges' loue y holde ageyn þe,

"þat my power nadde y be, þou haddest hym ouer come.

"Ac for he haþ now þe maistrie, such pruyd hym haþ y nome,

"þat now me, þoru wam he haþ of þe maistrie,

"Dryue he wolde out of ys lond myd gret vilenye.

"Ich habbe y holde hym in þys lond, & my mede þer of ys,

"þat he wel me dryue of ys lond vnderfurned ywis.

"for ousre Godes y take witnesse, þat oþer gult non þer nys,

"Wote þat i nelle my newew, þat a lytel vnde amys,

"Bi take hym to suggement, to honge oþer to drawe,

"Ich wole, saue hym & lye, brynge hym to eche lawe.

"þer fore ich biðde, þat ich mowe my stat holde þorg þe,

"And þat þou bp hym Bretayne mowe wyne þorg me.

- |            |         |     |          |     |           |        |            |
|------------|---------|-----|----------|-----|-----------|--------|------------|
| 1. Men pro | þing in | Ar. | eth      | Ar. | 6. Þf my  | Ar.    | 7. The     |
| 2. Somwhat | amende  | Ar. | the      | Ar. | 8. Ac ich | wolde, | Ar.        |
| 3. Dele.   | 4. Sent | Ar. | 5. Thynk |     | 9. Deest  | Ar.    | 10. Of hym |
|            |         |     |          |     |           |        | And        |

"And ne þenche þou, Sire, noþing, þat ich treson þenche.

"For siker <sup>1</sup> þis þe soþe wei, withouten eny wrenche.

"<sup>2</sup> And God wole, þat men ofte in wrapþe & in sore,

"þat after here grete wrapþe here loue be þe more.

þo þe <sup>3</sup> emperou herde þis, he ne tryste not wel her to,

With oute siker offage, such þing to do.

þe erl þritti noble men, þat were of ys blod,

Offages.

Sende hym and ys owne sone, þat were offages god.

Siker <sup>4</sup> was þo þe emperour, he ne leuede nogt by hynde,

Ac com here to Engolond mid þe nexte wynde.

þe kyng <sup>5</sup> þe while London by segede faste,

Adventus  
Juli.

And destruede þe erl's lond, & ys <sup>6</sup> contris a down caste.

Ac þo he herde, þat þe Romaynes y come were in hys londe,

To hem he wende hastlyche, & lette London stonde.

<sup>7</sup> þo he com ney Canterbury, in a balet þers by spde

He sey þe emperoure's oft ysprad a doute wyde.

þe emperour first <sup>8</sup> in ys half, & he hym self al so,

Ordeynede first here <sup>9</sup> oft, þe bataille forte do.

Paracio  
belli.

Ac mid syl þousand hors <sup>10</sup> ywyrpe, as it was bi speke,

þe erl of Kent was in <sup>11</sup> a mode, hym forte a wreke.

þer of nas not þe kyng war, ac with oute faille

Myd god herts he wende forþ to fygte þis bataille.

1. This is the *Ar.* 2. And  
ofte hit falleth, that men, that  
bath in wrathe and in sore,  
After hure grete wrathe, hure  
loue wexeth the more *Ar.*  
3. L'emperour. 4. The thirde  
comynge of Julie Emperour  
*Ar.* in marg. 5. Thulke while  
*Ar.* 6. Courtes *Ar.* 7. Ut igi-

tur vallem prope Dorobernium  
intravit, asperxit in eadem Ro-  
manorum exercitum castra &  
tentoria ponentem *Galf. Mon.*  
8. On his half, and the kyng  
on his also, *Ar.* 9. Ofen, the  
bataille for to do *Ar.* 10. Þ  
heled, as *Ar.* 11. A mode,  
forte be a wreke *Ar.*

By

Fugit  
Cassibel-  
lanus.

By tyme þat see and Canterbury þis bataile was,  
 þeuer ich mene more ' flayt in to late wyle nas.  
 þat folk seið down for wounded & y flane in cyfar tyde  
 ' He þikke as leuen day of tren a geyn nygtris's tyde.  
 He þo ' þat folk of þis land neyg hadde þe matkrye,  
 Com þe cri of Mont mid yu oft þery yu tricherie  
 Al frech bi hynde þe Britoun, alas! þikke shoude.  
 So þat þis land man y bragt þery þis treson to gronde.  
 He þe kyng and summe of yu defendede hem so safre,  
 þat heo for þem alle o ðine a scapode atte laste,  
 And noide hem gæde for no þing, ac among here son þere  
 Of scap up on þey ' þai, as many roches were,  
 And þer heo cunðe þere growen, & hepte hem þere on þeyg  
 With stony, þat noman ne durste come hem neyg.  
 Oo! loo þe noble folk, ' þat yu of þis lande,  
 When heo þe emperour of Rome, þat no land ac wyyte of  
 shoude,

In bataile and al yu oft ouer come tney,  
 And ouer walde, as ich wout, cunðe yu tricherie.  
 þer foue ich mene, þat þis land nauer y meuns more,  
 Wate yt þery treson of þe folk of þe salus land were.  
 þo þe emperourcne myggis þe kyng myð stouffe ouer come,  
 þat þai he hepte for to he hadde myð hongur hym y nome.

Wate lode ' þe kyng was y bragt to gronde

Rex mit-  
tit comiti.

7 For þenger for defaut of mets, alas! þikke shoude.

1. Slought. 2. I. as. 6. Tho the kyng was al y  
 3. The folk. 4. Hulle, ther brought. 7. Thargh has-  
 many roches were, 5. get.  
 That was on this lande.

And

And he sei wel, þat he moſte neðe for þonger byt,  
 Or geiðe hym to þe emperour, as al þe men ſeyr,  
 And þe emperoure's priſon he drabbe eke ful ſott,  
 þer for þe eil of Kent he by ſouȝte milce and ore,  
 þat he hadde rempe of hym, and for þe gentriſe  
 Maðe þe þen with þe emperour with oute ſeyntiſe,  
 And þat þe kynde blod of þis lond, of whom heu doþe,  
 Here þoru hym ȝ broȝt to ſchame, & þat he toke þer of gome,  
 And þat ȝif he hadde oȝt miſdo ageyn hym myȝd monȝ,  
 þat he ȝt wolde amendy ageyn hym wel ȝ now.  
 þe Sadroge herde þis, ſom del he was in þoȝt.  
 "þe þrynce," he ſeiðe, "oþer kyng nȝ to þreȝſe noȝt,  
 "þat in tyme of weire as a lomb þe doþe meke & myȝde,  
 "And in tyme of pes as a lyon doþe cruel & wyȝde.  
 "Mi Godden of heuene and of erþe, wat ſegge now ȝe?  
 "My lord bi ſecheþ now my grace, þat myȝte er þoto me.  
 "Mid þe emperour and mid me þe he ſecheþ to drame:  
 "And we doþe of hym bi fore þeas wiſnede wel ſawe.  
 "þer for he ſchalde hym habbe ȝ þoȝt, þat þoȝt me he was  
 aboue,  
 "And þoȝt me he myȝt hane come a down, & ȝ had me lone,  
 "for ȝt þe to eche þrince ȝ me and kyng diſonȝe,  
 "To be ſoule þe knyȝtes, þoru wam he haþ miȝtiſe.  
 "for þe maſtre nȝ not a kyng'e's, ne be he neſet ſo god,  
 "Ac knyȝtes, þat vnder hym ſyȝteþ, & ſchedeþ here blod.

1. And of his gentriſe *Ar.* 4. My lone *Ar.* 5. Eke a  
 2. Deeſt vox. Nam hit both | kyng or þrince diſonȝe *Ar.*  
 come in *Ar.* 3. þoto *Ar.*

"And napeles ich wol fonde, to brynge hym of ys fere.  
 "for ich hadde of hym wreche pnow, wen he bi secheþ myn ore.  
 þe eri wende <sup>1</sup> to emperour, & <sup>2</sup> set a down on kne :  
 "Sire," he seide, "al þi wille þou hast þou mygt y se  
 "Of þe kyng, þat ys myn uncle, he ys at þi wille.  
 "Hane merci of hym ich bidde, & let hym nogt a spille.  
 "What woldest þou more of hym, bute þat he þe truage bere?  
 þe emperour was stille, & ne gef hym non onswere.  
 "Sire emperour," quoth þe eri þo, "<sup>3</sup> ne be ge nogt so bolde.  
 "Understond, þat forward ich hadde al þe y holde,  
 "To brynge þe kyng bi neþe þe, & þat þou woune ys loude.  
 "Wat schulde ich þe more do, naht þou al þis in þin hounde?  
 "Holde God, þat y lustrede my lord, þat is and was,  
 (" þat bid me for gefuelle, & to amende hys trespas)  
 "þat he in þyne bendes come, <sup>5</sup> God yt schyld me.  
 "for þou <sup>6</sup> ne schalt <sup>7</sup> so lyghtliche hym nyne, y segge þe.  
 "Wyle ich libbe for ich wole in eche maner fonde,  
 "To helpe my lord & myn uncle, bute þou me vnderstonde.  
 þo þe emperour herde þis, he by gan hym by þenche,  
 And hys wrappe toward þe kyng, for drede of þe eri, quenche.  
<sup>8</sup> þo emperour & þe kyng in þis forme a cordede were,  
 þat þe kyng of þis lond to þe emperour bere

---

<p>             1. The emp. <i>Ar.</i> 2. Sette hym              down a kne <i>Ar.</i> 3. He bere ye              yough nought to bolde <i>Ar.</i>              4. And biddeth me forpene-              nesse to a mendy his trespas  <i>Ar.</i> 5. God for shalde hit me  <i>Ar.</i> 6. He shalt nought so              lightlye hym take, ich segge           </p>	<p>             the. Al the while that ych              lyue, euere ich wole fonde  <i>Ar.</i> 7. Non leve est interficere              Cassibellianum me vivente, cui              auxilium meum reddere non              erubescam, nisi consilio meo pa-              ruieris <i>Galfr. Mon.</i> 8. Tho the              Emperour <i>Ar.</i> </p>
--	--

þre

þe þousant þownd of seluer from þer to gere,  
 As to truage to Rome, þat non ' ner bore ners.  
 And in þis maner was Engolond brought first in seruage,  
 And þorg treson of þis selue lond first get truage.  
 þer fore a kyng ne may nogt among þs knyghtes be  
 ' To sturne of þys iuggement, ac somdel hym by le,  
 ' þat he hæp to hem neode he not wuche stonde.  
 For a such wille, as ge y seh, brogte þis lond to grounde.  
 þe emperour & þe kyng to grette lone drome,  
 And cyþer ' to" oþer by twene hem giftes geue rnome,  
 And bi ienede al þe wynter to gedere in þis lond.  
 Ac ageyn somer þe emperour, ' þo he hadde al on hond,  
 Wende toward Rome, and myd gret lone  
 Rom with hym þe erl of Kent, þerw nam he was a bone.  
 ' And þoru nobleye þat he was man of so gret fame,  
 He let a money of þe ger cleppe astur þs owne name,  
 Julius, as he het ym-self, þe money þat next þs  
 Bi fore herneft, as me clepuþ get so þe money y wys.

Vocacio  
 mensis  
 Julii.

**I**ffibel þe gode kyng, as God gef ' þat cas,  
 Deide astur ' sene ger þat he ouer come was,  
 And y burped was at Ewerwyk, ' & þis kyndom  
 Temtwant, þs broþer sone, astur hym nome,

Obitus  
 Cassibel-  
 lani.

1. Forþore *Ar.* 2. To  
 strange of his iuggementz *Ar.* 3. And that haneth to  
 hem neode he not whiche  
 stonde. For thurgh such a  
 wilfulnesse this lond was  
 brought to grounde. The em-

perour tho & the *Ar.* 4. Deest  
*Ar.* 5. When he hadde *Ar.*  
 6. This Julius the Emperour  
 was of so grette fame, *Ar.*  
 7. The pro þat in *Ar.* 8. Se-  
 nen *Ar.* 9. And tho this *Ar.*

H 2

þat

pat was erl of Cornwalle, and he erle's brother of Kent  
Androge, that was to Rome mid þe emperour y went.

**A**ugustus was emperour after Jule of Rome,  
þe truuge bope of þis land from ger to ger þes nome.

þe kyng's sone Tenwant, Kymbel was ys name,  
þe huld with hym at Rome, man of noble fame.

He gaf hym armes & made hym knyght : ys owne honde.

Kymbel þis Kymbel after þys fader kyng was of þis lande.

rex.

So muche he louede þe : emperours, þat þei he myght out

þys truuge at halde a ger, for lous he nolde negt.

þo þis August hadde y þe emperour two & fourti ger,

He let make a deferingug, þat y mod nas neuer er.

He sende aboute ys messengers (as yt ys y writte)

To eche land in al þe world a certeyn : forte wyte,

How many schiren were in eche land, & townes in eche  
schire,

And how many men in eche town, (þe was a gret stre)

And þat ech mon payde a peny, & þat me hym þe money bere,

War þoru þe wisde, how many men in al þe world were.

And me made þis deferingug in þis land, as wel

As in any oþer land, bi þe kyng's day : Kymbel.

And napeles : y lene yt not, þat he ne dade al wel þanne

for lous of þe panes, as to wyte þe noumbre of þe menne.

- |                              |                                |           |
|------------------------------|--------------------------------|-----------|
| 1. With his owen hande       | 3. for to                      | 4. Kymbel |
| 2. Emperour, than whan       | 5. Ich lene hit wel, he dade   |           |
| he myghte he nolde, The tru- | hit somdel thanne, As wel for  |           |
| uge that his fader bar, he   | lous of the panes, as to knowe |           |
| wolde nought with holde      | the noumbre of manne           |           |

þe boute

A bonte Jerusalem his nonnberug he bi gan,  
 As in þe myddes of þe world, to nonnber eche man.  
 þilke tyme oure lord was in <sup>1</sup> Bethlem þere  
 Of <sup>2</sup> Marie, to sanc men, þat arst were for lore;  
 By kinbele's day, þat kyng was of Bretoun here,  
 And in þe emperours's August two and fourti gere,  
 þat was y clepud Otontan in an oþer name.  
 þis emperour August was of so gret fame,  
 þat, for Juli þe emperour, (þat bi fore hym was er)  
 Hadde astur hym y clepud a moncy in the ger,  
 þe nexte <sup>3</sup> moncy asturward, þat heruest moncy ys,  
 He let clope astur <sup>4</sup> hym August y wys.  
 þo August hadde y þe emperour sytting ger and fyne,  
 And wel y holde ys power, he wende out of þis lyne.

Ortus  
 Christi.

**T**þerth, ys slopene, astur hym com,  
 þat nobliche huld ys power, & eke ys kyndom.  
 þe <sup>5</sup> Gywes, & Herodes (þat here <sup>6</sup> kyng was)  
 He a dauntede herde y now, and non harm yt nos.  
 Pilatus he sende þider, <sup>7</sup> here" iustice to be þere,  
 Forto holde hem herde y now, as þes wel worþi were.  
 And get for al þan, by ys day, þorn here in þer made,  
 þes brogte oure lord Ihesu Christ <sup>8</sup> to dyc on þe rode.

Pylatus.

Passio  
 Christi.

1. Bethlem *Ar.* 2. Marie *Ar.* 3. Fourty yere, *Ar.* 4. Moneth  
 Marie, to sanc mannyde, in the yer, that heruest *Ar.*  
 that the igh name for lore; By 4. His name pro hym in *Ar.*  
 kyng's day kynbelyn of this 5. Gywes *Ar.* 6. Kyng the  
 Breytayne here, And the Em- was *Ar.* 7. Deek *Ar.* 8. To  
 peroure's tyme August two Dethe upon the Rode *Ar.*

þre



þre and twenti ger emperour he was by fore ys Deþe,  
 And astur hym was Gayus sylf ger bi neþe.  
 1 Kyndel, oure kyng of þis lond, sonen hadde twei,  
 Guyder and Brutrag, noble men beþe.  
 Guyder astur ys fader kyng was of þis lond,  
 And Claudius emperour astur Gay ich vnderstonde.  
 2 Mad he was emperour sixti ger, ich wene,  
 Astur þat God was y bore, and a bouten an eigtetene  
 Astur oure lorde's Deþ. a sene hundred ger,  
 And euene eigte and nyenti Rome was y mad er.

**G**uyder, our kyng of þis lond, ys truage at huld lone,  
 3 To Rome þat ys eldore were y wond to done.

Claudius  
venit An-  
gliam.

Claudius þe emperour þer of hym gan bi se.

þe serþe ger þat he hadde emperour y be

4 And gret ost he wende here to þis londe,

5 A bonte Southamto he a ryuede ich vnderstonde.

þo kyng Guyder vnder get, þat heo a ruede þere,

Hym þougte long mid ys 6 ost er he at hem were.

7 Heo mette hem to gedere 8 mid power ynog.

Bellum. 9 Muche folk 7 in eyþe half to gronde me slog.

þe kyng Guyder more folk 8 slowe ys owne bonde,

þan muche del of ys 9 ost, as ich vnderstonde.

- |                              |                            |
|------------------------------|----------------------------|
| 1. Kyndelyn, kyng of Bru-    | pro ost in A. 5. Hit A.    |
| tainne, sonen hadde tweye A. | 6. With gret power ynough  |
| 2. That his auncetres to     | A. 7. On either side to    |
| Rome were woned to done      | grounde me faste slough A. |
| A. 3. In the contreie of     | 8. Slough wth his bonde A. |
| Southamtone A. 4. Power      | 9. Folk pro ost in A.      |

1 þis

<sup>1</sup> his Romaynes were for noght overcome atte laste,  
<sup>2</sup> þat þe emperour with ys olt bi gan to fle faste.  
 3 chementeyn þer was with hym, 3 Haym was ys name.  
 He sey, þat 4 heore partye wrogt was ney to schame.  
 He by þougte hym of felonye, and lette hym arme þere  
 Myd armes of Brytones, as he of þis lond were.  
 He swede myd þe Brytones by þe Romaynes so faste,  
 þat ur kyng 5 hym louede, & ys herte al by hym caste.  
 He spek Englisch, for he was at Rome ynorischid bi fore  
 Myd ostage of þis lond, me louede hym þe bet þer fore.  
 He was euer ur kyng nex, and atte last he drow.  
 Hys swerd, 6 ar he were y war, & oure kyng so slow.  
 þer was trichey 7 y now. for nomen ne may bet do  
 Gyle 7 an oþer, þan þilke þat he trusteþ mest to.  
 To hys felawes he 8 wende anon, & bad hem hardi be;  
 So þat þe Brytones were 9 by þe poynt to fle.  
 Brutrag, oure kynges broþer, wende forþ anon þere,  
 And dunde on þe kynges armes, hym self as yt were.  
 And lepte on ys fete, and swede and slog fast ys son,  
<sup>10</sup> And þe Brutones with hym, for heo wende, þat it were þe  
 kyng echon.

Haym in-  
 terfecit  
 regem per  
 fraudem.

<p>             1. The Romaynes Ar. 2. So that themperour Ar.              3. Leillus Haym Ar. &amp; Leillus Hamondus in marg. 4. His partye was neygh y brought to shame Ar. 5. Hym louede wel, &amp; his herte to hym caste. He spake Brutone, for he was with ostages at Rome byfore Of this loude a queynted, and           </p>	<p>             hadde hit nought y lore. He was euere oure kyng nexte Ar. 6. Er me were y war, and oure kyng a slough Ar. 7. To a nothur, than he that a man trusteth most to Ar. 8. Fete anon, Ar. 9. In poynt forto Ar. 10. The Brutones wende hit were hure kyng, &amp; swede hym echon Ar.           </p>
--	---

Ham-  
pshire.

Deo were alle þo so ' harde, and þat folk slowe so faste,  
 þat þe emperour bi gan to sle mid þs folk at the laste  
 2 To schippen, & into þe see with wretchede hed þ now.  
 He þe injur þaym with þs folk toward þe wode hym stowe.  
 Brutrag hym spede, and ' to grounde ever sloug.  
 Atte laste þs tricherie wel intel he ' by sloug.  
 He ouer tok hym at an haueue & slog hym ryxt þere.  
 Intel harm thet tricheries ' so alle þ serued were.  
 þe haueue þer he was þ slawe, astur ' þaym þs name þ wys,  
 Hamptone was þ clepuð, as he get þ clepuð þs.  
 7 For Southampton he þs þ clepuð, and worþ enermo.  
 In þis maner þe Brittones þis lond ' wiste þo.  
 Claudius þe emperour wolde not get bi leue.  
 Eft sone he ' gan with þs off into þis lond wene.  
 Brutrag at Wyndchestre with þs men was erhon.  
 With þs power þe emperour 10 bislegede hym anon.  
 Brutrag greppede hym and þs folk a boute,  
 And wendeþ forþ to gene hym bataill with oute.  
 þo he com out ward with þs folk, þe emperour with skod,  
 And drede of hys hardynesse, & þougte yt was not god,

1. Wel þ hardied, 2. To  
 his shipes in to the see with  
 wretchede ynough. The iuther  
 þaym with oþar folk to  
 ward a wode þem drough 2.  
 3. Gaere to grounde slough.  
 And atte laste 2. 4. By  
 lough 2. 5. Alle so þ serued  
 2. 6. þaym þwis, þaym-  
 tone was 2. 7. Southam-

tone hit is eke þ claped, 2.  
 8. Kepte the 2. 9. Com with  
 his off in to the lond wene  
 2. 10. Bylette hem echon  
 [1. anon.] Brutragus araide  
 hym, and ordeynede his rout,  
 Wende forþ to gene hem  
 bataille that were with oute.  
 He com outward 2.

To do his lpf ' an aunte, and ys men al so.  
 He þongte te speke of a cord, ȝef it myȝte be y do.  
 To þe kyng he sende word, þat he schulde hym ' be se.  
 And make a forme of a cord, as yt myȝte best be.  
 For wen heo hadde al y forȝte, & here lpf ' an aunte y do,  
 And here folk slawe on eyþer syde, & þeraunte hem seif also,  
 Al for a intel conetysle ' þe bi ȝete war þanne late,  
 Beter yt were ' a cordy, and bi lene heore ' prude.  
 For he was so god ' knygt, and also so noble kyng,  
 He ' beod for to ȝene hym ys doȝter in sponſyng,  
 þe nobleſte damasel þat was in eny londe,  
 And to ſpouſe þe emperoure's ' doȝter yt ner hym no ſchonde,  
 10 For wat he bere ys truage, as ryȝt 11 were, to Rome  
 As 12 alle oþer kynges dude, and ys eldren y lome.  
 þe kyng for ys heye herte anon yt with ſeide:  
 Ac noþeles ys conſeil hym gan þer to rede,  
 And ſaide, þat it was to hym gret grow and honour,  
 To be in ſuch mariage alied to þe emperour,  
 þo 13 herte prince of þe world, and þo maide ſo noble al ſo,  
 And þat it 14 nere hym no ſchame, ys truage to do

1. In aventure, and his  
 meunes also *Ar.* 2. By ſe *Ar.*  
 3. In aventure *Ar.* 4. The by  
 ſete were thanne lyte *Ar.*  
 5. To acordy *Ar.* 6. Prupte  
*Ar.* 7. A knyght *Ar.* 8. Þraide  
 hym for to *Ar.* At beod recte  
 ſe habet. idem nempe eſt atque  
 offered. 9. Doughtur nere to  
 hym no ſhonde, for thy that  
 þe bere *Ar.* 10. Ea conditione

(ait) ut imperio Romano ſub-  
 ditus eſſet. Sic enim *Galfredus*  
*Mon.* "Mandabat igitur ei [Ar-  
 "virago] concordiam, daturum  
 "que promittebat ſeſe filiam  
 "ſuam, ſi tantummodo regnum  
 "Britanniæ ſub Romana pote-  
 "ſtate recognoſceret." 11. Was  
*Ar.* 12. The pro alle in *Ar.*  
 13. Þeighſt *Ar.* 14. Were  
*Ar.*

Spon-  
cio filiz  
Claudii.

Vocacio  
Glouce-  
strie.

To þe noble kinde of Rome, man oþer kynges echone  
 Hit dude þorg al þe world, ' & in so noble forme none.  
 þe kyng, þei he hamteyn were, ches þe best won,  
 ' And vnder stod yz conseil, so þat heo were at on,  
 þat he bere yz truage, as oþer dude, to Rome,  
 And þat he þe emperoure's dogter in sponshed þas nome.  
 þat maide was to lend y brogt of so noble gentrile,  
 fairer womman nas þo non, y hote heo was Gewise.  
 At a late toun, þat was þo bi Est Walis,  
 þat by Seuerne stod, y sponsed ' heo were y wys.  
 þe kyng louede yz wyf a non so purliche & so faste,  
 þat al ' yz herte outliche on hire one he caste.  
 For honour of þe mariage, þe emperour and he  
 ' Werde, as heo y sponsed was, a swyþe fair cite,  
 And astur þe emperoure's name, þat Claudius was,  
 Heo lette þe cite clept Claucestre for þis cas.  
 And þe emperour bi ȝet seþþe in þilke toun bi cas  
 ' lone, þat me clepede Glow, þat gret mon seþþe was,

1. *Ac pro & in Ar.* 2. *And*  
*dude after his conseil, Ar.*  
 3. *Hit Ar.* 4. *His herte to-*  
*ward hure al ontryght he*  
*caste Ar.* 5. *Outliche* forli-  
 tan malint nonnulli, ut only  
 denotet. At outliche lectio ve-  
 rissima, idem scilicet quod ut-  
 terly valens. Id quod etiam è  
*Galsfr. Mon.* liquet. Sic enim ille:  
 "Erat autem nomen puellæ Ge-  
 "nuisa, eratque tantæ pulcritu-  
 "dinis, ut aspicientes in admi-  
 "rationem deduceret. Et ut

"maritali lege copulata fuit,  
 "tanto fervore amoris succendit  
 "regem, ita ut ipsam solum  
 "cunctis rebus præferret." Et  
 tamen outliche ferri potest,  
 ea, qua dixi, significatione,  
 pro more Anglo-Saxonum,  
 qui vocationem ad unam eandemq;  
 rem significandam repetitio-  
 nem amant. 6. *Thar* (omis-  
 so verde, quod tamen præfigi  
 debet) *that he y sponsted was,*  
 a noble cite, *Ar.*

In þey duk of al þat stude, he clepede þat toun & wæs  
 Astur þis name Gloucestre, as he gyt & clepud þis.  
 A bonte four & twenti ger, as þis clerkes underkode,  
 Astur þat oure lord was & do on þe rode.  
 Gloucestre þorgh þe emperour first þus a reord was,  
 And Souþhampton þer bi fore, ȝe habbeth & herd þat cas.  
 Sente Peter þer bi fore so muche & so it were  
 Pope was at Rome first, Cristendom to lere,  
 And sende Sent Mark þe euangelist in to Egypt for to preche  
 þe gospel þat he hadde & mad, and Cristendom to teche.  
 Sent Paul eke þilke tyme to Cristendom wende,  
 Sent Denys, & mony oþer, as þe Lord a bonte hem & sende.  
 Sent Peter fyne and twenti ger Pope bi leneþe so  
 forto yt was þe laste ger of þe emperour Nero.  
 þo þe emperour in þis lond hadde is wille to do & nowȝ.  
 He lette þe kyng al & worþe, & to Rome a ȝeyn drowȝ.  
 þe kyng dyȝte þo þis lond nobliche with alle:  
 He lette bulde vp grete townes, þat were neȝ a down falle,  
 þo Claudius þe emperour to þis ende was & do,  
 Astur hym was emperour þe in þur mon Nero,

Nero.

1. That duk was astur of  
 the toun, and clepede hit  
 Astur his name Glouce-  
 stre, as hit nough cleped is  
 Ar. 2 Lord Crist do was on  
 the rode Ar. 3. Erast quif-  
 piam in Ar. 4. Of Rome, Cris-  
 tendom Ar. omisso first. 5. L.  
 sende cum Ar. 6. For hit Ar.  
 7. Totam Britannia potestatem,

sua absentia, Arvirago concessit  
 Claudium, hic indicat au-  
 stor, illis verbis fultus, quas  
 Galfridus protulit, viz. "Adi-  
 ficata igitur urbe, ac pacificata  
 insula, rediit Claudius Ro-  
 mam, regnumque provincia-  
 lium insularum Arvirago per-  
 milit. 8. And pro he in Ar.

12

1 prota

1 þrottene ger and an half, and þat was longe y now,  
 And Seynt Peter & Seynt Poule in hys 2 laste ger he slaw.  
 Passio Pe- He bi com 3 sone þer astur pur gydi and wod :  
 tri & Pau- 4 For he was in ys moder wembe, as he vnderstod.  
 li. He þoghte he wolde myte, & se how 5 fair þe chaumbre were,  
 6 War tunc he was & keneþe, ar ys moder hym bere.  
 Ys moder he let quelle a non, forto se with tunc  
 How fair þe tuncward was, þat he keneþe inne.  
 þo ys moder y slaw was, me blamede hym þer fore,  
 And seyde, þat heo boghte hym bere, er he were y bore.  
 "7 ge is hpt," quoth he, "so strong, myd childe to be stonde"  
 "8 By þe fey, þat ich owe Mahone, þe soþe ich wol sonde.  
 Hys sciclanes he 9 cleþede, and swor ys oþ anon,  
 Wate heo maden hym with childe, he wolde hem fle echon.  
 Heo bi speke hem 10 bi twone, and, þe deþ forto fle,  
 þei genen hym a þopnte breuch, with childe for to be.  
 Hys wombe bi gan to 11 grete, & ener þe lenger þe more,  
 So 12 longe, þat hym þoghte strong, hys wombe ok wel fore.  
 He cleþede ys sciclanes, 13 and swor grete a non,  
 Wate heo made hym bere child, he wolde hem hange echon.

1. Cristtens *Ar.* 2. Repone  
 laste ex *Ar.* Nec est cur pu-  
 tes, laste recte posse retineri, ut  
 sententia sit, eo anno, quo fue-  
 rit mortuus reliquus, SS. Petrum  
 atque Paulum occidisse. 3. Sone  
 afterward purr *Ar.* 4. And  
 hough he was in his moder  
 wombe he thoughte & vnder-  
 stod *Ar.* 5. Murp *Ar.* 6.  
 What that he was ynnre y

kenned, er *Ar.* 7. Pe, quath  
 he, is hit strong, with childe  
 to be bestonde? By the fey  
 ich owe to my Godes, the soþe  
*Ar.* 8. Cleþede tho, and *Ar.*  
 9. Bitworne than, deth *Ar.*  
 10. Grete, *Ar.* 11. Deest *Ar.*  
 12. And swor his oth anon,  
 Wate hit delþuerede hym a-  
 non, hit holde depe echon.  
 Hit ref *Ar.*

1 þe

1 he gene hym an oþer drenche, to habbe child þer,  
 So þat atte lasse a sory child þe ber. . . . . Rana.  
 2 For it alles com forþ, yt was a foul frogge,  
 for gode me þinkeþ litel harm, þei yt hadde i be a dogge.  
 get þis gredi wreche londe þis soule best,  
 Is 3 wommon deþ hire child & alle þing mest,  
 And 4 let hym rene a noble court, with gret quoyntye and  
 gyune,  
 At þe on ende of Rome, to norische þe schrewe inne;  
 And clepude þe court Laterane, astur þe frogge y wys,  
 for in þe langage of Rome, rane a frogge ys.  
 So ys þat stude y clepud now, & ener worþ for þat cas.  
 feble was þe Godfader, astur wam þe name was.  
 6 þe firste chyrche þat me lette in þo lond rene,  
 Seyn Jone's þe Lateran me rerede seþþe þere,  
 þat stond get, & hened chyrche þat of al Cristendom ys,  
 Ac a beter chef þer ys now, þan þe frogge was y wys.  
 Seþþe þe laþer emperour hadde in his herte soie,  
 To þenche 7 on suyr, þat was in þe bataile of Troie,  
 þo me barnde grete townes & courtes day & nygt,  
 And þogte yt was mury soie, to se so fair alrgt.

Combu-  
 stio  
 Romz.

1. Hit is. 2. For tho hit  
 al forth com, hit was a wel  
 foul frogge. His sificiens  
 hadde y holde hym wel in the  
 gogge. Put this gidy wreche  
 is. 3. A woman doth is.  
 4. Alther thyng is. 5. Let  
 arere (omisso hym) in is.  
 6. The ferste cherche me  
 rerede there of al Cristen-

dom. And of Seynt Iohanes  
 de Laterane thus the name  
 com. Suth the lathure Em-  
 perour is. 7. On fair suer,  
 that brend the toun of Troie,  
 When the grete toures brende  
 & courtes day and nyght,  
 Hym thoughte hit was a  
 mury game to se such a syght.  
 The wood wreche is.

þe



þe gyðys wrecche lette sette þe ' toun of Rome on fyre,  
 To hadde game of þe lygt, þe while yt myghte dure.  
 þo wende forþ þe toun folk, as heo moste neðe,  
 And noðe no more suðre þe schrewe among hem weðe,  
 ' And flowe þe schrewe in tpe ðeþ ynow,  
 And þus hym sel wreche of God for þe þe apostle flowg.

**U**aspasian þe emperour astur Nero com,  
 þat beter man was þan he, & ' ne'' worrede nogt  
 Cristendom.

þe Gywes he worrede ' y now, & brogt hem ' first to nogt,  
 for as muche as þe luper men oure Lord to ðeþ brogt.  
 for he and Tytus ys sone of oure Lord vnderstode,  
 fourtti ger astur þat he deide on þe rode,  
 ' And wende to Jerusalem, and þat toun selde to grounde,  
 And flowe ' þe luper Gywes al þat heo founde,  
 ' Bute a schipful þer of a scapede, þat were to sele y wys,  
 War ofcom þe luper broð, þat a mong men get ys.  
 Ten ' ger Uaspasian emperour was þo,  
 And Tytus ys sone astur hym ' ten ger, and no mo.  
 Domician, Tytus broþer, emperour þo was,  
 fiftene ger astur hym. no more schrewe þer nas.

Occiso  
Judzo-  
rum.

1. Cite *Ar.* 2. He sleigh for  
 fere out of toun, and hym self  
 slough, And for he þetur &  
 þowel slough he hadde ven-  
 geance y nough *Ar.* 3. Deest  
*Ar.* 4. Stronge ynough *Ar.*  
 5. Al to *Ar.* 6. Donne the  
 toun of Jerusalem, and fulde

hit down to grounde, *Ar.*  
 7. There the *Ar.* 8. Som put  
 of hem a shapede, & that was  
 harm y wis, *Ar.* 9. Per after-  
 ward Uaspasian *Ar.* 10. Two  
*Ar.* recte. Adeo ut ten repo-  
 nerem.

for

for he <sup>1</sup> worrede Cristendom, as þe luper þere,  
And let <sup>2</sup> martri Seyn Denys, & mony oþer al so.

<sup>3</sup> **A** Nerua was þo emperour a ger, & somdel more.

Trajan <sup>4</sup> com astur hym, mon of gret love.

Trajanus.

Spentene ger & an half emperour he was,

<sup>5</sup> þe noblest þat mygte, bote þat he Cristene nas.

So ryghtful he was, þat <sup>6</sup> þan he hadde a dede hym self ydo,  
þat a geyn <sup>7</sup> ys lawes was, and ys sone al so,

<sup>8</sup> For such dede a man schulde, þat þis hadde y wrought,  
Lese ys on eye, & he hym self ne sparede hym self noght,  
Wute let pulte out ys owne eye, & ys sone's al so.

<sup>9</sup> Wel<sup>10</sup> fewe kynges <sup>10</sup>ms syþ, þat yt wolde do.

þer fore Seyn Gregori, þo he o londe was,

More þan syf hundred ger astur þis ryghtful cas,

þat such a man schulde in helle be, he carede in þys þort,  
þe soule <sup>11</sup> þory Gode's grace out of helle he brogte,

And to ys body <sup>12</sup> ys joyned, & gef hym Cristendom,

<sup>13</sup> War with, as he worþt was, to blisse of þenens <sup>14</sup> com.

1. Worrede *Ar.* 2. Martire

Seynt *Ar.* 3. Litteram hanc

majusculam & rectissime omittit

*Ar.* 4. Com tho after hym,

a man *Ar.* 5. Noble man for

soth he was, but he *Ar.* 6.

Þeigh pro þan in *Ar.* 7. The

lawe were, or þis sone *Ar.*

8. For which dede a man

holde, for that he hadde y

wrought, Lese eny of þys

lymes, hym self ne sparede

he nought, & let *Ar.* 9. Deest

*Ar.* 10. Þe nough sith *Ar.*

11. Thurgh *Ar.* 12. Hym *Ar.*

13. War thurgh, as *Ar.*

14. He com *Ar.*

Adrian

**A** Drilan com þo next, and twenti ȝer and on  
 Astur hym emperour he was, of Gîwex ne londe he  
 non.

þe <sup>1</sup> born of Jerusalem he let somdel a <sup>2</sup> ȝeyn" rere,  
 þat Gasparian feide adoun, þo he flow þe Gîwex here.  
 Ac he nolde <sup>3</sup> þe Gîwex leue ȝene for noþing, þat heo myȝte,  
 þat þe moſte of þe boru enes hadde a ſȝte.  
 He dade hem ſchame y now, & temprede hem fulwel,  
 And made <sup>4</sup> hem ſone milde y now, þo heo were rebel.

**A** Rtonin was þo emperour twenti ȝer and two,  
 And astur hym twei breþeren in þe emperie were y do,  
 Marcus & Marcius, nrentene ȝer heo were,  
 Criſtendam bi here day <sup>5</sup> me by gan faſte lere.  
 For <sup>6</sup> Eleuthere a god mon was þo pope of Rome,  
 þowm wam firſt <sup>7</sup> Criſtenemen in to Engolond come,  
 Ech wol ſone telle how, as ich vnderſtonde,  
 And telle astur þis emperoures of kynges of þis londe.

Reges. **A** ſtur kyng Arnrag, of wam we habbeþ y told,  
 Marius, ys ſone, was kyng, quoynte mon & bold.  
 And ys ſone was astur hym, <sup>8</sup> Coel was ys name,  
 Boþe it were quoynte men, & of noble fame,

1. Burgh <i>Ar.</i>	2. Deest <i>Ar.</i>	rebel <i>Ar.</i>	5. He gan faſte to
3. The Jewes loue for no		lere <i>Ar.</i>	6. Eleutherie the
thyng, that hit myȝhte, That		god man <i>Ar.</i>	7. Criſtendom
hit moſte of the burghe ones		<i>Ar.</i>	8. Kyng Coel was his
hane <i>Ar.</i>	4. Hem meek and	name, A noble man & quoynte,	
mylde ynowh, that erð were		and of god fame, <i>Ar.</i>	

And

And here truage dade to Rome, as hem agte to do.  
 For þer nas <sup>1</sup> nowet so noble prince, þat ne dade <sup>2</sup> so.  
 Lucye, Coile's sone, aftur hym kyng was.  
<sup>3</sup> For, as me may þe soþe segge, by fore hym no beter nas.  
 For he herde <sup>4</sup> of telle of miracles, þat come  
 þow Cristenemen al a bonte, as wel as at Rome.  
 He willede anon in hys herts to songe Crisendom.  
 þer fore þs messageres mid gode lettres he nom,  
 þat to þe pope <sup>5</sup> Cleuchere hastiliche heo wende,  
<sup>6</sup> þat he quik in to þs lond Crisendom hym sende,  
 þat <sup>7</sup> heo mygte serue God, for he wilneðe mucche þer to.  
 And he ne schulde not be glad, er þe dede were y do.  
<sup>8</sup> þo pope here of was glad, & twel holf men hym sende,  
 fagan and <sup>9</sup> Dimian, hys soule for to amende  
<sup>10</sup> þat rygt bi leue hym tagte, and gef hym Crisendom.  
 þo folk þo faste a bonte wyde þer to com.  
 þis was an hundred ger, and sixti ger and two,  
 Aftur þat God was ybore, þat þis dede was y do.  
<sup>11</sup> þus com lo into þis lond first Crisendom,  
 Bate yt were any holi man, þat priueliche arst yt nom.

Prima  
 Christia-  
 nitas An-  
 glia.

1. None A. 2. Also A.  
 3. To fore hym in Engelonde  
 Crisendom none nas A.  
 4. Ofte telle A. 5. Cleuthe-  
 rie A. 6. And that A. 7. He  
 A. 8. The A. 9. Damian  
 A. 10. The ryght bilene to  
 teche, & gaf hym Crisendom.  
 That folk faste a bonte wide  
 ther to com A. 11. Thus

com lo Crisendom in to Brui-  
 tayne londe, But ther were  
 erst some preueliche Crisens-  
 dom hadde songe. As at the  
 place of Glasfyngebury Joseph  
 of Arimathie Lyneðe ther in  
 Criste's lay, with hys com-  
 panie. Ther were tho in  
 Brutayne, false lawes to lere,  
 A.

þer were aȝif in Engelond, þot ſatte lantres to lere,  
 Cygtes and aȝif in the ſtades, biſchoptiches as it were,  
 And þe architemples, as it were : heȝt of echon,  
 London, and : Euerwich, and in Glomorgau on.

Episco- þis gode kyng & þis holi men leiſe ſelle heil aile þere,  
 patus. And eigte & twenti biſchoptiches in here ſtades leiſe tere.

Archiepi- And þe erchebiſchoptiches as þe þe architemples were,  
 ſcopatus. As yt were of aile cheſt Criſtendom to lere.

Aile þo biſchoptiches vnder Euerwich were þis  
 þat ben bi þis ſtad, as heo beſ ȝet al ſo.

London : hadde þo al þis lond, þat bi þis ſtad was,  
 from Douere to Stuerne, and al Eſſexwille tere.

þe þis biſchoptiche was at Carlon in Wiltſ

Up Oke in Glomorgau, ac þe ſet & wanne þis,

Ac euer of oðre wille þe ſtad ȝet : euerle,

Under hym Wiltſ þis hadde, & al bi þis ſtad.

Reditus  
 incredu-  
 litatis.

: þus com lo ſit to þis lond ſit Criſtendom,

Ac þoru a ſuþer emperour, þat þe aȝif com,

þat þe Diocletian, it was ſeppe & droȝt to grōnde,

And oþer ȝe droȝt aȝif to ſeþt aȝif it bi wille.

1. þe ȝe ȝet. 2. Euerwich, and ther to Carlon. The kyng and oþer holi men deſtroyde hem aile & tere, And eigte and twenty biſhopes in here ſtades wode there, And the Erchebiſhopes ther the Ercheſtemples were, 3. Hadde that oþer

del, that a this ſide Douere is, fram Douere in to Cornuwallis to the ſeas wille. Adeo ut Souþ pro ſuþer reponi debeat. 4. Deſt in. 5. þus com in to this lond the laue of Criſtendom, 6. þe ȝe ȝet.

Ende

Lucie his gode kyng, þat þus Cristens bi cam,  
 Deide aboute four yer after ys Cristendom.  
 At Gloucestre he deide, ac eif hadde he non,  
 þat a corede al his lond, and ys men echon.

**S**ouer was emperour þilke tyme at Rome,  
 So þat he tynghen sone to hym come,  
 þat he þe kyng of Bretenne with oute eyr was ded.  
 Sone he þow is court þer of non ys red,  
 And wende hider hastliche ⁊ with power ⁊ now.  
 And folk, þat stode ⁊ were hym, faste to grende he slop.  
 A duk þer was of þis lond, fulgence was ys name,  
 He stod agens hym and ys oif, ⁊ hadde hym gret schame;  
 And, forto he þe likerore, he wende ⁊ to Scotland,  
 And made hym here ⁊ gret oif of folk of þat lond.  
 And wende oif þe hym, and slop and herode faste.  
 Ac euer hadde þe emperour þe manere atte laste.  
 he emperour in þis lond weddede þe ⁊ ymf,  
 þat was fulgence's ⁊ soster, þo in al þis strif.  
 Bi hire þe hadde a god sone, ⁊ cleped Basian;  
 An oþer he hadde, ⁊ hote Gret, þat he at Rome bi man.  
 þe fulgence seif, þat he ac myte agens hym stonde,  
 To þe ⁊ lond of Scirie he wende out of þis londe,

Imperator  
 sponfat  
 fororem  
 Fulgencii.

1. Gloucestre he was ⁊ hy-  
 ried, ac heif hadde he non,  
 Anchel sorwe to the lond,  
 and to the men echon. Sener  
 was the Emperour. 2.  
 The. 3. With gret power  
 ⁊ nough. That folk. 4. In  
 to. 5. A gret oif of lande  
 folk of the londe, And wende  
 out upon hym. 6. Thems  
 perour here in this lond the  
 weddede a wife, 7. Su-  
 ster in this like strife. 8.  
 Rome man. 9. Contreie  
 of Sithie.

K 2

And

- 1 And a gret ost of Picars, whas cheuenteyn he was,  
 Of stronge men he gederede, to helpe hym in his cas.  
 So he y mad hym a fayr ost of his bachelerie,  
 He com a geyn in to his lond out of 2 Scicie.  
 He by lay first Euerwilk op he emperour faste.  
 Bellum. So pat he emperour hym gaf batail at he laste.  
 3 He muche del of his lond to fulgence take,  
 For 4 he more of kynde was, & he emperour for sake.  
 Bataille hei smyte strong ynow, & mony slawe to gronde,  
 So pat fulgence here hadde depeiswonde.  
 He he emperour 5 was y slawe, & y buried at Euerwilk.  
 6 He fulgence deide seþþe, so he hadde y ley sik.  
 Conten- so his men were boþe ded, me moſte hadde a kyng.  
 cio. Bi twene þo Romaynes & his lond her bi gan þo stryung.  
 7 Get, he emperoure's lone, þe Romaynes to kyng nome.  
 For he was 8 of fader and moder of þe kynde of Rome.  
 He þe Brutones of his lond nome Basian her to.  
 For ys moder was of his lond, & ys uncle al so.  
 9 So her were twei kynges þus, her nas not wel gret lone,  
 He mygte, þei heo breþren were, er þo on were a boue.

1. And of Picars gedered  
 an ost, and hure cheuenteyn  
 was, Staleworthe men and  
 hardy, to helpe hym in this  
 cas. Tho this ost y gadered  
 was of ponge bachelrie, Ar.  
 2. Scithie. He byleged Euer-  
 wylk vpon theemperour faste  
 Ar. 3. For pro ac in Ar. 4. He  
 of hure kynde was, Ar. 5.  
 Was er y slawe, Ar. 6. And

fulgence deyde afterward,  
 tho he hadde longe be sik.  
 Tho these men Ar. 7. Geth,  
 theemperoure's Ar. 8. Of the  
 fader blod, & of the kynde of  
 Rome Ar. 9. Theigh they  
 were bretheren deye, ther was  
 nought gret lone, He they  
 myghte reste hane, sorte on  
 was a boue Ar.

So þat eȝer <sup>1</sup> ȝp oȝer werrede <sup>2</sup> faſte,

Bellum.

And a bataill ſtrong y now ſuyten at þe laſte.

<sup>3</sup> And Baſſian and yȝ power ſlow <sup>4</sup> Get yȝ brother,

<sup>5</sup> And Baſſian bi leuede kyng, for þer naȝ þo non oȝer.

**A** Staleworȝe yong bachiler in þiȝ lond waȝ þo,  
<sup>6</sup> Carauȝ waȝ yclepud, þat couȝe of muȝhe wo.

For þo he hadde in werre y be, <sup>7</sup> & do gret maſſurie,

<sup>8</sup> And hym ſelf muȝhe yfounded, he þouȝte do tricherie.

He mente and bed leue þo of þe emperour of Rome,

<sup>9</sup> To wyte þe ſe a bonte þiȝ lond fram ſtronge men þat come,

And bi het hym, þat, geȝ þer of wel anaunȝed he were,

To geide more god to Rome, þan al Breteyne þider here.

þo þe counſeill of Rome y leuede yȝ ſaire bi beſt,

And þat he waȝ ſtrong mon, & of gret power with þe meſte,

þe emperour with god cartre, & mid yȝ owne <sup>10</sup> cel,

<sup>11</sup> Hym geȝ of þe ſe a bonte þe warde euer y del.

þiȝ faſte mon wende <sup>12</sup> þo mid yȝ cartre a bonte,

And of <sup>13</sup> willeſful men hym gedereȝe a gret route,

And bi het hem <sup>14</sup> god y now of purchaȝ, þat God hem ſende,

And purueide <sup>15</sup> hem gode ſchippes, & in to þe ſe wende,

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| <p>1. Upon <i>Ar.</i> 2. Swithe<br/>faſte, <i>Ar.</i> 3. So Baſſian <i>Ar.</i><br/>4. Geth <i>Ar.</i> 5. And ſo he waȝ<br/>al one kyng, for þer waȝ non<br/>other <i>Ar.</i> 6. Karant cluped<br/>he waȝ, &amp; couȝe on muȝhel<br/>wo <i>Ar.</i> 7. Þ do <i>Ar.</i> 8. And<br/>a ſayd muȝhe hym ſelf, he<br/>þouȝhte in trecherie <i>Ar.</i></p> | <p>9. To kepe the Bruttȝſhe ſee<br/>fro ſtrange men þat come <i>Ar.</i><br/>10. Sele, <i>Ar.</i> 11. Hym gaf the<br/>power of thiȝ lond to hym<br/>euery dele <i>Ar.</i> 12. Forth tho<br/>with hiȝ chartre <i>Ar.</i> 13. Cuel<br/>doynge men gaderede <i>Ar.</i><br/>14. Good <i>Ar.</i> 15. Hym <i>Ar.</i></p> |
|---|---|

And



And noon heh tunc muche god mid strenghe & queneite,  
 And septe mid abbey, bute þat wergte <sup>1</sup> in<sup>o</sup> oþer myghte.  
<sup>2</sup> Of þys gureche so large he was to men þat he fonde,  
 þat he hadde a gret ost in a lital fonde.  
 þe yles he robbede in þe see, & þe hancenes <sup>3</sup> septe<sup>o</sup> a bonte.  
<sup>4</sup> So þat men of gureche come to hem so gret route,  
 þat þer was <sup>5</sup> gyluce in nefe þat hem wergte at route.  
 þys gomer may ower so, þat eche lond hym gaf bonte.  
 So þat he spek mid þay men here of þis lond,  
 And bi þat hem saie & now, & bode hem to haderhoude,  
 þat god hap shewe to hem, and to here kyng hym agone,  
 þat he <sup>6</sup> wole si out hem bryng of þe danger of Rome,  
 And <sup>7</sup> delivere þis lond of Romaynes, & of stronge men echon,  
 þat so fre lond as þis ne schulde noyer non.  
 þe lond hym made þe here kyng, for he was so quowte man,  
 And he hi gan to weyre anon þe þe kyng Bassian,  
 And epper agayn oþer gaderede ys ost faste,  
 Bellum. So þat þei comen and fuyton a batail atte laste.  
<sup>8</sup> Ac <sup>9</sup> Caraus of felonge hym gaf haderhoude,  
 And þayte, þat <sup>10</sup> ~~þei~~ more of <sup>11</sup> stronge londe,

1. Omittit *Ar.* 2. So large  
 he was to his men of thynges  
 that hi fonde, *Ar.* 3. Deest  
 in *Ar.* 4. Sic igitur ipso agente  
 confluebant ad illum quicunque  
 in aliena ardebant. ita ut in  
 brevi tantum haberet exercitum,  
 quanto nullus vicinus princeps  
 resistere quivisset *Galsfr. Mon.*  
 5. Prince non that *Ar.* 6.  
 wolde hem bryng al out of

*Ar.* 7. Delivere out of this  
 lond the Romeynes echon :  
 So fre a lond as this in the  
 wordle thowde be non. That  
 folk hym made the here  
 kyng, *Ar.* 8. Quod cum im-  
 petraffet, dimicavit confestim  
 cum Bassiano & interfecit eum,  
 & gubernaculum regni suscepit.  
 Prodiderant enim Bassianum  
 Picti, quos dux Fulgentius, ma-  
 tris

þat <sup>1</sup> were with Basian þe kyng, þe fongles <sup>2</sup> þer were  
 þat <sup>3</sup> þee wode lichte to hym toke <sup>4</sup> þe poete.  
 And þen he spek is propheticke, & mow <sup>5</sup> bi gadered,  
 So þat þe kyng Basian þen by stode in þis wode.  
 for þe þee com to batell, þee wode a gye þen wode:  
 'þee nide wiche wiche <sup>7</sup> þee stode, he wode mow <sup>8</sup> þee stode.  
 'Ac Basian and al þe folk cote a now to gode,  
 And þe hym self, and stode oþer <sup>9</sup> stode wode to stode.  
 þe was þis stode <sup>10</sup> Caran þen of þis lode þee,  
 'Wode is bi com þen of þen to þen of stode þen.  
 þe tþing stode þe to stode, þat þe wode þen stode stode,  
 'þee stode a gye lode, stode was þe stode,  
 And stode hym in to þis lode, & men mow þen stode,  
 So þat in batell þis <sup>13</sup> Caran þee stode.  
 þe þis batell was <sup>2</sup> do, þee bi gonne wode  
 Wode by men of þis lode, for <sup>14</sup> þee with Caran wode.

tris suæ frater, in Britanniam  
 conduxerat. Nam dum ibi au-  
 xiliani debuissent, promissis &  
 donariis Carausii corrupti, in  
 ipso proelio diverterunt se à Bas-  
 sianis, & in commissores suos  
 irruerunt. Unde stupefacti cete-  
 ri, cum ignorarent quis socius  
 esset, quis hostis, oculus dilabun-  
 tur, & victoria cessit Carausio.  
 Qui ut triumphum habuit, dedit  
 Pictis locum mansionis in Alba-  
 nia, ubi cum Britonibus mixti  
 per subsequens ævum perman-  
 serunt *Galf. Mon. 9. Carant*

of his felonye gan hym *Ar.*  
 10. The *Ar.* 11.  
 Strange *Ar.*

1. *Ar.* 2. His *Ar.*  
 cle broughte, *Ar.* 3. *Ar.*  
 4. *Ar.* 5. *Ar.* 6. *Ar.* 7. *Ar.*  
 8. *Ar.* 9. *Ar.* 10. *Ar.*  
 11. *Ar.* 12. *Ar.* 13.  
 Carant *Ar.* 14. *Ar.*

þe Brytones þe of þis land; to schilde <sup>1</sup> hem fro schame,  
<sup>2</sup> Chese hem anow kyng, <sup>3</sup> Ascleped was þis name,  
 þat was erl of Cornewail. he <sup>4</sup> gedere þis oft anon  
 To werre, & to stonde a geyn þe <sup>5</sup> Romaynes þis son.  
 He <sup>6</sup> wende hym to Londone, as kyng Allen þe was,  
 To honoure <sup>7</sup> here false Godes, as it fel þe bi cas.  
<sup>8</sup> þe þis kyng þis under get, þat þis folk þus come,  
<sup>9</sup> He bi leude þis sacrilse, & þis folk with hym nom,  
 And wende out a geyn hem, & strong bataile heo smyte.  
 Belhum. So muche folk þer was y flawe, þat deol yt was to myte.  
<sup>10</sup> þis Britones were so egre, and wox euer so faste,  
 þat <sup>11</sup> þe Romaynes and here kyng gonne fle atte laste.  
<sup>12</sup> þe Britones swede astur, as heo agt do,  
 And flowe mony poufant, and Allen þe kyng al so.  
 A <sup>13</sup> lordþing of þe Romaynes, þat y hote was Galle,  
 Com & <sup>14</sup> yeld hym to oure kyng, & þis men ney wat alle.  
 þe kyng hym nom to prison, to London he was y brogt.  
 þe kyng hym wolde geue lsf, ac þis men nolde nogt,  
 He sufre, þat þer were <sup>15</sup> o lins eny of here son,  
 He ladde hym in to London, & þis men echon,  
 To a rennyng water, þat get þis þer y wene,  
 And smyten of alle hese hedes, to bryng hem out of tene.  
 þe water þer heo were y flawe me clepde Galle brok,  
 Astur Galle þilke prince, þat þer þis dep tok.

- |                            |                  |                            |
|----------------------------|------------------|----------------------------|
| 1. Hem self fram           | A. 2.            | A. 8. Tho Allen this under |
| Chese                      | A. 3. Asclepedot | pat A. 9. He by leste      |
| 4. Gaderede                | A. 5. Ro-        | 10. Chese A. 11. The       |
| meynes, that were his son  | A.               | 12. The A. 13. Lordþing    |
| 6. Wende thuder sone anon, | A.               | 14. yeld A. 15. Myte       |
| ther as Allen was,         | A. 7. His        | A.                         |

þ

þo was Bretyn þis lond of Romaynes almost lere,  
 1 Ac alþys were yt ten yer, at þoo þere axys were.  
 Alepted let hym þo crowns to þeng a non,  
 And kept a house ten yer þis lond 2 wel mid.  
 Ac þoru Romaynes, þat 3 here came, þat þeþens were echon,  
 And þoru 4 oþer, Cristendom was not nat al agon.

**T**Wet 5 emperours of Rome, Diocletian,  
 And an oþer, ys selew, þat het Maximian,  
 1 Were boþe at on tyme, þe an in þe Ekende,  
 2 And þe oþer in þe Wedn, Cristendom to schende.  
 for þe laper Maximian 3 westward hider sigte,  
 And Cristenemen, þat he found, to strong þeþ he brogte.  
 Chirches he sol al a down, þer no moþe non stonde.  
 And al þe baken, þat þe mygite fynde in oure lande,  
 He wolde letz hem berne echon amid þe hoþe stode,  
 And 9 þo Cristenemen 10 alle fle, and nous 11 oþer lete.  
 Seppe God was 12 y bore, þer nas for Cristendom  
 In so late stonde y do so gret martirdom.  
 for þer wete in a moneth leuentene þousant and no  
 y martired for oure Lorde's loue, (12 nas not here gret wor)

1. Unnethe was hit ten yer, that hit her a yen nere. Aleclepedet hym let the crownyng a non. 2. Pro wel mid legend. potius cum. 3. fram his son. Id quod carminis ratio postulat. 4. Wider. 5. Oþur mysheleneþe, Cristendom was al gon. 6. Vide Editionem nostram vitæ Elfredi Magni Spelmannianæ, p. 4.

Vol. I.

6. At Rome were, on Diocletian, &c. 7. And were bothe &c. 8. The oþur in the Wedn of the moodie, al Cristendom to shende. 9. The &c. 10. I fle &c. 11. I þene &c. 12. y bore, upon Cristendom. Such persecucion as tho man hadde ther be non &c. 12. Was there a gret wor &c.

L

With

With oute <sup>1</sup> grete halwe, þat heo hulde longe in torment,  
 As Seynt Cristyne & Seynt Fey, & al so Seynt Vincent;  
<sup>2</sup> As Sebastian, & mony other, as me may in Chirche rede,  
 And monyoun turnede a geyn to heþene for drede.  
 Among alle þese in þis lond, þat were monion  
 & martred as þilke tyme, Seynt Niben was on,  
<sup>3</sup> þat was þe firste martir, þat to Engeland come,  
 Dere hap, Lord! mony a mon y bogt Cristendom.  
 Under þis luter <sup>4</sup> emperoures þer was a noble mon,  
 Of <sup>5</sup> heore luter lawes, þat under hem muche won.  
 Constan- Constance was þis name, he conquereþe of Spayne  
 cius. þe tynage, and of fraunce, & seþþe here of Bretayne.

**L**He was a noble mon, & <sup>6</sup> gret power hadde on honde,  
 Erl he was of Colchestre here in þis londe,  
 And Colchestre astur þis name y clepuþ þis ich un-  
 derhoude.  
 Dars lord, among oþer þinges, hym sende a fair soude,  
 þat <sup>7</sup> he hadde an holy dogter al Colchestre in þis londe,  
 þat Seynt Helens was y clepuþ, þat <sup>8</sup> þe holy croys soude.

---

1. Othure grete halwen, *Ar.* that com. Muche was the  
 2. Fabian and Sebastian, and shame me duðe tho to Cris-  
 oþur, as men rede, that helde stendom. Under *Ar.* 4. Em-  
 sake in the fey, and hadde perour *Ar.* 5. Hure luther  
 non drede. And, among men lawe, and vnder hym muche  
 of these londe, ther were ma- wan *Ar.* 6. Muche *Ar.* 7. He  
 nyon I martred at thulke gat a fair doughter at Col-  
 tyme, *Ar.* 3. He was the chestre *Ar.* 8. The *Ar.*  
 furste martir of Brutayne

Bi twene our kyng <sup>1</sup> Alcelyp & his erl withoute faille

<sup>2</sup> þat wox gret merre, so þat hec smypte bataille.

Bellum.

And his erl Cole flow þe kyng, & þo he hadde <sup>3</sup> þo ouer hond,

Kyng he let hym crowne þo of <sup>4</sup> al his lond.

þat folk was þo of his lond & payed wel ynow,

þat he hadde y monne þe kyndom, & þat he þe oþer flow.

þe tyng to Rome com, <sup>5</sup> þat he y flawe was,

þat hem hadde y do schame, hec were glad of þat cas.

þe noble prince <sup>6</sup> heo sende hyder þo gode kuryt Constance,

þat wan hem al þe power of Spayne & eke of France,

<sup>7</sup> þat he scholde eke his lond wyne a geyn to Rome.

So þat his noble prince, and ys men hyder com.

<sup>8</sup> þe kyng Cole yt vnder get, he drabbe in ys mod,

for he was so noble <sup>9</sup> kuryt, þat no man hym with stod.

To hym he sende of acord, gif it were is wille,

þat he wolde to Rome abowe, & lete alle kist be stille,

And þider bere ys truage, as oþer dude bi fore,

<sup>10</sup> for wat he huld þe kindam, wen þe truage were ybore.

Constance it grantede, and nom ys truage,

<sup>11</sup> And nom also to be liker of hym god oþage,

And grantede hym þe kyndom and þe pes of Rome,

And bi leuede in his lond <sup>12</sup> to godere y some.

Concor-  
dia.

1. Alcelyp & erl. 2. Can-  
ther were a contek, so that hit  
smypte ane bataille. 3. The  
heggher. 4. Al the Bru-  
taine lond. 5. The kyng  
a flawe was. 6. Hil. 7.  
And that. 8. Tho Coel.  
9. Prince. 10. And  
to kepe the kyndom, that hit

more forlore. Constance  
grantede this, & 11. And  
to be the likerour, of hym toke  
god oþage. 12. To ge-  
dere botho y come. Sone by  
fel afterward, That Coel  
kyng sik lay, And deside sone  
afterward with yune a wost  
day.

L 2

A money

I money it was for after, þat Cote syk lay,  
 And deide, as God wolde, with tane þe eigteþe day,  
 And oþer eis hadde he non, bute Seynt Helene þe gode,  
 His doghter, þat scheppe him þe swete hely rode.

Sponsacio Constance, for hire crichte, þis made to wryte now,  
 Helene. And nam with hire so þis land, and þis kyngdom,  
 And let hym to croune þing, & god þing was and syn.  
 By hire he hadde a god sone, & clepe Constantyn.  
 þe Constance hadde & he eliene for þing & wryte,  
 He deide at Caesary, and & buried was þer and ys.

**C**onstantyn, is yonge sone, ycremmed was þe þing.  
 Þeide men he becom, & wetty þer aile þing.  
 Þing he was þetti & for. he hadde þis kyngdom.  
 Byt nobliche and swete wel with quoytise and wysdom.

**A**lthor emperor bi fore, þat het Maximian,  
 þat was to Cristenmen (as we seide) so laier a man,  
 A sone he hadde to þerwey now, Maxencius to name,  
 hym me made emperor, mony men to schame.  
 He was, as wel as ysader, gret schrewe & now.  
 For in strong marriedom Seynt Kateryn he flow,

1. Que al this land, a.  
 a. Croune to þing, that god  
 kuryt was & syn, a. 3. C.  
 brachet, and ther & buried  
 ys. Constance a. 4. Wys  
 thurgh a. 5. Per of this  
 kyngdom, And governede hit  
 swythe wel with quoytise &

wysdom. The luthar a.  
 6. Upon Cristendom a swithe  
 luthar man, a. 7. Sherewed  
 ch, Maxent was his name,  
 hym he made a. 8. For  
 Kateryne, and other me, in  
 stronge deith he slough. Much  
 folk he hade shame, and the  
 folk

And many oþer murdris, and þat folk of Rome al to  
þe fondede to deseris, and many schames be.

So þat þe deservitis in to þis lond come

To Constantin, þe gode kyng, the be sent from Rome.

And he hem satre vader song, to þat we schuld mo

þer come for enleigance to habbe of heere wo.

So þat i þese deservitis bi gonne al on hym grede.

"Sire," hec seiden, "for God's love dryng us of þis  
weerchede.

"Of þe kynde dede of emperis þer wys bi leued men,

" þe þat bi kynde were emperour, non bute þou on.

"How longe wolt þou laste þe schrewe's out rage?

"Go and wys þi kynde lond and þis eritage.

"þou schalt habbe þer help y now of þi kynde lond.

"Wel þou wolt, þat i intewhile þe schrewe þe at stonde.

Constantyn hym understod of þis kynde lond,

"And god it were to habbe þis and þat on honde.

Muche power of þis lond into hym forþ he nom,

And seþþe alke of France, as he þer toþ rom.

And wende toward Rome to wyne þe emperis,

To brynge þe schrewe adoun, þat vnde þat rodderþe.

As he wende, he bi huld toward henece an hey,

And þe up in þe firmament an angel he sey,

Visio  
crucis.

folk of Rome also þe fondede  
to deserite, and brynge hem  
to wo. The deservitis of  
Rome to this lond come To  
Constantyn, and bysoughte  
hym of hem to take gome.  
And he hem .r.

1. The deservitis gonne on  
hym to grede .r. 2. That  
sholde be kynde emperour,  
non but though al on .r.  
3. Lxtel while they shulleth  
the withstonde .r. 4. And  
that hit were god to hane .r.  
þat



þat hold a croys, and þer on y write was lo! þis,  
 "Constantyne þerx þis signe þou schalt be maister twis.  
 Constantyne þis understod, heþene þat he were.  
 A croys, in stude of ys baner, y men bi fore hym bere.  
 Maxencius þo he wiste hym come, he hadde of hym gret  
 doute.

He let at Rome a strong ditch make al a bonte  
 And dep agen Constantyne, and a geyn al ys route,  
 For to holde hem þer þoru wan heo come with oute.  
 As he was a bonte þis ditch, he ne gan not muche wpane.  
 For he fel al amidde, and dregnt hym þer inne.  
 þoru þe vertu of þe croys he was sone overcome,  
 And Constantyn hadde al so sone þe toun ynome.  
 Constantyn ne com nowre in bataill non,  
 þat he nadde þerx þe croys þe maistri of son.

Baptiza-  
cio Con-  
stantini.

So þat he hym understod of þe beste won,  
 And of Seynt Siluestre þe pope hym let baptize anon.  
 And he was (as yt is ywrite) pur mesel þo,  
 And he bi com in hys baptizing hal of ys wo.  
 Seynt Siluestre was pope þo, and þe first þat þer com  
 Of alle popes þat deide with oute martirdom.  
 For þer nas non by fore hym þat he martired nas  
 Of þe luper emperoures, for eche heþene was.

Levasio  
ecclesia-  
rum.

A chérche of Seynt Jon þe baptist Constantyn let rere,  
 And clepude yt Constantiniene, for he was ybaptized þere.

1. Constantyn & sic in- ward com in bataille non, &  
 fra. 2. Tofore hym he let rere 4. What best was to don,  
 & 3. Constantyn ther after & 5. Constantiniane, &

Of Seynt Petur & of Poule an oþer þe reredē al so,  
And in strong ⁊ mastiþyng he haþ þer inne boþe heore bones  
⁊ do.

Of seynt Laurence he rerde anoþer, of seynt Innocēts eke on.  
And of oþer Seyntes þat get stondeþ he reredē eke monioun.  
þo sende he Seynt Cleme ⁊s moder, ⁊ þat wʒs was ⁊ had,  
To Ierusalem to seche þe croys, þat þere was ⁊ had.  
So þat it was þer ⁊ founde ⁊ þe by gyng of þe May,  
As ge habbeþ ofte yherd, þe holy rode day.  
Cōstantyn lette also in Ierusalem chirches rere,  
And ⁊ wʒde aboute elles wer, Cristendom to lere.  
So þat þoru Gode's grace so noble men he was,  
þat þer nas prince in al þe world, þat under ⁊s power nas.  
þre unclen ⁊s moder hadde, þat on hatte Donyn,  
And Trahen þo oþer hette, and þe þridde Maryn.  
Alle þre Cōstantyn nom with hym to Rome,  
And grete lordes þoru hym alle þre þer bi come.

**A**eri þer was in þis lond, Dāniel was ⁊s name:  
Rōmaynes, þat ⁊ here bileneþe, he dade ofte schame,  
And slow hem false her ⁊ þer, ⁊ þat me schulds neme ⁊ se.  
þe Brutones hym crouneþe þo heore kyng for to be.  
⁊ þis word com to Cōstantyn, he þouhte was to done:  
Trahen, ⁊s moder uncle, hyder he sende sons

1. To pro of in.	2. Past:	boute	6. Were bylened,
lyng he let hure bones do			
3. That wʒs woman was	had,	4. In the gyngyng	cam to Cōstantyn, he nuste
of May,	5. Wende a	what best to done:	

With

With gret games ynow, to wyne his kyndom.  
 At anhemme bi Sonje þer : folk a londe com.  
 þe kyng was of hem ywar, ageyn : hem he sette.  
 Bi ðis Winchester in a feld to ghere heo þam mette.

Bellum.

Þatall heo luyton þer, & to gronde ðam lufte,  
 So þat Otani oure kyng abone was : the laste,  
 And Traþen, & muche of þys folk, & mended ney to Dese,  
 & flowe in se to heore schepes, & of scapede dunsche.  
 To Scotland heo mende bi water, & þer þat goune arise,  
 And gederode þer : al nem all ageyn þe kyng bi lise,  
 And robbede fiske and herde al þe contree a bente.  
 Oure kyng mende þatmended fiske mid þis route.

Bellum.

In Winchester þat mette hem, and goune sigte ðisse,  
 Ac oure kyng Otani of scapede dunsche : & lise.  
 He of scapede : water floumei, to wyne hym help fiske.  
 þo was Traþen : al a lord, þe wyle yt mowe lise.  
 Ac as he out of London wente in a tyde,  
 A gret erl hym kepte þer in a mode syde,  
 With an hundred kaytes & armet wyl ynow.  
 þis gaderce æt þis ywar toward þam Dese.  
 Hea comen ageyn : þam in war, & flowe : þam al for nigt.  
 þis tyhing was ouer se to þe kyng sone & brogt.  
 He com byðen ðam a gynn toful & now,  
 And : þe Romaynes, þat he ferd, to gronde fiske he flou.

1. folk to londe	2. þam	the kyng as byne,	6. A
lone he lute	3. ðis	lyne	7. L. into cum
4. þat though fiske to lute		8. A lord,	9. þam
shipe, and a scapede dunsche		10. þam for nought	
11. A name oft a yow		11. The	

þe

þe gederede he so gret <sup>1</sup> trefour, and al so so gret route,  
 And so gret power, þat he nadde of no prince in þe world doute,  
 for þer nas prince non þat hym dorste arere strif.  
 So þat he huld þo þis lond in pes al is lȝf.  
 He <sup>2</sup> ascobe at þs conseileres, þo he to elde com,  
 How he myȝte best do mid <sup>3</sup> þis kyndom,  
 for he nadde botz a dogter ho myȝte þs eir be <sup>4</sup>  
 Some of þs conselers hym gonne þus bi se,  
 þat he schulde nyme þs neuem, þat <sup>5</sup> hatte Conan,  
 And crowne hym kyng of þis lond, for þat he was <sup>6</sup> man,  
 And lete þs dogter <sup>7</sup> sponfi mid richesse y now  
 To an oþer prince elles ware, as þs <sup>8</sup> herto to drow.  
<sup>9</sup> Oþer radde, þat he schulde al myd þe kyndome  
 Late þs dogter sponfi to an heȝ prince of Rome,  
 And þenne, for <sup>10</sup> þe aliance þat were hem <sup>11</sup> by twene,  
 heo myȝte þis lond al in pes holde with oute tene.  
 So þat þer was among hem gret strif for þis dede.  
 Cradok erl of Cornewalle <sup>12</sup> by a bys seide,  
 þat a senatour of Rome, y hote Maximian,  
 Was of þe kynde of þis lond, a swyþe noble man.  
 for he was Leoline's sone, þat <sup>13</sup> Eleme uncle was  
 þe gode Costantyne's moder, <sup>14</sup> for non better nas.

- |                        |             |                 |                             |
|------------------------|-------------|-----------------|-----------------------------|
| 1. Oð,                 | and so gret | Ar.             | he shalde with the kyngdome |
| 2. Frede               | Ar.         | 3. His          | Ar.                         |
| 4. Was hote            | Ar.         | 5. A Man,       | Ar.                         |
| 6. We y wedded with    | Ar.         | 7. Herte drough | Ar.                         |
| 8. A noþur radde, that | Ar.         | 9. Deft         | Ar.                         |
|                        |             | 10. So          | Ar.                         |
|                        |             | 11. His a       | Ar.                         |
|                        |             | 12. He          | Ar.                         |
|                        |             | 13. That non    | Ar.                         |

And man he was a prince of Rome, yet he more che her to  
 kyng 'che' her of his lond, smite wel yt were y do.  
 Siker me myghte þenne be, to habbe hete gain god;  
 for he was y here at Rome, & of his londe's blod.  
 And for he was of his kyng's kynde, þat of his lond was,  
 þe beter pays þer scholde be for þe rightful cas.  
 Conan, þe kyng's newew, þo he herde þis,  
 Was wroþ, and destourbede al þe court y wys.  
 And napeles Cradok hym held a euene and stille,  
 And þe kyng stilleliche broȝte al to þys wille.  
 To Rome he sende Morice, þat ys owne sone was,  
 Pryueliche to Marimian, to telle hym of þis cas.  
 þer was þo kryt at Rome bi tweng þis Marimian,  
 And þe emperour, þat was þo, þat hatte Gracian.  
 þo Morice þider com, and saire was vnderfonge,  
 And herde þis contek, þat laste longe,  
 To þis senatour he seide, "Sire Marimian,  
 "Whi art þou so sore a vrad of þis Gracian,  
 "Wen þou mygt of hym god wet alto þin wille y se?  
 "for com with me to Bretayne, & þou schalt þere kyng be,  
 "for þe kyng now in elde nah non er y wys  
 "kynde, bote ys doȝter one, þat hym sol lef ys,

1. Deest *Ar.* 2. Wroþ wroþ,  
 3. *Us quid Gratianum re-  
 mes, Maximianus, cum tibi pa-  
 teat via, qua ei imperium eti-  
 pare poteris? Galfrius Adv.*  
 4. Thugh myght of hym hane

al thi wille, & thugh konne  
 the by se. Com with me *Ar.*  
 5. Mough is old, & he hath  
 nah here y wys, That a  
 daughter that is yong, that  
 hym lef is, *Ar.*

"And he þat godd wille to þe, as me þer hym to vnderstonde,  
 "þat þu hitte willedest. þat þou att to þe kynde of the londre.  
 "And such myght, wille it to þe, þat myght þer þoru a lōnge,  
 "þat þou myght þerastille : wille wille he come oge lōnge.  
 "For þe gode cōlyt Cōstantyn Rome wān al to,  
 "And wille opet to out kynges in þis maner come þer to.  
 þe þis Maxymian vnderstod ai þis,  
 He vnde hym lōte hyderward mid gret þowet þe wille.  
 He astode at South hankston, as : þe wille hym had þe lōd.  
 þe our kyng herde þer to, he was lōndel a vrad,  
 Leste he hadde for wille y cōnte. At þe he wille had he wille,  
 He vnder stīg hym cōlyt þe hōd, & cōntestede of : þe cas.  
 Some sepe, : þat hym wille wille take þe newe Cōnt  
 þe kyngdom of þis lond, and cōnt : Maxymian,  
 And some, as þe wille of þis lond þat he þe dōgter toke,  
 And þe kyngdom was þis, for þe þe wille best lōte.  
 Ac þe best cōntest dōgter, þat he attē vnder wille,  
 Hadde hym to Maxymian, : for þe wille of þe þe wille,  
 Of þe gode kynges Cōnt, & of þe noble Cōstantyn,  
 (þat was kyng here of þis lond, & emperour attē þis.)

1. As he is vnderstonde, To wedde to the, by cause though ert of kynde of this lande. And such power whan hit is so though myght ther thurgh adonge, <i>r.</i> 2. He lord of Rome er lōnge <i>r.</i> 3. The <i>r.</i> 4. And thd he wille hough hit was, <i>r.</i>	5. This cas <i>r.</i> 6. Betere hit were to take <i>r.</i> 7. To Maxymian, And some othir lordes of this lande that hym doughter toke, And the kyng- dom with hys, that hit couthe best lōte <i>r.</i> 8. That was of þergh blod, And of the good <i>r.</i>
--	---

1 And of þe kynges blod Cole kyng of þis lond he com,  
 þat god yt were to al þe lond to take hym þe kindom.  
 þe kyng and ys meste men halde al þis wisdom.  
 So þat þe kynges dogter mid þis lond he nom.  
 Ac Conan, þe kynges newew, ne likede not þis game.  
 2 He garked power a geyn hym to hym alle schame.  
 Ac ys power 3 late was. for þe kyng was euer above,  
 So þat atte laste þei were y brogt 4 in loun  
 Bi Graciene's dai þe emperour. þis was, as ich mene,  
 5 I bonte þe ger of grace CCC. & LX. & seuentene.  
 Withinne yf-ger aftur þis kyng so prout bi com,  
 for þe grete tresour nameliche þat he alday nom,  
 þat he 6 nas not ene y paid to habbe þis kyndom,  
 Buts he hadde france al so with strengþe wyþ oute dom.  
 He nom with hym of 7 hys lond gret power y now,  
 And to þe lond, þat was yclepud 8 Armorie, he drow,  
 þat Breteyn ys now yclepud, as he it 9 nemyde þe.  
 Fyftene þousant 10 hors y worpe þer were ageyn hym, & mo,  
 Bellum. Of þe lond of france, and of oþer londes bi syde.  
 þer heo smyte a batail, þat comþ was fulwyde.  
 þer was þe 11 duk of france y slaw, and al is folk ney.  
 þo þe kyng Martynian þis grete slagt y sei,

1. And of kynges blod Coel of this londe com, <i>Ar.</i> 2. He ordeyned with his pow- er to do hem alle shame <i>Ar.</i> 3. Litel <i>Ar.</i> 4. To loun <i>Ar.</i> 5. In the yer of oure Lord Crist thre hundred & seuen-	tene, (fine & LX.) <i>Ar.</i> minus recte. 6. Was nought onlich a paid to haue the kyngdom, <i>Ar.</i> 7. This <i>Ar.</i> 8. Armorie, <i>Ar.</i> 9. Clapede <i>Ar.</i> 10. Hors y heled there were <i>Ar.</i> 11. Kyng <i>Ar.</i>
---	---

He

He was glad, for he wiste wel to wyne þo al ys wille.  
 Conan, ⁊ þe quene cosyn, he clepude out þo stille.  
 He bi gan som del to ⁊ liþe. "We habbeþ now," he seyde,  
 "Þe wonne an ende of France, of þe oþer nys no drede.  
 "þei ich be kyng of Breteyne, þat was þin ⁊ uuncle lond,  
 "He be þou not forþer fore, for ich wel hadde more an hond.  
 "Þch wol make þe of þis lond kyng, þou schalt ysle,  
 "⁊ And þis lond schal be þyn, and þe oþer Breteyn be.  
 "For honour of Breteyne, to wam þou haddeþ kynde,  
 "þe oþer Breteyne yt schal hote, as to hadde of þe mynde.  
 "Delivere we schul yt of þis folk, þat ⁊ hire inne ys,  
 "And of folk fulle it fol of ⁊ oure kynde y wis.  
 Conan bowede a down to hym, ⁊ þonkede hym ⁊ faste,  
 And bi het to serue hym trewliche, þe while ys lyl laste.  
 Heo wende a boute in al þe lond, ⁊ hepe townes nome,  
 And al þe men, þat heo fonde, heo slow euer as heo come,  
 And let þe wimmen go alyne; ⁊ þo heo hadde al ⁊ an honde,  
 ⁊ And hadde y flawe al clene a boute þat folk of þe londe,

1. The quene's cosyn, he  
 let tho clepe hym stille, And  
 thus he began to speke to  
 hym. We haueþ nough, he  
 seþe, Wonne that on ende  
 Ar. 2. Id est, to laugh. Sic  
 enim *Galf. Mon.* "Vocavit er-  
 "go Conanum ad se extra tur-  
 "mas, & paulisper subridens  
 "ait: Ecce nnum ex potioribus  
 "regnis Gallie subjugauimus,  
 "ecce spem ad cetera habere  
 "possumus. &c. 3. Uncle's Ar.

4. And this, in mynde of that  
 othur, the lasse Brutayne shal  
 be. In honour of the more  
 Brutayne, to what thugh  
 haddeþ kende, The lasse  
 Brutayne this shal be, to haue  
 the more in mynde Ar.  
 5. Ther Ar. 6. Thynne kynde  
 Ar. 7. ful faste, Ar. 8. On  
 Ar. 9. And hadde delpynered  
 al a boute clene that folk of  
 londe, Ar.

In



In othe londe he sette þere strong warrentide and god  
 Of toke of his lond : here, and of here owne diob.  
 þe kyng all handied possant : men in þis lond sette,  
 And þere possant knyghtes : here watweyhes he sette.  
 And sette among hem al þe lond, & get ethe disteile þing,  
 And made Conan of hem alle, & of al þe lond kyng.  
 And þus was Breteyne & womne þoru oure & pryncce here,  
 And after þis lond Breteyne icleped in þis maner.  
 Apulian wende : for þoru ys grete manerie,  
 And man with strengþe all France, and seþpe Normondie.  
 For he get ech mon, þat to hym com, his purchas in eche  
 londe.

So made he power til hym to, þat noþing myȝt hym at stonde.  
 And Gratian þe emperour at Rome : seþpe he stowg,  
 þat for hys harty dedes of hym the dradde purwog.  
 As þoru þe emperour, þat seþpe com, & hote Theodose,  
 Apulian was seþpe & Ram, Margret ys note.  
 And to þe sekene robbarres hadde here wille at stonde,  
 And cheut in here robbery, atte laste it goþ to gronde.

1. Here of here. 2. Men  
 of this londe let sette, 3. Præterea xxx. milia militum,  
 qui ipsos infra patriam, quæ man-  
 suri erant, ab hostili irruptione  
 tuerentur. *Galf. Mon.* 4. Here  
 5. Thus was lile Bru-  
 taigne. 6. Princes. 7. The forth. 8. He gaf  
 ech man that to hym com of  
 purchas of his londe. So  
 muche people drough to hym,

myȝhte hym no man with-  
 stonde. 9. Suth he dade  
 to deche, And his broþers  
 Valentinian a scrapede a lye  
 vnnethe. He thurgh an em-  
 perour. 10. Margre ad  
 his note. But erst these wē-  
 rowe robbarres hadde here  
 wille a stonde, And suth for  
 here raborie hit were &  
 brought to gronde. þe Bru-  
 tones.

þe

þe Britones, þat Maximian of his lond breȝt þe  
 1 In þe laste Breteyne bi leueþ yet, and schol enen me.  
 And so þilke Brutayne of his lond toȝn  
 More þaru strengþe, as ge pleþ, þan þaru ȝete þam.  
 Of 2 þe laste Breteyn Conan þat was þus kyng.  
 Among hem nolde of 3 þilke lond habbe no mynyng.  
 He children of þilke kynde, þer fore he lette sonde  
 4 To þye men of his lond aboute in erbe ende,  
 5 þat of þye menne doȝtren maydenes me nome.  
 6 Ellene þoufant at þe leste, & to hym þat heo come.  
 And of 7 simpler maydenes an first þoufant gode,  
 þat heo miȝte 8 make here kynde al clene of þours biȝde.  
 9 þis maidenen wer ȝ gedereð, and 10 to London ȝ come.  
 Þony were glade þer of, and 11 ful fori some.  
 þat heo schuld of lond wende, & neuer eft here frendes be.  
 And summe to leste here maidenhed, wyȝes for to be.

1. Byleneð in Brutayne,  
 that Conan com thus ther to,  
 That Armoriþe erst cluped  
 was, & to newe name thus  
 com By conqueste, as who  
 seith, more than thurgh. 2.  
 Cumque sibi cessisset victoria,  
 voluit commilitonibus suis con-  
 juges dare, ut ex eis nascerentur  
 heredes, qui terram illam per-  
 petuo possiderent; & ut nullam  
 commixtionem cum Gallis face-  
 rent, decrevit ut ex Britan-  
 nia insula mulieres venissent, quæ  
 ipsis maritarentur &c. *Galf. Mon.*

3. That lond. 4. To the  
 beigh. 5. That hoȝde  
 menne doughtren maydenes  
 me nome Ellenen thousand  
 atte leste, 6. XI. ml. may-  
 denen for 12. ml. maidenen  
 there. 7. Some  
 ple menne doughtren first. 8.  
 8. Make that lond al clene. 9.  
 9. That. 10. To London  
 hit come. 11. Wel fori  
 some, Some for hit wolde of  
 lond, wende þus frendes  
 neuer to be.

þe þei were in þe schippes ⁊ do, & in 1 þe fer were,  
 2 So gret tempest þer com, 3 þat drof hem hers & here,  
 So þat þe meste del a dreynt were in þe se,  
 And to oþer loundes some ⁊ drine, and ne come ner age.  
 A kyng þer was of Hongri, Guayn was þis name,  
 And Welga, kyng of Picardye, þat couþe ynow of schame,  
 þe wateres for to loke a bonte þe se heo were,  
 A compagne of þis maydenes so þat heo mette þere.  
 To here folp þe wolde hem nime and þor men al so,  
 Ac þe maydenes wolde raper dye, þan a cente þer to.  
 þe mende forþ þe luper men, & the maydenes flow echon,  
 So þat to þe lasse Breteyne þer ne com alius non.

**D**if þe wo, þat þer hæþ in Engeland ⁊ be,  
 þoru emperoures of Rome, here ge mowe ⁊ se.  
 In oþer manere þat Scottes & 4 Picars, as ich seide,  
 Habbep ⁊ worred þis lond, ich wol telle þe dede.  
 Guain þe kyng of Hongri, and þe kyng of Picardie,  
 þe heo hadde, as ych hane ⁊ seit, mid so gret bilente  
 5 þe flawe of þis maydenes þat swete compante,  
 Bi þouhte to do þis lond more tricherie.  
 Hæu underkæde, þat þis lond ymad was al cleue  
 6 Of god folk þoru Maximian and Conan 7 as at one,  
 And þat heo mygte þis lond al for nogt wyune,  
 Hæu gedereþe folk faste, þe werre to bi gpyne.

---

1. Lege potius, cum *Ar.* þe | nes, *Ar.* 5. Of people thurgh  
 see fer were. 2. A gret *Ar.* | *Ar.* 6. Deest *Ar.*  
 3. And blew hem *Ar.* 4. Þi=

To þe se heo sende mid heore folk, þat heo hadde on hende,  
 And come, as hem leuest was, first in to Scotlande.  
 Toward þis lond heo bi goune forto robby faste,  
 þat folk to fle, and townes and castles about cast.  
 þe simple men, þat heore were, here red þer of nome,  
 And sende astur more help to þe emperour of Rome.  
 I durk, þat þet Gracian, from Rome me sende,  
 þat mid gret power to þis lond hyder wende.  
 þe lond folk, þe he hyder com, turnede to hym faste,  
 So þat þer was slawgt gret, þe wyls it wolde laste.  
 And þis kyng of Ricardys, and al so þys selame,  
 Alder of come atte laste, þat heo naste wyder to drame.  
 Williche þei were & mid strengþe ydryue into Priolde.  
 þe hadde Gracian þis lond al claneliche on hende,  
 þe let hym þe crowne kyng, and þe he alord was,  
 No more schewe, þan he bi com, ych mens non nas.  
 þat lond folk eode forþ, and to gedere drome,  
 And, ar þe dade to muche wo, þe soule schewe flome.  
 þat þe kyng was y flawe, it was lone conþ  
 In eche half from lond to lond, boþe Norþ & Souþ,  
 So þat it to þe kynges come, þat wende in to Priolde.  
 þe þe porside þat heo hadde folk y now on hende  
 Of Norwe, and of Denemark, and al so of Scotlande,  
 And bernde and to groude flome faste in þis londe.

1. Wright Gracian, Marie  
 man hider sende. With two  
 legiones of men hiderward  
 he wende. The landfolk &.  
 2. And let hym self crowny  
 kyng, & tho he al lord was, &.

Vol. I.

N

Se

3. The landfolk so hit sey  
 this, to gedre faste þem  
 drough, &. 4. þis þarneþede  
 hem, that hit hadde lone power  
 er an hende &.

So þat þe folk of þis land al clene was overcome.  
 For þe kyng had aȝt of þis land þe knyghtes so clene y nome.  
 Et ſone þes ſonde ȝet to Rome, wepyng ful ſore,  
 þat þes ſchulde in here we ȝet hem helpe more,  
 And þe hem wolde oblige, and ſherneſſe kinde gode,  
 To bere hem clene here truage, wyle þe world ſode.  
 Et ſone ȝet þe Romaynes power hyder ſonde,  
 Knyghtes and oþer merrowes, þat to þis land wende,  
 And in þe ſouþ half arinede of þis land her.  
 Þes gadered folk yname, þat þes hadde gret power,  
 And wende ſode þe here ſon, þat ne myȝt hem next at ſoude.  
 For ſome were y ſlawe ſone, and ſome ſlame out of londe.  
 þe þis londe of Rome al here wile hadde,  
 Þes nomen here counſil, & þe folk of þis land radde,  
 þat þes bi twene þis lond & Scotland ſchulde a wal ere,  
 Strong and hery on oþe ſyde, þer no water nere,  
 From þat on ſe to þat oþer, þat were here bi trewe,  
 To lette hem men þes come, & to ſane hem fro tene.  
 For Scotland þat ever y be a luter recet y lome,  
 Wan þer any merrowes toward þis lond come.  
 þe Romaynes ſaide eke, þat þes wolde in noumure ſe woude  
 Out of here land hyderward, ne here power ſe ſonde;  
 þe trewe þes ſe in þe ſe, ne here lȝt an aunte de,  
 Betwite here land at home, and here god al ſe :

<p>1. For Maximian hadde          out byȝore al clene the          knyghtes y nome. <i>Ar.</i> 2. Hit          hem oblige wolde, and <i>Ar.</i>          3. Theſe lordlynges <i>Ar.</i> 4.          For Scotland haneth for þe</p>	<p>y be luter recet y lome, And          enere enemyſ to this lond, &amp;          wolde neuere be ſome. <i>Ar.</i>          5. In a venture de, þe wylle          here owene lond at home, and          here. god alſo. For hit no          were</p>
--	---

He ge schulde of oure gonge folke teche for to fyghte,  
 for heo ne more in þis lond wolde come, ne myghte.  
 þat folk þo of þis lond, þe heo nyste non oþer reð,  
 Bi gonne to reere þe stronge mal, as hem was y leyð.  
 I reorde he was stronge know, as þe stude is yet sene.  
 Myche me moke swyne er, and ther aboute spene.  
 þo þe mal men gære y mad, a conseil heo nome,  
 þat al þe : conseil of þis lond schulde to London come.  
 þo heo were alle y come williche for to rede,  
 þe biþshop of London in þis maner hem seyde :  
 " Mi leue frende, to telle gon, as þis hepe men me bede,  
 " Beter wille ich hadde to wepe, þan to do oþer dede.  
 " For pite yt ys of þis lond, & of oure wretchede hede,  
 " That þat Maximian our : sei gan ewel lede,  
 " Al our knyghtes, and swaynes, and al oure gong hede,  
 " And : akered þer with oþer lond, alas ! þat deoful dede !  
 " For ge ben men beter y tagt to schonele and to spade,  
 " To cartestaf and to plowstaf, and a fischyng to wade,  
 " To hamer and to nedle, and to marchandise al so,  
 " þan y with swerd or : hanberk eny bataill to do.

more in this lond wolde come  
 ne myghte, And that hit  
 wolde hire yong folk teche  
 for to fyghte. That folk *Ar.*

1. Grete pro conseil in *Ar.*  
 2. Thader y come williche to  
 rede, Thader biþshop Gwi-  
 thelyn of London thus seðe :  
*Ar.* 3. Miseret enim me orpha-  
 nitatis & debilitatis, quæ vobis  
 accessit, postquam Maximianus

regnum istud omni militia om-  
 nique juventute spoliavit. &c.  
*Galfr. Mon.* 4. Wretchede, Ma-  
 ter that *Ar.* 5. Folk *Ar.*  
 6. Oþur londes akered ther  
 with, alas ! the deoful *Ar.*  
 7. With speer or with swerd  
 bataill for to do. When your  
 enemyes cometh yow to, ge ne  
 kunneth bute fle, As þep by-  
 fore wolnes. *Ar.* 8. Id est,  
 N 2 habet

"For men our son to ow comen, ge ne kunne noght bote se,  
 "As schep to fore wolues: (how myghte more wo be?)  
 "And þe se bi set ow al a bonte, bote twei weyes ge mune  
     þenche,  
 "Oþer ligge a down and be flawe, oþer se and drenchen.  
 "Nor þere any hope of ow, bote clauische al þat lond,  
 "Al þe help and lokyng, ys in oþer monne honde?  
 "And þe Romaynes beþ anyed of here trasel so sore,  
 "Of perel on se, & che on lond, þat heo nol come her no more.  
 "Heo wol raþer bi leue here trunage, þat ge hem bereþ ager,  
 "He kunne ge noght lerne þing, þat ge dabe neuer er?  
 "Change goure hond, & to bis of swerd & lance ys ydo.  
 "For no men ne beþ strengor þen ge, gef ge turnede þer to.  
 "We may se a bondeþ man's sone? oþer wyle knygt bi  
     come,  
 "And some gromes and squiers, and seþþe knyghtes some.

habergton five lorica. Potest tam-  
 men & habert legi, quomodo  
 & ipse legisse videtur *Codici* *Ar.*  
 interpolator. Et quidem hodie  
 itidem bipennem habert vocit-  
 tare solemus.

1. A bonte, hongh mome þe  
 thanne by þenche? *Ar.*  
 2. Help is ther non with þow,  
 but clensich al this lond, Al  
 the helpyng and lokyng, ys  
 in oþur manne's honde, *Ar.*  
 3. Eritne ergo spes vestra semper  
 in alieno tutamine, & non, in-  
 structis manibus vestris, ensibus  
 & hastis depelletis latrones, ne-

quaquam vobis fortiores, nisi se-  
 gnitia & torpor adesset? Jam  
 tædet Romanos tam assidui iti-  
 neris &c. *Galfr. Mon.* 4. Malim  
 ac pro and. 5. Spilieth your  
 bondes to the spere and to  
 swerd also *Ar.* 6. Nonne ho-  
 mines transverso ordine nas-  
 cuntur, ita ut ex rustico genere-  
 tur miles, & ex milite rusticus?  
 Miles etiam de mangone venit,  
 & de milite mango *Galfr. Mon.*  
 7. Som tyme a knyght by  
 come, And of a grom a squier,  
 and after knyghtes some *Ar.*

"Wen

"When ge habbeþ <sup>1</sup> forme of men, beþ men <sup>2</sup> on alle wiþe,  
 "And turneþ your hond to manþede, & <sup>3</sup> wyteþ oure franchise.  
 "þis biſchop, þat hatte Gocelyn," þorn heor <sup>4</sup> alle rede,  
 To þe laſſe Breteyne wende for þis dede.  
 Kyng Conan he ſoud ded, <sup>5</sup> an oþer of gret ſame  
 Kyng he ſoud in þys ſtude, <sup>6</sup> Androm was yn name.  
 "Sire kyng," quoth þe biſchop, "geþ þou moſt vnderſtonde,  
 "Deſi þou mygt habbe in þin herte of þi kynde londe,  
 "Of þe more Breteyn, <sup>7</sup> as þin eldre were y here.  
 "For þou moſt wel Maximian þe kyng, & Conan her bi ſore  
 "þe bachelerie al þat <sup>8</sup> agt wes out of þat lond nome,  
 "And a ſtored here þis <sup>9</sup> lond and þo power of Rome,  
 "And londes abouten vs habbeþ wel vnder gite,  
 "þat þer nis no folk bi leued, þat lond ſorte wyte.  
 "Deo fleþ & deſtroyeþ al, þat þer nys noþing bi leued,  
 "Warbi men <sup>10</sup> now libbe, and al for defaut of hened.  
 "And þer nys no mor þat kynde þaþ þerto bute þou <sup>11</sup> on.  
 "þelp <sup>12</sup> þi kynde eritage, & þou worſt þer kyng anon.  
 þe kyng gan ſom del to <sup>13</sup> lyyge, þo he herde þis.  
 "Ech <sup>14</sup> hadde," he ſeyde, "ſire biſchop, ſuch tyme y ſey y wys,

- 
- |                             |                   |   |             |
|-----------------------------|-------------------|---|-------------|
| 1. The fourme               | 2. In             | heritage,   | 14. Langhe, |
| 3. Kepeth poure             | 4.                | 15. Olim tempus erat quo non  |             |
| The erchebiſſhop Gwithelyn, |                   | negarem inſulam Britannia accipere, ſi quis eam mihi largiretur. Non enim exiſtimo alteram patriam fertiliorẽ fuiſſe, dum pace & tranquillitate fruere-<br>retur. At nunc, quoniam in-<br>fortunia acceſſerunt &c. Gaſſe. |             |
| 5. Eldre [i. alre]          |                   |   |             |
| 6. And a nothur             | 7. In-            |   |             |
| droge                       | 8. Ther thyne el- |   |             |
| 9. Dught was                | 10. Thyn el-      |   |             |
| 10. Lond thurgh the power   | 11. Thyn el-      |   |             |
| 11. Thyn el-                | 12. Thyn el-      |   |             |
| 12. Thyn el-                | 13. Thyn el-      |   |             |
| 13. Thyn el-                |                   |   |             |

"þat



"**1** þat ȝ wolde noght habbe for sake þat lond þe me hadde ȝ  
brought þer to.

"**2** It is muche ȝ wretched þer þer ȝs, þat nȝs not now so.

"**3** And nameliche for þe folk of ȝ Rome þat is muche seruise  
habbeþ here,

"**4** þat in such þradum forto be ȝ eche god mon loþ were.

"**5** þis lond ich ȝ habbe here is fre, þat to non herre ȝ schal  
abuye,

"**6** Wite wite fram þe kyng of france, þat doþ me ofte aȝpe.

"**7** And for to wyte me fram hym, ȝ nȝl nat ȝ henne wende.

"**8** It for myn ȝ elders hadde þat lond, ȝ segge þe atte ende,

"**9** To brynge it aȝeyn to oure kynde, ich wol þider sende

"**10** Costantyn my broþer, þat god knygt ȝs and hende,

"**11** And wel ȝ founded in armes, ȝ two ȝ hundred knyghtes  
el so,

"**12** Wel ȝ wryte with þe atȝl, þat god dede mon do

"**13** And þe folk of þe lond, ȝof ȝ heo aȝtes þeþ,

"**14** And ȝe man hym make goure kyng, wen ȝe ȝ tyme seþ.

þis Costantyn was of fend, and ȝ þis knyghtes also,

"**15** And ȝ schippen and here a tȝl prest, such prowes forto do.

**1.** That ich hit wolde  
nought haue forsake, yf hit  
hadde ther to be brought *Ar.*  
**2.** Wretchede now ther is,  
that now is hit so nought *Ar.*  
**3.** Rome such seruise *Ar.*  
**4.** Deest *Ar.* **5.** Ech man ful  
loþ were *Ar.* **6.** Holde as  
freo, ȝ ne dar non oþur a  
buye, But wette me fro the  
kyng of france, *Ar.* **7.** Wens

*Ar.* **8.** Elderne *Ar.* **9.** ȝ  
seigh þow atten eynde, *Ar.*  
**10.** To ryght, ich *Ar.* **11.** ȝ  
founded *Ar.* **12.** Thousand  
*Ar.* cam Galfrido Mon. **13.** A  
rayd in god a tȝre, dedes of  
armes to do with the folk *Ar.*  
**14.** Hit *Ar.* **15.** The tȝme *Ar.*  
**16.** These *Ar.* **17.** Wure shipes  
redȝ mad, this dede for to  
do *Ar.*

*Ar.*

At hee ne mygite <sup>1</sup> so raþe come, þat þe kynges most  
 here y come out of þe land, <sup>2</sup> myt gret power þey  
 Of Scottes and of Picars, of Denemarch, <sup>3</sup> of Normei,  
 þat ener <sup>4</sup> habbeþ þis lond y hated, þate is more for oþer  
 fer bi þorþ <sup>5</sup> bi goune, and hider faste þerme,  
 And caste a down <sup>6</sup> þis stronge mal, & townes grette grame.  
 þe Britones, þat mygite of leaþe, bi goune faste to fle,  
 Some in roches, some in wodes, þat <sup>7</sup> romþe yt was to se.

**U**ntantyn <sup>8</sup> myd þis power, amongal þis wrechednes,  
 At þe haue of Tottenais <sup>9</sup> shilleliche a lond com.  
 Glad were þe þe Britones, & joyful & prouta.  
 heo comen out of þe wodes lone, and of þe roches aboute.  
 So þat Costantyn hadde lone <sup>10</sup> power y noue,  
 And toward þis luter men þorþward lone drom.  
 He cudde þat <sup>11</sup> heo were men, & slowe <sup>12</sup> to gronde,  
 þe prude <sup>13</sup> of Scottes & Picars abouten in a floude.  
 for heo slowe þat mygite fle, and some sei to gronde.  
 heo mygite <sup>14</sup> legge, wen heo come home, þat heo hadde here  
 þere y fonde.  
 To þe land heo slowe agere, & ellen myþer heo mygite.  
 Hee ne þourte not a god while with þe Britones to fyhte.

1. So lone come, that the luter kynges threpe <i>or</i> . 2. With <i>or</i> . 3. And of <i>or</i> . 4. Maneth hated this land, but <i>or</i> . 5. Wigonne (simplici voce) in <i>or</i> . 6. His will <i>or</i> . 7. Deal þe romþe in <i>or</i> . 8. And his power in al this <i>or</i> .	9. Still a land <i>or</i> . 10. Gret power y noue, <i>or</i> . 11. He <i>or</i> . 12. He <i>or</i> . 13. Fast to <i>or</i> . 14. Of this luter men he cudde in a floude <i>or</i> . 15. Comþe ligh the, þate þere he hadde y fonde <i>or</i> .
---	--

þe Brytounes nomen þe Constantyn, & glæde þoru all þyng  
 In þe town of ' Cilcestre crowned hym' to here' kyng.  
 ' þis was so wel y wist in þen, with oute strif,  
 þat þer ne come ne Scottes þider, ne ' þycars al yz lpf.  
 þre' sonen he hadde al so, Constantyn was on,  
 And Durley and Alter, gode children echon.  
 Constantyn, yn eldeste sone, in Gode's seruise  
 Spok he made at Wyndchestre, & duðe as þe wyls.  
 God men he was y now, and gode lawes forþ caste,  
 And god pais ' wes al yz lpf, ' & to lute wyle þat laste.  
 For þer com a ' þycard, þat yz maners wel ' wiste,  
 And þat he louede wel y now, & muche to hym truste.  
 He ladde hym into an ' orchard, ' as yt gret ned wens  
 To speke wpy þym princeliche, þat noman ywar nere.  
 He þo þes were al bi hem selue, & no man hem neyg,  
 He drom yz knygt, & slow þe kyng, þat no man ' yt y seyg.  
 He was ' sone forþ y went, er any men were war.  
 And þo me hadde al y sought, þe kyng lay ded þar.

1. Redius Silchester cum  
*Galf. Mem.* At *Cherisfris* in *A-*  
*lands Britanniæ*, quem deflorauit  
*Galfridus*. 2. Desunt *Ar.* 3.  
 The lord was the wel y kept  
 in pais *Ar.* 4. Picardus *Ar.*  
 5. Sonen hadde this Constantyn,  
 Constantyn [*Constantinus* quoque  
 in *Alredo Brv.* & *Galf. Mem.*]  
 het that on, Durle Ambrose  
 the other, the thridde Alter  
 Wyndragon. Constantyn his el-  
 dest *Ar.* 6. Was in his tyme,

while his lpf y laste *Ar.*  
 7. F. ac. 8. Pite *Ar.* 9. Wiste,  
*Ar.* 10. Postremo, cum x. anni  
 praterissent, venit quidam Pi-  
 ctus, qui in obsequium suum  
 fuerat, & quasi secretum collo-  
 quium habiturus, in virgulo  
 quodam semotis cunctis eum  
 cultro interfecit *Galfridus Mem.*  
 11. For conseil as hit were,  
 And to speke *Ar.* 12. Wt as  
 seigh *Ar.* 13. Anon *Ar.*

þe was þis leaue kyngles, wat halt yt to telle longe &  
 Gret word was among þat folk, þe mygite þe crowne songe.  
 For þe eldeste sone monk was, & þe twei yonge were,  
 And to nyne<sup>2</sup> ferrors of ys kynde no rygt nere.

**U**rtiger, þe quoynte swike, þat was erl of Corn-  
 wall,

ferte he<sup>3</sup> a swykedom no conseil schalde hym fail.

To þe sone þat was monk to Wyndchestre he wende y wis.

"Ho," (he seide) "nam þou<sup>6</sup> syt, þat þi fader ded ys,

"And þi drispen to gyngs bep to a sounge þe crowne,

"And þet þou be in oþer cloþes, þi rygt<sup>7</sup> nys not þer dome.

"Wel<sup>8</sup> me<sup>9</sup> wat eldest þou art, & myd best rygt kyng al so.

"Ȝel þou moit<sup>10</sup> wol be my frend, & bi my red al so,

"Ich wole drynge<sup>11</sup> þat folk in wille, to crowne þe to kyng.

"And þet þin ordre be þer aȝeyn, þer to ich wole it drynge.

"þe monk was ioful y now, þe he hurde þis,

"And bi þet hym, ȝef it were so, ever more to be al þys.

Out of ys abytt anon Urtiger hym brow,

And cloþes, "as to kyng bi come, dade on hym faire gnewy,

1. The other two *Ar.* 2. Forther of his kyn no ryght men thoughte hit nere *Ar.* 3. The lather swike, *Ar.* 4. "Cronica Latina vocat eum du-  
 "cem Gewiseorum" *Ar.* in mar-  
 gine. Et quidem Consul Gewise-  
 rum in *Abredo Bru.* At in *Galsfr.*  
*Adm.* "consul Gewiseorum, i.  
 "Orientalium Anglorum. 5.  
 A swykedom he caste hym  
 sanz faille. To the monk at  
 Wyndchestre sone he wende y  
 wis *Ar.* 6. Sitt *Ar.* 7. Is  
 nought ther *Ar.* 8. Thugh  
 wost *Ar.* 9. Nec alium video  
 in progenie tua, quem populus  
 in regem promoveret *Galsfr. Adm.*  
 10. Wel *Ar.* 11. The people  
 in wille, *Ar.* 12. Is a kyng  
*Ar.*

And bi fore al þe Parlement to London he gan hym bryngte,  
 And seide he was purest eyr, to be crowned <sup>1</sup> to kyng.  
 So men ne mygt wel it myȝt segge. <sup>2</sup> ne may ryȝt y se,  
 When he was þer, & was put eyr, þei he hadde <sup>3</sup> monk.  
 & Up hym self þe perel were, bote yt myȝte wel do.  
 þe þoy men þorn Mortiger <sup>4</sup> a song hym alle þer to.  
 þe erchbisshop of London <sup>5</sup> Godeyn was þe ded,  
 And non oþer <sup>6</sup> wolde hym crowne, for al þat þe erl bed.  
 For he hadde so longe in orders be, & so was out y broȝt.  
 For al þat <sup>7</sup> Mortiger wolde bi leue yt noght,  
 He hym self hym crowneþe, & made hym kyng so.  
 þe sacryng was late worȝ, & napeles yt was y do.  
 þo he was kyng ymad, ys heft he made a non,  
 þat clauliche to Mortiger ys men <sup>8</sup> abyde echen.  
<sup>9</sup> for hymself he <sup>10</sup> wolde þenche noght, bote take hym al on  
 honde.

For he comþe wel bet þan he gouerne such a londe.  
 þo bi þougte Mortiger mest þorn alle þyng,  
 How he myȝte do quoynteliche, þat he hym selue were kyng.  
 For þat <sup>11</sup> euer ys þoght, and þer fore þe monk he nom  
 To <sup>12</sup> kyng be. for he was nyce and howþe no wisdom,

1. Deest *Ar.* 2. He may the  
 ryȝt y se, That he ne is ver-  
 sei þei, *Ar.* 3. Adde y be cum  
*Ar.* 4. Upon hym self a pertil  
 hit were, but he hit wolde do.  
 The heigh *Ar.* 5. Mentede  
 alle ther to *Ar.* 6. Wythe-  
 lyu *Ar.* 7. Hym crowny wolde,  
 theigh Mortiger hem bed *Ar.*  
 8. Put Mortiger wolde by

leue nought, that hym self ne  
 crowne hym, and made hym  
 kyng ryȝt the, And were hit  
 ryȝt oþur wough, yut hit  
 was y do *Ar.* 9. Aboughwed  
*Ar.* 10. Deest *Ar.* 11. Wolde  
 thenke on nought, *Ar.* 12. E-  
 nere was his thought, *Ar.*  
 13. Be kyng. for *Ar.*

And

And ys twei breþren were brogt out of cradel bunche.  
 And þe hepe men mest of þe lond were þ brogt to þeþe  
 Wyd batailles & wyd oþer wo, þer fore he was so gromt,  
 1 And þe kyng 2 nas bute a schade, & let hym worþe al out.  
 To þe kyng he seide, þat he mošte ys castles astore,  
 þenne wolde ys son aboute 3 doute hym þe more.  
 And for þe 4 Picars were ys son, some he wolde take  
 To be pryue with þe kyng, for þilke schulde make  
 þere selawes, þat were leued at home, to lone þat lond þe bet.  
 Ac 5 napeles þer fore 6 nas yt noȝt þe yt was al bi set,  
 Ac for þei leuede nat þe kyng, & in trayson were quoynts,  
 7 þat heo schulde þe kyng sle, men heo come 8 by þe paynte.  
 þe kyng graunteþe al ys wil, and for ys gode 9 wende.  
 After an hundred 10 Picars into Scotland he sende  
 By certeyn messageres, so þat heo gonne bryngs  
 11 An hundred knyghtes of Picars, þat bi leuede mid oure  
 kyng,

Of mest prync men, þoru þis laþer Mortiger.  
 And þe kyng's tresour he delde eke a bonte fer & ner,

1. The kyng hym self was  
 but a shade, & let hym al one  
 al out. And to the kyng *Ar.*  
 2. Totum namq; dispositioni ejus  
 regnum commissum fuerat, &  
 Constans rex dicebatur, qui nisi  
 pro umbra principis astabat *Galf.*  
*Mon.* 3. Doute *Ar.* 4. Picars  
*Ar.* 5. Ecce occulta occulti ami-  
 ci proditio. Non enim id lauda-  
 bat, ut salus inde proveniret  
 Constantis, sed quia sciebat, Pi-  
 ctos gentem esse instabilem, &

ad omne scelus paratam *Galf.*  
*Mon.* 6. Was hit nought what  
 hit was al by set, *Ar.* 7. And  
 that *Ar.* 8. To the *Ar.* 9. He  
 wende *Ar.* 10. Picars to *Ar.*  
 11. An hundred Picars sende  
 ours to by leue with oure  
 kyng, And to be most preue  
 with hym thurgh this Morti-  
 ger. Of the kyng's tresour  
 he delt fer and ner, Ac most  
 to the Picars *Ar.*

And mest to þe **Þicars**, for to hem mest loue he drew.  
 And alle þat he wolde hym self he made hym bi loued ynow.  
 Alle <sup>1</sup> þat seruede þe kyng, þoru hym <sup>2</sup> were echone,  
<sup>3</sup> So þat ech mon was a bente for to paye hym one,  
 And <sup>4</sup> longe al day bi þe strete <sup>5</sup> al for his honour,  
 "Werþi were **Wortiger** <sup>6</sup> to kyng oþer emperour.  
 þo þis **Wortiger** hadde <sup>7</sup> þat folk al <sup>8</sup> in his hand,  
 He seyde, he make wende amys out of his lond,  
 To purchace more tresour þe kyng for to spene,  
 For he hadde nogt y nowt, ys knyghtes to sustene.  
 And <sup>9</sup> atte **Þicars** nom ys leue, and at oþer þere,  
 And wende þem <sup>10</sup> to <sup>11</sup> his ar, fori as he were.  
 þer was forme and deil ynow among al þe mayne,  
 For he schulde from hem <sup>12</sup> wend, (for þer was no kyng  
 bote he)  
 And nameliche among **Þicars**, þat were of so luper þought,  
 þat he hadde do such honour, & þat ne louede þe kyng nogt.  
 "Wat," heo leyden, "wat is <sup>13</sup> þu to lete þis badde kyng  
 "So þus o iluc as a <sup>14</sup> schade, þat nys worth noþing &

1. The seruantes of the  
 kyng *Ar.* 2. Were made  
 schone *Ar.* 3. Ita ut eum pro  
 rege haberent. Adulantes igitur  
 ei per plateas psallebant, "di-  
 gnus est Vortigernus imperio,  
 dignus est sceptro Britannie,  
 Constans vero indignus *Galf.*  
*Mon.* 4. Syngs *Ar.* 5. As for  
*Ar.* 6. To be kyng or em-  
 perour *Ar.* 7. This *Ar.* 8. On  
*Ar.* 9. Of the **Þicars** tok his

leue, and of oþur there, *Ar.*  
 10. Ad hospitium suum *Galf.*  
*Mon.* 11. His contre in forme  
 as hit were *Ar.* 12. Wende,  
 (that was so large and fre)  
 And among the **Þicars** most,  
 that were of lither thought,  
 That he hadde do so muchel  
 honour, and louede the kyng  
 nought *Ar.* 13. This pro þu  
 in *Ar.* 14. Shadewe, *Ar.*

Wat

Warto tarie me so longe, to quelle hym atten ende  
 þat Mortiger ⁊ were kyng, þat a gen vs ys so hende ⁊  
 In gret ⁊ waype ⁊ hastynesse to þe kyng's chamber heu  
 wende,

And smyten of hys hed, and to Mortiger yt sende.

Mortiger made deal y now, ⁊ and fori was þer fore :

Ac napeles so glad he nas seþþe he was y bore.

for ⁊ y compaced he hadde þat atte bi gynnynge,

first ⁊ wen he bragte on so nyce a man to kyng.

And seþþe þo he lette ys son ⁊ ⁊ Picars to court bryng,

þat hatede muche þe kyng, ⁊ ⁊ al was for þis þinge.

And þo he was so large ⁊ hende of hys gifter al so.

⁊ þo hadde he al ys wille, for when yt was al yde,

⁊ And to suc ende yt was y come, <sup>10</sup> as he hadde y compaced  
 in ys þogt.

And napeles he seynede hym, þat me under get yt nogt.

At London þis kyng was y slaw. he let þe nyce anon

⁊ he Picars, ⁊ þoru iugement let smyt of þe hedys echon.

þer he hadde <sup>12</sup> wat he was, bi kynde schrewe ⁊ quoynte.

⁊ Ac al he dude, þat me ne under get in knyghdom in no poynte.

Degolla-  
 tio Picto-  
 rum.

1. Wyght be kyng, that to  
 vs is so heynde: *Ar.* 2. Wrath  
*Ar.* 3. And wip fol fore ther  
 fore *Ar.* 4. He hit hadde by  
 compaced atte *Ar.* 5. Tho he  
 made the monch, þat nyce  
 was, to kyng *Ar.* 6. Picars  
*Ar.* 7. And muche was for  
 these thyng. And that he  
 was *Ar.* 8. Tho he hadde al  
 his wille, when this was *Ar.*

9. Omittit *Ar.* 10. As he cast  
 in his thought. And euere he  
 made hit so queynte, that me  
 wiste hit nought *Ar.* 11. Wile  
 the Picars thurgh iugement,  
 and hedeþe hem echon *Ar.*  
 12. That he *Ar.* 13. And al  
 was, that me ne wolde aspie  
 his falsheþe in no poynte. Ac  
 natheles some hit underyede,  
 ⁊ ne leude *Ar.*

And



- And napeles men yt trowede, and lenebe not ys glafe.  
 • þe kyng's <sup>1</sup> droghen, Marele and Ambrose,  
 Dradde, for here crytage, ymorphed for to be.  
 And <sup>2</sup> heo, that hem hadde <sup>3</sup> to ward, þer fore goune by le,  
 And to þe lasse Bretayne wende to þe kyng,  
 And he <sup>4</sup> asberuede hem wel, for drede of þis þinge.  
 þe Mortiger al one was, and no pere <sup>5</sup> nad a londe.  
 Sone he lette hym <sup>6</sup> crowne kyng, & þe power nom on honde.  
 Princen ouer al aboute of <sup>7</sup> eche kyndom  
 Spoke hym vnel, & hatede hym for þys <sup>8</sup> swikedom.  
 þe <sup>9</sup> Piers were worp eke, and <sup>10</sup> þratten hym ynow,  
<sup>11</sup> for þe myd such unhyu dede heore selawes slom.  
 from þe lasse Bretayn eke hym com word glome,  
 þat <sup>12</sup> þe twel children gret power to hem nome,  
 And <sup>13</sup> þat hit stronge childre were of here age,  
 And þat þei wolde hyder come, to wyne here heritage.  
 • Such strong tyfinges in forme and in fore  
 Brought þis false kyng, and et þe lenger þe more.

1. Ponge bretheren, Uter  
 and Marele Ambrose, *Ar.* re-  
 cius. 2. *Wit*, *Ar.* 3. In warde,  
 ther fore hem goune by le.  
 To the lasse Brutayne hit  
 wende to Wadic the kyng,  
*Ar.* 4. Hem let wardy wel,  
*Ar.* 5. Hadde in londe, *Ar.*

6. Crouny *Ar.* 7. Cuery *Ar.*  
 8. Swikedom *Ar.* 9. Pises  
*Ar.* 10. Hatede *Ar.* 11. That  
 he with so vile deth hure se-  
 lawes he slough *Ar.* 12. The  
 two *Ar.* 13. That hit stales  
 worthe were, as of hure age,  
*Ar.*

**H**Ors and Hengist bothe, þat twei brefre were,  
Come to Kent þilke tyme, and a riuede þere,  
Wyd þe schip ful of knyghtes y armed wel ynow.

þo þis folk was on lond, forþ into Kent hit drow.

þo kyng was þo at Canterbury, and herde þer of anon:

Bi fore hym he lette bryng e þis knyghtes" echon.

þo kyng bi huld hem faste ynow, (for et muchel men were)

And nameliche þe twei brefren, (for so muchel non þer were.)

þe 7 ascobe hem, of wanne þei, and ho" hem þider brogte,

And for wat encheson heo come, e wat þing þei sogte e

"Sire kyng," (quod Hengist, þat for al oþer spech y wys)

"Of Saxonie we beþ y bore, þat of Germanie ys.

Hengi-  
stus.

"þe maner ys of þilke lond, þat wen þer ys forþ ybrogt

"So muche folk 10 of men," þat 11 þo lond may 12 susteyne  
nagt.

"13 þo" hepe men of 14 þo lond schulle come bi fore þe kyng.

"And 15 alle þo yonge men of þe lond lere bi fore hym bryng.

"þe strengeste me schal bi choys and bi let al so

"These out, and sende in to oþer lond," here besta forðe do.

1. Horn *Ar.* 2. Men pro  
knyghtes in *Ar.* At *militibus* in  
*Galsfr. Mon.* 3. The tydynges  
hough they come, were in  
contreie a brod drough. The  
kyng *Ar.* 4. These men *Ar.*  
5. The *Ar.* 6. Nam ipsi pr  
ceteris & nobilitate & decore  
præstebant *Galsfr. Mon.* 7. He  
ede hem, whans hit were,  
e ho *Ar.* 8. Saxonia tellus edi-

dit nos, una ex regionibus Ger-  
maniz *Galsfr. Mon.* 9. Of Ger-  
maniz that is *Ar.* 10. Desunt  
*Ar.* 11. The *Ar.* 12. Men  
susteyne *Ar.* 13. Deceit *Ar.*  
14. The *Ar.* 15. Alle the  
yonge bachetrie me shal to  
fore hym bryng. The shal-  
wortheste me shal by loth and  
by choys also These, e sende  
hem out of londe, *Ar.*

"And

"And þe schulle be such, þat no prince dorre hem for sake,

"He for here promise gladliche in to here seruise take.

"þis cas ys to vs þ'come, y chose we beþ þer to,

"for so muche ys in þe lond, oure beste forto do.

"And forto be maistres of þis folk we beþ y chose & p'nome

"þi broþer & ich, (for we beþ of dukens kyn y come.)

"for þeru our Goden in to þe se we wende ich vnderstonde,

Mercurius.

"And Mercurius haþ vs y lad into þi londe.

þo þe kyng herde nempne Mercurius in þis cas,

He askede, wat God and wat þing Mercurius was :

"Oure bi leue (quop þis oþer) in þe hre Goden ys y do,

"Saturnus and Jupiter, and al þe oþer al so,

"þat bp haldeþ þe world, & in Mercurius mest y wys,

"þe hope God," þat in oure tonge Woden y clepud ys.

"þer ner brei dore him bi toke of þe woke þe ferþe day,

"In honour of hym y clepud in oure tonge Wednesday.

Venus.

"Aftur hym we honoureþ Venus mest, þat frie y clepud ys

"In oure tonge, & in þe wyke Friday for hym y wys.

"Her of ge schul vnderstonde, þat in þe armament beþ

"planetes, y liche cler sterres, leuene, as ge seþ :

"Saturnus and Jupiter, Mars and þe Sonne y wys,

"Venus and Mercurius, and þe Mone lowest ys.

1. Wi shalleth *Ar.* 2. He fore our elders &c. Nam in  
der *Ar.* 3. But *Ar.* 4. And *Galsfr. Mon.* "huic veteres nostri  
for ther was to muche folk, "dicaverunt quantam feriam se-  
oure beste we mote do. And "ptimanz, qua usque in hodi-  
to be *Ar.* 5. This *Ar.* 6. "ernum diem nomen Wednesday  
That *Ar.* 7. God *Ar.* 8. O- "des de nomine ipsius sortita  
mittit *Galsfridus Mon.* 9. Lege, "est.  
þer ner br elders, i. e. therea

"Aftur

"Astur ech of hem in þe wike y clepad ys a day:  
 "first<sup>1</sup> on Sonne, & so of oþere and þe seneþe Saturday.  
 "And for weder, & oþer<sup>2</sup> þing on erþe, astur hem muche is,  
 "þis mys bi leuede men hem clepede Godes while y wols.  
 "Sort ich am" (quoth Mortiger) "þo þe herde þis.  
 "for goure bi leue, þat<sup>3</sup> ge segget, for no bilene yt nys.  
 "Ac for goure coming ich am glad, þe so ow hider ladde,  
 "Were yt God, were yt oþer, for nede ich hadde.  
 "for ich am myd my son<sup>4</sup> on ech half by set,  
 "And gef ich hem may oner come þoru gon þe bet,  
 "Ich gon myd me at holde, & in grete richesse gon do  
 "Of gistes, and of chatews, and of londes al so.  
 "þeo<sup>5</sup> maden certeyne couenaunt þat heo were al at on;  
 "So þat þei bi leuede forþ with<sup>6</sup> þe kyng echon.  
 "Hit was not longe<sup>7</sup> þer astur þat þis þicars ne come  
 "Out of Scotland Souþward, and townes faste nome. *Bellum;*  
 "þe tyþing þer of to oure kyng com,  
 "þe wey mid al ys power agen hem faste þe nom.

<p>             1. Of the Sonne, &amp; so forth              the senethe <i>Ar.</i> 2. Thynges  <i>Ar.</i> 3. These myshylenede  <i>Ar.</i> 4. Þe bileneþ, no bilene              is. But of þoure come ich  <i>Ar.</i> 5. Were hit God, or eny              oþer, for al nede ych hadde  <i>Ar.</i> 6. In every half <i>Ar.</i>              7. Ich yough wole with me              witholde, &amp; gret honour put              do, And gistes yne ynough              of londes, &amp; oþur catelles              also. Hit made a certayn co-           </p>	<p>             uenant, so that hit were at              on; <i>Ar.</i> 8. Paruerunt illico              barbari, &amp; foedere confirmato in              curia ipsius remanserunt. Nec              mora emergentes ex Albania              Picti, exercitum valde grandem              mittunt, aquilonaresque partes              insula vastare coeperunt <i>Galsf.</i>  <i>Mon.</i> 9. Our pro þe in <i>Ar.</i>              10. Afterward that the þicars              ne come <i>Ar.</i> 11. Tho the ty-              dyng of this thyng to Mortig-              er come, <i>Ar.</i> </p>
--	---

Strong bataill þes knyght þer, at þe Sarones aȝen  
 to god wote, þat þe opere bi gonnt to ðe erþone.  
 þe ðettiger þen hem hadde þe maikre,  
 he þat heȝ gilleȝ grette þenow, and duðe þu corteȝe.  
 Hengist, þat heȝe maikre was, he gaf en lȝndesȝe  
 abbesse ðette, and tencen and townes grette and heȝe,"  
 "Wilt þen heȝe & þu men : en ðer woteȝen he bræte.  
 "þe Hengist hadde þis, toþter wote he þeȝe.  
 þe he hadde þeþing in þrinett al cene at þu wille,  
 "Stre," he wote, "if ðerne : this ech wot þe wote ðille.  
 "þineȝen wot en ech ðill, & þu þu þe wote ðenre,  
 "þat þin wote ðenre he wote þe wote, þat þe heȝe abate.  
 "þen þenre þe wote, & toȝer þe wote "þe" bræte  
 "þe twel bræte ðenre woteȝen, & wote þenre ðenre :  
 "þe þe wote ðenre, þat ðe wote ðenre to my woteȝen  
 "To woteȝen ðenre wote ðenre, þe wote & wote þu.  
 for "þe þe wote power wote, þen wote þe wote & wote.  
 Ac oping to "wote ðenre þe, þat þen ðe woteȝen to þe.

Peticio  
 Hengisti.

1. Conno, & gret nobile
- Ar. 2. Quibus sese & commili-
- tones suos sustentaret *Galfr. Mon.*
3. In to rychelle Ar. 4. And
- put to he hadde al this, for-
- thermore he thoughte Ar.
5. Chyng pro cas in Ar. 6. Vo-
- culam hanc erant in Ar. eadem,
- ut videtur, manus quæ & scripsit.
7. Cronyke on to kyng Ar.
8. Si placet tibi, mittamus in
- patrim nollram, & invitemus
- milites ex ea, &c. *Galfr. Mon.*
9. The rede, that we sende

to my Ar. 10. Sic in Cod. Har-  
 leyano. At Saronte in Ar.  
 11. If though hast power e-  
 nough, though maist be Ar.  
 12. Wole bidde the, & though  
 wolt me liche. Bidde what  
 though wolt, quath the kyng,  
 ich wote the graunte þis,  
 Elles forðthe ich were to  
 blante, If hit to graunte is.  
 And fetteþe [i. fetteþe] help al  
 that though maist, that be of  
 god arape, And ich wole hure  
 while þeðe, and hure þeȝe  
 þeȝe.

"Send' after help," quoth he kyng, "bat þou me myght bi grante,  
 "And wold here while while, in þat schalle helde here wyl  
 yete.

"And helde of us wat þou wold, a ich wold þe grante wold,  
 "For elles ich wold þou wold, and it to grante þu.

Hengist saide hym þou wold, and þis he lyste a howe.

"þou hast," he seide, "þou me wold a four town.

"And wolden such þing? wold þe wold, as it to þat þe come.

"For man ich am? þou's lone, yt þe come to me"

"For to? þou's lone? wold" site of castel me to? wold,

"? War inne? wold to þou wold habbe my folk wold.

þer fore," as ich am þe wold, &? wold to þe wold al so,

Grante me? castel oþer site þe wold to do.

"Hengist," quoth he kyng he, "wold me wold to done

"Such þing, as þou me wold to grante he, to lone.

"For þou art man of strange land, & Cristene man wold.

"And eke, þei ich wold, my barones wold yt with legge  
 echon.

"Site, grante me þonne," quoth Hengist, "get yt to þe wille,

"As muche place, as myd a þong ich may a bonte tille,

page. Hengist saide hym  
 thanked þo, and his heed  
 bowed a down Ar.

1. Ad hæc Vortigernus, "Mitte  
 ergo legatos tuos ad Germa-  
 niam; & invita quos volueris,  
 & pete à me quod desideras, &  
 nullam repulsam patieris *Calfr.*  
*Mon.* 2. Hæne ich nought, as  
 a duk Ar. 3. A Duke's lone,  
 me thinketh hit were to done

Ar. 4. Hæne Ar. 5. Deest Ar.  
 6. Where, Ar. 7. And, yt that  
 ich neðe hadde, kepe me fro  
 vere. Ther fore, Ar. 8. Wedy  
 to the also, Ar. 9. Site of  
 castel my neðe inne to do Ar.  
 10. Kyng, hit were me nought  
 to done Ar. 11. As much as  
 with a hole hyðe ich may  
 ouer tille, Ar.

jongca-  
ker.

"1. þat ich þer 2. uppe mome a liker held" a rere,  
 "þat ich 3. mome in þi seruise wylle, gef yt neðe were.  
 þo þyng ne hilde þat bute a 4. intel, he grauntede hys bone.  
 þengist leude in to hys contre astur more power lous.  
 þo carf he a bole hyde finale al 5. to a þong  
 þoru out, wil he wolde laste, & þo was he somdel long.  
 In an hard 6. roche stode ys þong aboute he drow,  
 And þer wylt tunc al to ys wille markede place ynow,  
 And rerde þer an castel god y now and strong,  
 7. þat þangcaster, oþer Tangcaster, ycleped was for þe þong.  
 þer come out of Germanie vnder þat, ych wene,  
 8. charged mid gode knyghtes, schippes eigtetene.  
 And Kowen, þengiste's dogter, among hem y brogt was,  
 þat fairer wommon nowre a bonte in no lond nas.  
 þo þis raskel 9. gare was, þengist þe king bi sogte  
 10. To come to hys castol, & se þe knyghtes þat he brogte,  
 þo kyng com þider priueliche, & 11. þis knyghtes y sey,  
 And þis castel, 12. so" lone a rerð, so 13. strong and so þey.

1. Quo me, si opus fuerit, re-  
 cipiam *Galf. Mon.* 2. Upon  
 may a liker place *Ar.* 3.  
 Myghte in thyne seruise me  
 wylle and neðe were *Ar.*  
 4. Itz, & grauntede al his  
 bone *Ar.* 5. To one thonge  
 Churgh out, while hit wolde  
 y laste, and that was somdel  
 longe *Ar.* 6. Roche's stode *Ar.*  
*Saxorum locum habet Galf. Mon.*  
 7. And Thwong castel, or

Tancastel, cleped is for the  
 thwong. Thenne come ther  
 out of Germanye vnder that,  
 ich wene, Charged with or-  
 pede men, shippes eightetene  
*Ar.* 8. A redy was *Ar.* 9. To  
 come and se his castel, and  
 men he hadde y broughte.  
 The kyng *Ar.* 10. These *Ar.*  
 11. Deest *Ar.* 12. Noble pro  
 strong in *Ar.*

1. *With al* : he was wel a payed and bi leneþe atte mete.  
 his mayþe out of chambre com, þe : þei hadden y gete,  
 With a coppe of gold, sei of wyne, fyde þrom hys tail  
 4. I kne to þe kyng heo seyde, : "lord kyng wassyl.

Wassyl.

1. *With al* *Ar.* 2. Ut vero regis epulis refectus fuit, egressa est puella de thalamo, aureum ciphum, plenum vino, ferens. Accedens deinde propius, flexis genibus dixit, louverd ching woleþeall *Galf. Ann.* 3. *With hadde y pete* *Ar.* 4. I kne heo sette hure byfore the kyng, & seiðe, "fyr wassail *Ar.* 5. Vide Seldeni Notas in Draytoni Poly-olbion, pag. 153. ubi locum quendam è Roberto nostro (alio tamen usus MS.) adduxit, innuitq; Louverd kyng was=heill idem esse quod Lord kyng a health; Drinc=heille vero idem quod Drinks the health. Verum his de rebus scripserunt plures, in quibus & ipse numerandus est Somnerus. Atqui tot auctorum verba non est cur exscribam. Sat est si ea tantummodo in medium proferam, quæ observavit in Itinerariq; Cantiano (p. 20.) doctissimus Lambardus. idque ea potissimum de causa, quod & illam hac occasione plane consulendum esse monuerit eruditissimus Spelmannus in Glossario. [Hengist] espyting therefore, that king Vortiger was much

Delighted in womens company, and knowing wel, that sine Cerere & Libero, friget Venus, he had him to a solempne banquet, and after that he had (according to the maner of Germanie yet continuing) well plied him with gotes, hee let slip before him a faire gentlewoman, his owne daughter, called Roxena, or Rowen, which being instructed before hande how to behaue hys selfe, most amiable presented him with a goblet of wine, saying in hys own language, þær Hæle Hlafond cýnyng? wassail Lordes king, that is to say, bee merie Lord king: with which hys dallance, the King was so delighted, that he not onely vouchsafed to pledge hys, but desired also to performe it in the right maner of hys owne countrey. And therefore he answered (as he was taught) unto hys agayne, þync Hæle? Drinks merily. Which when shee had done, himselfe toke the cup, and pledged hys so hartely, that from thenceforth hee could

The first  
wassailing  
cup.



þe kyng þe hald þam : forþe þam, & wonderde þam : for  
þam.

For to hitte monneþam þe man. þe eldeþe wat þes fadir  
þen, þat knowe þe langage, seþe, wat was woful,  
And þat he scholde þat broȝte answer, "drynkþayl.

"Drinkþayl, quop þis kyng agen, & bed hire drinke anon.  
þe coupe : þe nom seþe of hire among þam echon,  
And sette hire, & sette hire a down, & glad drank hire hail.  
And þat was to : in þis lond þe firste ballayl,  
As in langage of þeþen, þat was myȝte over y wyte,  
And to : wel he þat þat folk aboute, þat he nys not yet for  
lete.

So fir, as in þe day to : lang, þe while þes setteþ a-benche,  
And som of þe next nimeþ þer to, þe drynke forto þenche,

The issue of  
an ungodly  
marriage.

could neuer be in rest, buttil  
he had obtained his to wife,  
little weighing, either how  
deepely he had endangered  
his conscience in marrying  
himselfe with a heathen wo-  
man, or how greatly he had  
hazarded his Crowne by joyne-  
ing handes with so mightie  
a forein Nation.

1. Faste enough. 2. Fast-  
hebe. 3. unica vote. Nec ta-  
men idem quod forehead esse  
judicatum. Non aliud enim plane  
est quam facies pueri id quod  
è Galfrido Monasteriensis constat,  
qui sic ait : *At ille, visa facie pu-  
elli, admiratus est tantum ejus de-  
corum, & inuoluit.* 3. And of  
anon of hure langage southe

he axede what heo seþe : &  
non men telde the kyng for  
what was to sepe wofull,  
And that he sholde to hure  
that tyme answer ther to  
drynk hail. Drynk hail, seþe  
the kyng a ye, 4. He toke  
of hure anon, and a mong  
echon kussed hure & a down  
hure sette, & gladly drank  
hure hail. And thus was  
here in this londes firste y  
knowe wofull. 5. And  
þat hit seieth the folk, þat  
hit is nought for þis. 6.  
Long, and setteþ many a  
benche, And of the myȝt  
myȝt ther to, drynke ther  
by to þenche, On an heli  
goodenow's word hit was  
nought

Of an holi overhord's word þus wold not be his þenche,  
 As of the martyn's, þat þus þenche of þe heli wende.  
 So fast he þenche was þe þing, that anon he þe þenche  
 He willede, for that he þenche, þis an þe : for he þenche.  
 Þengist willede he wille, & þat he was þenche.  
 He grantede : in þe þenche he willede to be he wille,  
 for wat þe þenche þe he þe : wille of that þenche.  
 þe þenche in þe þenche wille grantede al þe,  
 And willede þis wille : in a wille þe wille,  
 for þat he was þenche, and þe wille was.  
 þat he wille was wille þe wille, & þe wille wille,  
 wille, and : wille, and wille þe wille.  
 Four hundred ger and fourti and nyene, ich underþende,  
 Wille of grace, þat þe wille þe wille to þe wille.  
 þe wille wille : wille : þe wille þe wille,  
 þat wille wille : wille : wille : wille : wille : wille.  
 Þengist wille to þe wille, "Wille, þe wille & wille,  
 "þat wille wille of wille, & þe wille wille be.  
 "Wille wille wille, and þe wille þe wille  
 "Wille come wille, to wille wille wille.

Confilium  
 Hen-  
 gisti.

nought so wel thenche, As  
 he doth of that many word  
 of that heli wende. The  
 þing in hille þe wille to,  
 that anon wille.

1. Pro, forto. 2. And knew  
 his wille, And grantede  
 al for wille his wille  
 wille to be, By so the  
 þing þe wille þe wille the wille.

3. Sed omnibus unum consilium

fuit, ut puella daretur regi, &  
 ut peteret pro ea provinciam  
 Cantie ab ipso. Necnon, data  
 fuit puella regi Willelmo, &  
 provincia Cantie et Herefordie, &c.  
*Galfridus Mon.* 4. This was a  
 story cas wille. 5. The people  
 was wille. 6. Hattigern wille.  
 7. Sic plane in Cod. nostro Har-  
 leyano. At syne in wille. 8. The  
 wille thus wille. 9. In al wille.

"Sende

Duo filii " Sende me get astur my sones : Oute and Chise,  
 Hengchi. " þat quasute werrourer beþ, and stalwerþe and wyfe.  
 " In þe sterþ half get hem lond, wher þou wolt by se,  
 " þat heo mome bi tuene þe and þe Scottes be.  
 " þenne þou : mygt liker be by Souþ ðomber ywys.  
 þe kyng þe sende astur hem, and graunteþe al þis.  
 So þat mid þre hundred schipes heo arinede here,  
 : ful of armes and of men, here was gret power.  
 þe kyng wel : saȝn gaf hem lond, as þengist hym bi logte,  
 And þengist euer mo and mo schippes hyder broȝte.  
 þe þe Brytones þis y seye, of treson heo were in drede.  
 for þe lond was al mid hem y suld, þer fore þe kyng : heo  
 bede,  
 þat he schalþe hym under stonde, & out of ' lond hem do.  
 for yt ne bi com noȝt to payns among Cristen men be so.  
 for yt was Cristendom, & in mony studeþ me nuste  
 ' Wuch was on, ne wuch was oþer, ne to wam me myȝte truste.  
 Some faderes were Cristene, & þo moderes heþene were.  
 We nuste to weþer heo bi come þe children þat heo bere.  
 þe kyng louede þe Saxones, for lone of ys myne,  
 And wolde, for al þe Britones, out of ' hys loude hem dryne.

---

1. Oute & Chise, Ar.	2. What	Ar. 4. fame Ar.	5. Will Ar.
Ar. 3. ful of trauallyng	6. This loude Ar.	7. This	
men, this was gret power	Ar.		

Segut

**S**eynt Germain þe biſchop to þis londe com,  
for mysbilene þat tyme, & to amende Criſtendom,  
And prechede, as yt neede was, & faire miracles  
wroȝte,

So þat þe Criſtens men in betet that he broȝte.  
And heo a forcede hom" þe more, þe heþene a wey to dryne.  
He nolde bilene here porpos for þe kyng, ne for ys myȝte.  
Heo for soke þe kyng al out, and binome : ys power,  
And hys eldest sone made kyng, þat hette Mortimer.  
þis Mortimer with gret power and god ernest knew,  
þorn conseil of Seynt Germain, agen : þis heþene drom.  
þe sene ȝer yt was astur, þat heo to londe come,  
þe kyng was, God i þenk, a bone in four batailles, þat heo nome.  
Alle heo were in one ȝer. atte firste, withoute one,  
Catigen, þe kyng's broþer, myd hys men echone,  
Battelde þors and hys oft, so þat heo fouȝte laste,  
So þat þis Catigen yslawe mas atte laste.  
þe kyng for ys broþer deþ lori mas y now.  
To þis þors he smot anon, & among al ys folk þem flom.  
þe þis strong men was slawe, þat so strong was in ȝyt,  
Ys men bi gonne to fle " and" sayn þat heo myȝt.

Beilun  
Horn.

1. Germain byſſhop of Au-  
ferne, as ich vnderſtonde, And  
of Treueres ſeynt Rup, come  
to this londe, for mysbilene  
among men, and oþur here-  
ſpe, That me clepede Arriane  
and alſo Delagre, And prech-  
ede the people, as neede was,  
and faire miracles wroughte,

Vol. I.

So that thurgh hem Cri-  
ſtendom to betere that was  
broughte. And hit a forcede  
hem 2. And wold nought  
lene for the kyng, 3. Hym  
his 4. The pro þis in 5.  
The ſenethe ȝer ther af-  
ter hit was, that hit 6.  
Deft 7.

Q

þe

þe þridde batail, þat heo smyte, was rygt<sup>1</sup> up the se,  
 þer cam þe kyng and ys oð, and þengist hym a ge.  
 þis was batail strong & new, and most yt was up twayne,  
 ȝif þe kyng and þengist, þat more so stronge beye.

Fuga  
Hengisti.

þe stronge byntes, þat heo smyten, grifliche yt was to se.

So þat þengist bi gan atte laste to se.

He, þat neuer er us slop, fowd þer ys were.

He slop in to þe ris of Tapet, he no werke a biðe no nor.

Ȝet eft heo sangten in þe se, and by ðis þere;

Ac þe Britones at eche tyme þe maistris a may bere.

<sup>2</sup> þe Serenes heo sope, þat heo mygte no long at stonde,

Ȝe þe kyng þat sende, þat þe<sup>3</sup> most wende hem to here sende.

þe heo were alle þenne & went, hers was sope & new,

þe kyng ȝef us mon grote giften, & ȝet lone to hem brow,

And let arore chieches up, þat þe schrewe a donu cote,

And bi gan to make a mari land, ac to lufe ȝifte yt in se.

þe Deuel hadde eny þer to, þat he lufeyneþe Cristendom,

And in ys<sup>4</sup> kepender herte ys manigþing he nom.

So þat<sup>5</sup> þe lufet monnen of goysen hit bi þengte,

And spofseþe þe gademen, and to<sup>6</sup> þe<sup>7</sup> he þe þengte.

<sup>7</sup> þis kyng þe he seþ þe Deþ, ys kyngtas he let of stonde,

And schenkeþe hem al þe may myder he schulde wende,

And ȝef hem gold<sup>8</sup> and siluer, and giften riche and gode,

And<sup>9</sup> and þem for þe lone of God, þat heo þem understode,

1. Upon. 2. The Serenes seþ, that they ys myghte a penk the Britones stonde.  
 3. Ȝifte. 4. Serenes madere's herte lone his in he nom. 5. The.

6. Deþ. 7. The kyng, the beþolde he had his kyngtas let of stonde, And schenkeþe hem of his stat, and of his luf to ende, And ȝef hem gold. 8. Audaces autem & bellificos juvenes,

And : stabbliche helde to gader, to lout þat dede,  
þat neuer þe lufur geynt yt hadde eft an hand.

• And gif þe myghte litte longer, þe sholde weste nought.

And wan it alen so was, þat þe was to depe of drege,  
þe ded, wan þe more ded, þat no frende þe dede nought,

And burte yt : þe hauene, wer þe geynt count,

In a temple swithe hepe, þat þe myght yt eft yde,

þat þe, for drede of þe dryte, myghte lene se.

• Hardi was to herte to hent, wen he wolde þat þe hadde

Drede of þe hote ded, : man þe o litte þe hadde.

þer was dede & forme y now, þe þe gods men was dede.

Ac noþeles þe no burte þe hert nought, as þe þe seif ded.

for þe herte yt nas bute a wille, ac, as þe þe by þe seif,

In London myd honow þe hadde an oþe drege.

**A**rtiger, þe lufur men, þe þe lene ded was,  
Wanderlong agyn to þe þe hendon; alas !

for lene, þe þe myghte a ded, attun þe herte þe lene,

þat þe þe to þe with : simple folk wende.

for þe dedde, gif þe hadde to gret power an hand,

þat þe schulde a rife shif by twene þe and þe lene.

juuēēs, quī ei in debellatiōi-  
bus suis astare solebant, horta-  
batur, ut pro patria pugnantes,  
eam ab hostium irruptione tueri  
niterentur *Galf. Mon.*

1. Stabelliche helde þem to  
hepe, forto lout þat lond, *Ar.*

2. And if þe langer myght  
hane lene, he wolde hane  
dradryght nought. But whan

hit thet to come were, he  
were to deth y brought, *Ar.*

3. At an hauene, þe the he-  
thene men by come, In a  
tumbe swithe an heigh, þat  
me myghte hit fer y se, *Ar.*

4. Hard *Ar.* 5. As they a lyne  
hadde *Ar.* 6. Ut iterum in Bri-  
taniā rediret; attamen priva-  
tim & cum paucis *Galf. Mon.*

Reditus  
Hengisti.

þo Hengist herðe telle, þat Mortimer was ded,  
 He gadereðe power & nom, and sons nom þs red.  
 And þre hundred þousend <sup>1</sup> men mid þ armod he nom,  
 And mid al þe atyl þer to in to þis lond he com.  
 þo þe kyng & þs conseil wiste of <sup>2</sup> þs grete compaigne,  
 heo bi þouhte & dradde sore, <sup>3</sup> þat" it were for tricherie.  
 And napeles he sende hem word a gen in þs selesne,  
 þat in gret loue hider he com, and no þoghte no bilanpe,  
 Bute for drede of Mortimer, <sup>4</sup> last he o line were,  
 Such folk myð hym he brouhte, for he hadde of hym fere.  
 Ac men he nas o line nogt, he bad þe kyng be hende,  
 þat he mygte myð þs folk <sup>5</sup> by þs lond wende,  
 Bi fore hym and þs conseil, <sup>6</sup> a certeyn tyme and place,  
<sup>7</sup> With any maner arme to fonde þs grace,  
 And þat <sup>8</sup> þo kyng of þys men at huld wuche he wolde,  
 And dryue ageyn ouer þe se þilke þat he wolde.  
 þe kyng was her myð wel ppayd, & sette hem þo day,  
 And al þs owe folk, þat heo come þe ðisse day of May  
 At Ambresburi, <sup>9</sup> for to of þis þing som' ende,  
 To at holde wuche he wolde of hem, & þe oþer agen sende.  
 þo þis folk in eþer syde & war was of þe day,  
 In a newe maner Hengist þougt þe kyng & þs <sup>10</sup> bi tray.

<p>1. Men yarmyd with hym          he nom, And with al hure          atyl to this lond he com.          When the kyng <i>Ar.</i> 2. This          comp. <i>Ar.</i> 3. Deest <i>Ar.</i> 4. Lest          he a lyue <i>Ar.</i> 5. Upon his  <i>Ar.</i> 6. In certeyn <i>Ar.</i> 7.</p>	<p>With oute eny manere armes          to fondy of his grace <i>Ar.</i>          8. The <i>Ar.</i> 9. For to speke          of this <i>Ar.</i> rectius. Et tamen          Auctori magis commodum, for          to do (i.e. to make.) 10. To          by traye <i>Ar.</i></p>
--	--

He

He hette al þe knyghtes, þat myȝt hym þer were,  
 þat in þe hole stillesliche ȝch of hem a knyȝt bere,  
 And, waiþ heo to <sup>1</sup> þis semble among þis Britones come,  
 þat ech of hem an heȝ mon in conseil to hym nome,  
 And swyþe faire speke with hym, & waiþ he þanne seȝde,  
 "Rymeth ȝoure saxes," <sup>2</sup> þat he a non mid þe dede  
 Drow ȝe knyȝt, and slow a non al an on ȝwar,  
 þat heo myȝt of þe herte men þat lond make bar.  
 þis word was wel vnderstonde, <sup>3</sup> so þat þo heo come  
 In eȝþer syde to Ambresbury, þo day þat heo nome,  
 And þe Brutones al simplliche in god ȝay, as heo vnderstode,  
 And þengist speke with þe kyng, as ȝt were for gode,  
 And þo he say ȝe time wel, he gan to grede anon,  
 "Rymeth ȝoure saxes," and ȝe men <sup>4</sup> þer with echon  
 Knyȝte heore longe knyues, and slowe faste to grounde,  
 So þat heo slow <sup>5</sup> four hundred & sixti in astonde  
 Of erles and of barons þe <sup>6</sup> herte þat þer were.  
 Alas! þe deal to þis lond, <sup>7</sup> much treson was þere  
 Now ne kouþe þe Britones non Engliȝch ȝ wȝs,  
 Ac þe Saxones speche it was, & þerw hem ȝ come ȝt ȝs.

Nymeth  
 owre  
 sexes.

<sup>1</sup> The assemble among the Brutones *Ar.* <sup>2</sup> Thanne anon with that like rede, Ech drough his knyȝt, & slough his felawe an bnywar, *Ar.* <sup>3</sup> And to hure day they come To Ambresbury on althur side, as they the day nome. Sym-  
 plliche the Brutones come for pees they vnderstode, *Ar.* <sup>4</sup> Tho anon echon haughte out hure longe knyues, and slough ther with to grounde, *Ar.* <sup>5</sup> Ita & Galf. Mon. Sed thre *Ar.* cum Aluredo Bev. <sup>6</sup> Neigh-  
 est *Ar.* <sup>7</sup> Such *Ar.*

þengist



Hengist anon : mid þe word : þe þeng þente fader.  
 To þe mantak, and anon to his for þen : cader.  
 So þat þis gader mæn þe gader mæn : as gader,  
 He fons, þat of fons, mid fons, þat fons,  
 And mid fons of þengs, fons of þen : fons,  
 Fens. And fons of þis fons mæn : fons of þe fons.

**E**del, sub of Gloucester, þat þe fons fons war,  
 Fens a fons fons, þat þe fons fons : fons.  
 þe fons fons fons fons fons fons fons,  
 Fens fons fons fons fons fons fons fons.  
 He fons fons fons fons fons fons fons,  
 þat he ne fons fons fons fons, or fons fons fons.  
 He ne fons fons fons fons, fons fons fons fons,  
 So þat þe fons fons fons fons, or fons fons fons,  
 Sixti mon fons fons, and fons fons fons,  
 And fons fons fons fons fons fons fons fons.  
 And þe fons fons, fons fons fons fons fons fons.  
 þe fons fons fons fons fons fons fons fons,  
 And fons fons fons fons fons fons fons fons,  
 Fens here fons fons fons fons, ner fons fons fons.  
 þe fons fons fons fons fons fons fons fons,  
 And fons fons, and fons fons, at þe fons fons.

1. With that moud the þeng. to hym caughte. <i>Ar.</i> 2. He ilio. Vorigernom accepit, & per pñliam detinuit <i>Gals. Mon.</i> 3. Haughte. <i>Ar.</i> 4. That fons worthe man fons, fons a trouchon on his hond that fons fons by cas, <i>Ar.</i> 5. The	6. Fens pro pñ nom in <i>Ar.</i> 7. And so they fons fons with hym, fons fons fons oth, fons fons fons fons fons, were fons fons fons fons fons. 8. Fons fons fons fons fons fons fons fons fons fons fons fons. And
---	---

And' seþþe' *Wortimer* bi *Walter* & oþer' grate' domowen,   
 And' robþes' ever' as þee' mende, & þow, & durbegret' me.   
 þeis' were' : lo ! oþer' faderes, of weyn' we' beþ' of y' come ;   
 þat' wold' such' traþion' habþeþ' þee' domowen y' nome.

**W**ortimer, : oþer' folke' þing, þat' lute' most' moþ' þe,   
 As' þe' it' hadde' of' served' wel' to' lute' habþe' of' me,   
 He' shew' þe' to' *Walter*, þider' he' com' fere,   
 He' askeþ' of' hym' consail'ere' most' weþ' to' done' :   
 As' eade' hym, for' as' catheþ' al' hym' bi' nome' more,   
 þat' he' in' som' shew' shude' a' castel' : bulde' þere,   
 þat' he' myȝte' shorliche' myȝte' hym' from' hym' shou.   
 þe' þing' : a' god' shude' þer' to' let' fere' out' a' men,   
 ' And' bigan' a' strong' castel' of' lym' and' off' shou,   
 And' of' quoynte' meþmen' let' hym' bryng' many' on.   
 ' þe' heo' bi' gonne' þis' castel,' ei' þat' heo' made' a' dug,   
 O' more, men' þei' come' þer' to, al' clene' þer' domowen' it' luy.

1. Deest. 2. Omit. 3. Oure olde fadres lo ! of whom we both y come, And with such trechourie this loud thug hit haneth ynome. Wortimer this luthur þing, þat litel worth was tho, As he hadde of served wel hadde muche wo, And was let go a lyne, To Walis he wende fere, And grede tho of his consailers, what best hym was to done. 4. Cum igitur tandem tantam cladem inperisset Vortigernus, secessit

in portus Cambrie, infans quid contra nefandam gentem ageret. Vocatis denique magis suis, consuluit illos, iussitque dicere quid faceret? &c. *Galf. Mon.* 5. Sholde ere, 6. A good place ther fore let. 7. And let byggyne a castel of strong lym and shou. 8. In Herefordshire up the mont of Eirik [*Eir Galf. Mon.*] sat high was this castel by gonwe, upon the water of Wygh. Tho hit byggonne the castel.

Ro

1 No beter sped heo, nere þat werk ner so strong.  
 þe kyng alsode at enchanteres, war on yt was plang.  
 2 þe enchanteres seide, þat me a childe sogte,  
 þat were y gete with oute fader, & þat me yt þider brogte,  
 And flow yt, and mid þe blode bysprenge wel here ston  
 And here mortar, & yt scholde stonde þenne anon.  
 3 þem þogte yt was euil y do, ac heo bi leuede yt nogt,  
 Inuencio þat in mony a contrey such a child nas-y sogt.  
 Merlini.  
 So þat some 4 þe messingeres to ðermyrðyn come,  
 And 5 þem children bi fors þe gate pleyede þe toke gome.  
 þe seide on to 6 an oþer, "Wærlyu, wat ys þe,  
 " 7 þou faderles schrewe wy 8 misdoðow me?  
 " For ich am of 9 kynges ycome, & þou nart not wep a sille.  
 " For þou 10 naddest ner no fader, þer fors hold þe stille.  
 þe þe messingeres herde þis, heo aspyte þere,  
 And asþede 11 at men aboute, wat þat child were?  
 12 þe us bad neuer fader, heo seyde, þat me mygte vnder-  
 stonde,  
 And ys moder a kynges's dogter was of þilke londe,


1. Euere more hit ferde  
 thus, nere that werk so strong  
 Ar. 2. The kynges's enchan-  
 tours seide hym tho, ther most  
 a child be sought, That hadde  
 neuere fader, and thader hit  
 moste be brought, And ðe that  
 child, and with the blood me  
 sholde bysprenge the ston Ar.  
 3. This thoughte hem won-  
 der for to do, & put they left  
 hit nought, Ar. 4. Of the Ar.

5. Of children in the strete  
 that playde they toke gome  
 Ar. 6. That oþer, "what  
 " myschaunce is the, Ar. 7.  
 Quid mecum contendis fatue?  
 Galf. Mon. 8. Wyldest thou  
 me? Ar. 9. God men pro  
 kynges in Ar. 10. Naddest  
 neuere fader, Ar. 11. Of the  
 men Ar. 12. Wæn seyde, þe  
 hadde fader non, as hit couthe  
 vnderstonde. His moder  
 kynges's

And woneðe at Seynt Petre's in a nonnery þere.  
 þo þe meſſageres herde þis, ſoyful ⁊ now þei were.  
 To þe baylifs of þe town haſtiliche heo wende,  
 þat he þe moder and þe ſone to þe kyng ſende.  
 þo me wiſte wat ⁊ heo were, me ne durſte with ſeggs it noȝt,  
 So þat þe moder ⁊ þe ſone to þe kyng were ⁊ broȝt.  
 þe kyng ⁊ had þe wommon ſegge ſoþ, ⁊ þat heo noþing lete,  
 þat he ne ſeiðe in ſoþneſſe, ho þat child bi gete.  
 "My lord ⁊ kyng," quoth þis oþer, "to þe ſoþe i ſeggs it þe,  
 "þat neuer mon ney me ⁊ com, þat yt bi get on me.  
 "Ac of e þing ich wot, man ich ofte was  
 "In chambre mid my ſelawes," þer com to me bi cas  
 "And ſwoȝe fair mon with aile, ⁊ bi clapte wel leſte,  
 "And ſemblant made fair ynow, ⁊ cuſts me wel ofte.  
 "þenne wende he forþ, as in ſchade, ⁊ nuſte how my ware.  
 "þo he hadde ⁊ ſiwed me longe in þis fare,

kynges Doughter was of  
 i. *Southwales*  
 Demecie londe, And duelleth  
 and [1. at] Seynt Petre's  
 church, as a nonne there *Ar.*  
 Adeo ut hab, ſive hab, pro bod  
 reponerem.

1. *They Ar.* 2. *þet Ar.*  
 3. for no thyng ſhold heo lete,  
 That heo ne told openlich,  
 who þat child was by þete  
*Ar.* perinde ac ſi who idem  
 quod how valeret. Illud tamen  
 noto, in margine (ab eadem au-  
 tem manu) voculam was adje-

ctam eſſe, hac nota (viz. *Ar.*) in  
 textu poſita. 4. *Kyng, ſeiðe*  
*heo tho, the ſoþe ych ſep the,*  
*Ar.* 5. *Cam, þat hit by gat*  
*in me. And of on thyng ich*  
*wote, whan ich al one was*  
*In priue chambres with*  
*oute ſelawes, Ar.* 6. *Folia octo*  
*in Ar. exciſa eſſe deprehendo,*  
*in quo proinde de ſequentibus,*  
*uſque ad hanc notam*   
 (quam in margine appoſuimus,  
 utpote ad quam iterum occurrit  
*Ar.*) longe ſuſius quam in Co-  
 dice Harleyno tractatum eſt.

"Alte lasse in forme of men ofte he lay bi me,  
 "Ac oþer men neuer non, to soþe y segge it þe.  
 þe þe kyng herde þis, gret wonder he þouhte þert.  
 He asched at is clerkes, 'wer yt to icne were?  
 þe clowþes fulde, þat yt is in philosophie y fonde,  
 þat þer beþ in þe eir an heȝ, fer fro þe grende,  
 As a maner goðes, wyȝtes as it be,  
 And me may þow ofte on erþe in wyde studeȝ y fr,  
 And ofte in monne's fourme wyȝmen heȝ cometh to,  
 And ofte in wyȝmen forme þei cometh to men al so,  
 þat men clepuþ eluene, and perantre in þis maner  
 On of hem is þis wommon bi get þis child her.  
 þe Myrilyn hadde al þis y herd, to þe kyng he seide:  
 "Sire kyng, weȝ dader þou myȝ moder & me bi fore þe kende?  
 "Myȝ enchanterȝ," quoth þe kyng, "me haddeþ þer to yend,  
 "þat a child, þat hadde no fader, bi fore me were y lad,  
 "And þat þe werȝ myȝ ys blod, þat we haddeþ on honde,  
 "Be sprenged þat falleþ adoun, & þenne yt schulde stonde.  
 "Lat þis enchanterȝ," quoth Myrilyn, "sone bi fore me bryȝe,  
 "And ich wol grene bi fore þe, þat heo telleþ at leȝȝe.  
 þis enchanterȝ were ybryȝt sone bi fore þe kyng.  
 "Wad segge ge," quoth Myrilyn, "of þis newe þȝȝe?  
 "Hadde ge, þat we hy sprengede þat morter mid myȝ blod.  
 "Hore me schal sone y se, þat no konne no god.

i.e. whether he might be-  
 lieve it? Nam, si id, quod mu-  
 lier dixerat, fieri potuisset, in Galf.  
 Mon. 2. Potest & interrogandi  
 nota distingui, nisi quod ple-  
 nam sane distinctionem in Co-

dice eximio (uteunque ad finem  
 manco), Galfredi Monmouthensis,  
 mihi donato ab amico illo eru-  
 ditissimo Richardo Gravesio de  
 Mickleton in agro Gloucestri-  
 ensi, reperiam. Sic enim ibi:  
 Landa-

"Seggeth me, gef þat ge konne, wat ys bi nepe þe gronde,

"þat makeþ þat þo fundement no skond none skonde.

þei ne konþe onswere nogt, as it ys y wyte.

"Lord kyng," quoth Merlyn, "gef þou wilt þe soþe wyte,

"Lat dolue vnder þe fundement, & þou schalt bi nepe synde

"I water pol, þat haþ y mad, þat þis werk ys bi hynde.

Þe dalf bi nepe, and fond þe water, as Merlyn hadde y seid.

"Wat segge ge maistres, "quod Merlyn, "þat geue þat colse  
red,

"To bi nyne blod & my lyf, wat ys bi nepe now here &

þe maistres sete stille y now, rygt as heo donmbe were.

"Dop out þis water," quoth Merlyn, " & wen it is a weye,

"ge schul bi nepe get y synde holwe stoness tweye,

"And in epper a dragon þer inne slepe faste.

Þe let sone out of þis pol þe water clene caste,

And fonde, as he hadde y seid. Men wondred ynow,

And pohte, þat ys monhede to Godhed drow.

As þis Wortiger and þis folk token gome,

Þei grete dragoness out of þis stoness come,

þat on was red, þe oþer wyte. þo gonne to syhte faste

Strong batail, and þe fupr out of þe mounþ caste.

So þat þe white was aboue, as þe folk y sepe,

And drof þe rede al abak out of þe put ney.

þe rede, as for forinesse, by turnede hym atten ende,

And asailede þe wyte, & made hym abak wende.

As þis dragoness forhte þas, þe kyngs hotte Merlyn þere,

forte segge, gef he couþe, wat þe tokonyng were.

Pugna  
draco-  
num.

*Landavistis, in sanguis meum diffun-* | *opus constaret. Sed dicite michi quid*  
*deretur in cementum, & quasi illico* | *sub fundamento laus?*

R 2

¶

Prophecia Merlyn gan to wepe þo, and bi gan ȝs prophecie :

Merlini. "Hwey!" he seide, "þe rede dragon! for ȝs ende ȝynneþ to hȝe,  
 "And þe whiȝte dragon schal in to ȝs holes wende,  
 "þat bi tokeneþ þe Saxones, þat þou let astur sende.  
 "þe rede bi tokeneþ þe Britones, and ȝoure kynde þat is,  
 "þat þe Saxones schulleþ get ouer come, and here londe  
 wyune ȝwis.

"Grote matres worþeþ get rede of monne's blode,  
 "Cristendom worþeþ cast a down, & chirchon þat er stode.  
 "He get schal þe Britones som tyme ageyn stonde,  
 "for þe bor of Cornewail schal helpe þis londe,  
 "And þe Saxnes hedes vnder set trede.  
 "Hony ples wyune he schal, loud and oþer stude  
 "Lord he worþ of france, & Rome schal þȝs turnhede  
 "Doute, & quake herfore, ac ȝs endyng worþ in drede.  
 "þat folk schal euer speke of hym, and ȝs noble dede  
 "Worþ to hym a swete mate, þat it con a rede.  
 "Sþe, þat comeþ astur hym, schulleþ holde þe seynoris.  
 He astur hem schal aryle a worm of Germanye,  
 And þe 3 se wold hym schal brynge by, 4 & þanne religion  
 And holychirche estone worþeþ brogt al a don.  
 Change worþ of bishoprices, & þe Digne sege ȝ wys  
 Worþeþ brogt to Canterbury, þat at London now ȝs.

1. In ore populorum celebra-  
 bitur, & actus ejus cibus erit  
 narrantibus *Galf. Mon.* 2. Sex  
 posteri ejus sequentur sceptrum,  
 sed post ipsos exsurgit Germa-  
 nicus vermis, *Galf. Mon.* 3. E-

quoreus lupus *Galf. Mon.* 4. De-  
 lebitur item religio, & transmu-  
 tatio primarum sedium fiet.  
 Dignitas Londoniæ adornabit  
 Doroberniam *Galf. Mon.*



**W** 31 þis bi fel asturward, as ge schul 2 þ hure,  
 3 þo Cornwalle's ber, of wam he spek, þat" was kyng Ar-  
 thure,

þat so wel huld w þis lond, and ys sen ouer com,

4 þat þoru ys nobley wam mony a kyndom.

Of prophete of Merlyn we ne mow telle no more,  
 for it is derk to symple men, bute me were þe bet in lore.

Gret wonder hadde þat folk of þe wysdam, þat he seyde,

Of þing, þat to come was, and of his zong hede.

þe kyng bed þo Merlyn, þat he hym tolde an dede,

In wat deþ he scholde deye, & Merlyn þis hym seyde.

"1 Constantyne's sones 6 fur fle, gef þou mygt.

"7 for heo garkeþ here schipes toward þi lond rygt.

"Heo bileneþ þat lond of Armore," þat þo lasse Bretoun ys.

"Heore seyles heo spredeþ in þe se, & hyder comeþ 2 wis.

"þe Saxones heo walleþ a saille, & to gronde brynge,

"3 Ic heo wille þe in þin owne tour fle" atte bigynnyngs.

"4 þoru þi traillon inþer mon heor fader þou slowe.

"5 And" þoru þi trayfon Saxones 11 into þis lond þou drowe.

"þou bede hem forto helpe þe, ac to þin wo heo deþ 2 come.

"Twel forwes 12 þe deþ w þou on, & þe ne wox þowþer bi noms.

1. Much of this *Ar.* 2. Hure,  
 as of the Cornysch boor, that  
*Ar.* 3. F. pro. 4. And thurgh  
 his grete nobleys *Ar.* 5. Con-  
 stantyne's sones fur *Ar.* 6.  
 Ignem filiorum Constantini dis-  
 fuge, si diffugere ualueris *Galf.*  
*Mon.* 7. for hure naneþe  
 hi arayth hiderward nough  
 rygt. They leneth the londe  
 of Armoryk, *Ar.* 8. And the

fle in thyu owen tour *Ar.*  
 9. Hure fader and hure bro-  
 ther eke purgh thi treson  
 men slowe *Ar.* 10. Deest *Ar.*  
 11. Ferst in to this lond  
 drowe *Ar.* 12. The cometh  
 an honde, & neither the ne  
 worth by noms. The Sax-  
 ones nough destropeþ thy  
 lond in the an ende. The  
 two *Ar.*

"for



"for : þe Saxones dedruȝeþ þi land in to þe on ende.  
 "þe twel" beþren in þe oþer half : by þi land wol wende,  
 "To awreke on þe here þer fader deþ, þe ne tyd us þays.  
 "for þes welley to starpe myȝe attis hage of Cottoners.  
 "And wen þengis ys gylmes, þurely woteþ þing.  
 "þays þe mole þayge agere, & : chirchen þornalle þing.  
 "þeȝnes þe wep attis ende, and astur þem an halle  
 "þis twerþe ſchal þane þe ſynners, þat weȝnes woteþ attis  
 iſte.  
 "So gret trefen woteþ among þem, þat astur þe ſchal come,  
 & þe Conſtable's her þem ſchal chaſte ſome.

**A** Wrold & Witer, þe twel beþren corteyn,  
 With gret power a morne arisede at Cottoners.  
 þe þe tyȝing ſprong, þat þes comen attelaste,  
 þe Brutenes, þat were helþen, come aboute þem faſte,  
 þat were to ſpede hys & hers, þes were þe glad ynowe,  
 þat folk al be of helþe chirche aboute þem faſte drowe.  
 þer þes made þurely þing, & þomage þem vnde echon,  
 And beþe, þat þes moſte by þe Saxones wende anon.  
 þe þe þing þurely þer agere gan ſpeke.  
 þer þe þogte on Wirtiger ys fader ſtut awreke.

1. Hinc enim regnum tuum  
 devaſtant Saxones, &c. *Galf.*  
*Ann.* 2. Up the molleþ wende,  
 To a wrethe hys fader deþ,  
 the ne tydeth no þays  
 3. Chirchen *Ann.* 4. But  
 thurgh the door of Corne-

walle ſhal wreth of hys be  
 nome *Ann.* 5. The folk eke of  
 holy *Ann.* 6. Conſilled hym  
 on the Saxones, forto weȝne  
 anon *Ann.* 7. To ſpeke, And  
 wylned byon Wirtiger his  
 fader *Ann.*

for

1 'For þu herte man to greet for þu liden deþ þere,  
 þat he ne myȝt glad be, as he anoreþe were.  
 Mortiger ⁊ þu ⁊ þowse, for speche of hyne gunt,  
 3 'To an castel in Farchensfeld, in þe Eskende of Wallia,  
 A boue þe water of Wyte, up an hyl on hery.  
 þe byng Murcl þider com, ⁊ þat castel ⁊ bery.  
 'To Gildolf, erl of Gloucestre, he spak in þis manere:  
 "4 Sire noble erl myn god gyfte of þis castel here,  
 'Were he name þe myn Mortiger wyte fro þe deþe,  
 "þat ich in þu enyemeth my lende na make a scheppe,  
 "þat þu aller men worst, þat me ever lye with þu.  
 "þe deþ ne myȝte be to myn, þat he schalde in lye.  
 "For my liden Constance fast þe bi tynge souȝt,  
 "þat londe þyn ⁊ al þat lond from þe ⁊ þis man ⁊ myn.  
 "þeþþe my broþer 'Constance he bryȝte þyn to þynge:  
 "for he wolde þyn bi state, and to þeþe bryȝte.

1. Adeo enim propter productionem patri illatam doluerat, quod nil agere videretur, nisi ipsum prius vindicaret *Galsfr. Mem. 2. 1248 A. 3.* *To Ge-  
nes castel in Ewehne, in the  
on ende of Wyke, Up on  
hille, that Wyke hight, þis  
castel hode sat he, In the  
kyre of Wergyn [Weryng-  
shireshire, i. Weymouthshire, in  
margine] by the water of  
Wye. The kyng tho he thur-  
der com, spake in this ma-  
ner to Edegh, Erl of Glou-  
cestre. Durst he this castel here,*

Wher may hit then verteger  
 wylly from his deth. And hit  
 ich myghte in his body make  
 my body a deth. He is to me  
 more now to loken on with  
 eye, then deth no myghte to  
 lather be pan he shoulde beye  
 A. 4. Respicite, dux mobilis,  
 hujus urbis inuicem, utrum po-  
 terint Vorteginnam protegere,  
 quin gladii mei mucronem ipse  
 infra viscera ipsius recondam, &c.  
 Gulfr. Ann. 5. Dices A. 6.  
 Constant he made to behyng:  
 A.

**"END**

"And seþþe, þoru ȝu tricheſie þo þe hadde þis lond on hond,  
 "He mængeþe þe iuþer ȝayns among ' ȝou in þis londe,  
 " ' forte halde me & myn broþer out of oure eritage.  
 " ' Ac oure Lord haþ vp ȝu heued ybrogȝt ȝu owne outrage.  
 " For þe iuþer Saxones vnder ȝete ȝu iuþer dede,  
 " Heo by nome hym ȝu kyndom, ' & þat was a ryȝtful dede.  
 " Ac of o þing ich hadde deol, þat þis ȝayns, þat iuþer beþ,  
 " þat he broȝte firſt to londe, as ȝe alle ȝ ſep,  
 " þe noble men of þis lond þus to ſchame broȝte,  
 " And þis lond, þat was riché, waſkede al to nogte,  
 " And al holy chirche & Criſtendom habbeþ ȝ broȝt to grounde  
 " fram þat ' o ſe to þat oþer, ' a las ! þilke ſtonde !  
 " Now ȝe hynde men of þis lond ' cuþeþ ȝoure monþede.  
 " And awrekeþ ȝou of þis iuþer men, þoru wam com þis  
 wrechedþede ;  
 " ' And ſeþþe turne we oure hond vp oure oþer ſon,  
 " And ' deliquere þis lond of þe iuþer men echon.  
 10 þis folk myd god herte þis caſtel a ſailede.  
 Ac for þe caſtel was ſtrong, here wille þo hem ſaylede.

1. The Criſtenmen pro ȝou  
 in *Ar.* 2. To pro forte in *Ar.*  
 3. But God on his owene  
 hede hath touned his outrage.  
 The Saxones whan hi vn-  
 derſode of his iuþer dede,  
*Ar.* 4. Thurȝ gile & fail-  
 hede. Ac of one thyng *Ar.* Sed  
*Galf. Mem.* plane ut Codex *Har-*  
*leyanus.* Sic enim ille : " Nam ut  
 " nequitiam ipsius compererunt  
 " Saxones, eiecerunt illum ex

" regno, quod neminem pigere  
 " debeat. 5. On ſes *Ar.* 6. A-  
 las ! the harde ſtonde ! *Ar.*  
 7. Kyeth þour manþede *Ar.*  
 8. Deinde vertamus arma in ho-  
 ſtes imminentes, &c. *Galf. Mem.*  
 9. Deliquere we this lond of  
 iuþer *Ar.* 10. The folk with  
 good herte tho this caſtel  
 gonne aſaile. And for the ca-  
 ſtel was ſo ſtrong, whan wil  
 duðe hem ſaile, With queſ-  
 tiſe

Ȕþeȝ quereȝ heȝ caſten ſuȝr, & barnde þat caſtel mēthens,  
 And þe kyng Mortiger was to dounȝ y barnd þer tene.  
 And þe myȝte he ſpake ſay, þat Ȕþerlyȝ hym et ſeȝe,  
 þat ' heo Conſtantyne's ſones ſuȝr ſchulde ſe & ȝeȝe.  
 þe was þenglyſt ſore adrad of kyng Durclȝ þer,  
 And nemeȝche ſer þe noble ion, ' þat he þerde of hym et.  
 For þer was in non ende of France, ny in no lond þer a bonte,  
 þat in ſanctes & toȝnemens eȝe mon ȝan hym bonte.  
 For þer was ſo god knyȝt non nower a bonte France,  
 þat in ſanctes ſchulde at ſitte þe ȝent of ȝe lance,  
 þat he ' no ſchulde a doun eȝer ȝe þoon eȝer þeȝe anon,  
 Ȕþer þe lances ſchulde breȝe in ȝeȝen many on.  
 þer ſore þenglyſt man's doun to mete wȝth ȝe lances,  
 Ouer þombes he ſley a non, to myȝte hym from melleȝance;  
 And caſtles and cytees a ſoreȝe in þe þerȝ,  
 ' And in Scotland alſo; for þiȝke londen were  
 Ȕ lȝper recet euer a ȝeyȝe Engelande.  
 For eȝe þat wolde hiden harm, þer myȝte at ſtande.  
 ' þe Durclȝ wiȝe, þat heȝ were y ſlowe to þurne,  
 He was glad, þat heȝ were a ſord, & þeȝte he þem þurne."

riſe þi caſte ſure, and brende  
 hit wȝth ȝynne, And Mortig-  
 er alſo dounȝ brende þer  
 wȝth ȝyne *Ar.*

1. Conſtantyne's ſones ſuȝr  
 he ſholde ſe *Ar.* 2. That  
 men of hym dore *Ar.* 3. Tour-  
 nementȝ me no hadde of hym  
 ȝet dore *Ar.* 4. Nam ſi  
 congreſſum faciliſet, vel hoſtem  
 ab equo proſtraheret, vel haſtam

in fruſta confringeret *Galf. Ann.* 5. Ut ſuȝr Scotland,  
 þer þiſ recetȝ were. For  
 þer a lȝþere recetȝ þaȝ he  
 euer to Engelande. Ȕ þat  
 þiſ doreȝe harme, þer  
 þiſ mowȝe aſtonde *Ar.* 6.  
 Cumque id Aurelio nuntiatum  
 fuiſſet, audacior effectus, ſpam  
 victoriȝ recepit *Galf. Ann.* Ȕ  
 in Cod. *Ar.* The kyng Durclȝ

He garhede ys oß, & shwede astur hem sake flory,  
 And þo he sey þe contreris, as he passede forþ,  
 Destruyde & bare in eche half, gret deol he made þere,  
 And nameliche for churches, þat y cast to gronde were.  
 ' He bi het God almyghty, gef he sende hym þo ouer hond,  
 To rere up agyn þe churches a bonte into al þat lond.  
 þo þengist wiste, þat ' heo come toward Scotland,  
 ' He garhede ys oß sake, ageyn hem for to stonde.

**E**ldol, erl of Gloucestre, as he wende in þis ferhede  
 Toward þe batail, to þe kyng þese wordes he seyde :  
 " Sire kyng, for al þe dages, þat ich hane on erþe y go,  
 " O day me wolde þinke ynow to ' lēbe with oute mo,  
 " þat ich þe luper þengist in Batail mygte mete,  
 " For on of us schalbe deys er we ' þat batail lete.  
 " So ' muche for ich habbe in myn herte, man y þer on  
 þenche,  
 " ' þou come to make payn, of ys luper wrenche,

He hadde word, the Saxones  
 were þlows, Wel the more  
 was his joye, the lasse was  
 his howe.

1. He made to God his a-  
 bowe, to hane the heigher  
 honde, *Ar.* 2. He *Ar.* 3. He  
 gan sake to greithi his oße,  
 agen hym forto stonde. El-  
 dolf, erl of Gloucestre, that  
 wende in compagne With the  
 kyng thuderward, gan to hym  
 speke an hie : " Sire kyng,  
 he seide, alle deies þat y hane  
 go *Ar.* 4. Lyue *Ar.* 5. To

pro þat in *Ar.* 6. Reminiscor  
 namque diei, qua convenimus  
 quasi pacem habituri. Cumque  
 & de concordia ageretur, prodi-  
 dit omnes qui aderant, & cum  
 cultris interfecit, præter me so-  
 lum, qui reperto palo evasi. Suc-  
 cubuerunt eadem die cccc. lxxx.  
 barones ac consules, qui omnes  
 inermes advenerant *Galsf. Ann.*  
 7. When we come to make  
 pees, of his lither wrenche,  
 That of Eries and Barons,  
 that *Ar.*

" þat

"pat of oure esles and barnes, pat so noblomen were,  
 "four hundred & four scores 1 mid trefon he slow here,  
 "Of hem pat 2 were al on war, samith outh armour were also.  
 "Now God leue, pat he wrecche þer of be twene us now be do.  
 þe kyng Aurely ys felawes comforted wel to fyghte,  
 And al ys hope in 3 Godesone dade & al ys myghte.  
 As þe oft in eþer syde to 4 þis bataill drow,  
 heo come & metten baldeliche mid god ernest y now.  
 heo smyten harde & made mony a strong wounde.  
 heo schedde blod and slowe in cyþer syde to grounde.  
 Aurell comfortede þe Cristenemen a bonte,  
 And þengist in his 5 half þe heþene menne's route.  
 He þe Cristene, þern Gode's grace, hadde þe beter ende,  
 So pat toward 6 Corneberw þe heþene gonne wende,  
 7 And þo Cristene astur, & to grounde brogte y nowe.  
 for al þat heo myghte of take, heo nome oþer slowe.  
 þo þengist y sey þe Cristene men hym slowe so faste,  
 And þat he make nede turne ageyn, oþer depe atte laste,  
 He bi gan to ordeyne ys folk, & to bataill agen drow,  
 8 And in cyþer syde, as heo dade er, to grounde me slow,  
 þat þe cry of þe folk, þat me slow, þe oþere brogte in drede.  
 Atte laste þe heþene men bi gonne hem to sprede.

1. With *vr*. 2. Were an  
 bynwar, and unarmed also.  
 God leue that hit mote be  
 wreke by twyhte vs two. The  
 kyng Aurelie *vr*. 3. Gode's  
 lone *vr*. 4. The pro this in  
*vr*. 5. Half also the heþene  
 of his route *vr*. 6. Cones-

burgh *vr*. 7. The Cristene  
 slowede after faste, & broughto  
 to grounde y now *vr*. 8. Þu  
 aither syde, as hit dade er,  
 muche folk me slough. The  
 cry of folk, þat was a slawe,  
 the other *vr*.

þe Crisoun were þe boldere, ' þe byug fide sette  
 forte camfette þu men, and slow al þat þe mette.  
 Edel, out of Gloucestre, al so in þyn fyde  
 ' Wende, and kepte her and þer, and slow a bonte wyde.  
 And muche þyn entente was ' þengist forte mete.  
 ' Woe mette hem atte laste, er þoo þe batail lete.  
 Om! Lord! þe byugtes stronge, þat were bi trewe hem þere,  
 ' þat fuge smot out of þat yre, bytyng as yt were.  
 So strong bytyng þe þe þe were, ' e here herte gret was.  
 Gortois, erl of Cornuall, ' þer forþ com ducas.  
 As sone as Edel hem seye, þu hette byward brow:  
 þengist by þe helme by neþe þe herte felle ynowg,  
 And myd stronge þyn brow a doun, e lowde bi gan to grede,  
 " Crisounen slytþ now, of noþing ge ne drede.  
 " God me þat my wille e geue; for ich þyn hadde nowþe,  
 " þyn þat made al þis wo bi þer e eke by souþe.  
 " Cuþeþ now, þat ge ben men; for þe maistry al oure ys.  
 ' þe Crisounen men to grounde slow, þo ' þoo herde þin.  
 ' Woe no synce neuer mo, ar þe oþer were at grounde.  
 Some slowe to þakkes and to woden, þat þen soude.  
 Ac Om, þengiste's sone, and þu powet atte laste  
 ' Of scapede to Cornuall, e strongede þe toun laste.

1. And the hethene felle of  
 sette, And felle confortide his  
 men to fle ake that hit mette  
 2. And, e kept her and  
 ther all a bonte wide 3.  
 With þengist 4. So at  
 last to geuere hit mette, and  
 oþer batailles lete. Woude  
 stronge were the strokes, that

5. The fure smot out of  
 the ire, 6. And the herte so  
 gret was 7. By side hem  
 com by cas 8. The Cris-  
 oune to grounde 9. Will  
 10. And neuer wolde  
 fyue, er the oþer were to  
 grounde 11. Whapide in  
 to Ebratwike,

þengist

Hengist was a king of Rome, and of hisde kinde.

So his bataill was of do, his Britones attelaße  
Frome þe town of Cornborn, and þer thus hadde rest  
þre dayes and þre nyght, forto bi þenche here best.

þe kyng lette þe wyle burys þe dede men þere,  
And do vnder lechecraft hem, þat of wounded were.

þe kyng lette dryng þer astur Hengist bi soðe hym lone,  
And aschode at erles & barones, wat were mid hym to done  
Eldad, þat bischop of Gloucestre was.

And þe cri þe brother Eldad, was þer bi cas.

So þe segh Hengist stonde bi fore þe kyng þere,

He stod by & seide þe verdyt by fore alle oþers þat þer were.

"Get oþer," he seide, "þat þer beþ hym wel deliuered echone,

"To smale peson ich hym wolde to hake alone.

"For ich wolde þe prophete wyle Samuel vnderstonde,

"þat þo he hadde þe lufur kyng Agag vnderhonde,"

1. These. 2. Concl-  
burgh. 3. Myght, as hem  
thought beste. 4. Thulke  
while the deed bury there,  
And dude tho to lechecraft,  
that of wounded were.  
5. The kyng let Hengist af-  
terward be brought to fore  
hym lone, And asode of his  
Barones, best what was of  
hym to done. 6. Eldad,  
7. The was, And the  
forthe brother Eldad, ther  
was eke by cas. Eldad seide  
the verdyt for alle that ther  
were, When he segh Hengist  
sonde byfore the kyng there.

"Theigh alle," he seide, "that  
here beþ hym wolde dely-  
uere echon, To smale peson  
alto hake ich hym wolde a-  
lone. For of prophete Samu-  
el ich wolde vnderstonde,  
That Agag the lufur kyng  
hadde vnder hond. 8. In-  
sequeretur namque prophetam Sa-  
muelelem, qui cum Agag regem  
Amalech in potestatem retin-  
isset, concidit illum in frustra  
dicens, "Sicut fecisti matres  
"sine liberis, sic faciam hodie  
"matrem tuam sine liberis inter  
"mulieres. Galsfr. Mon.

"He



"He lette hym hewe to peles, and also he seide,  
 "As þou hast y mad mony ' wylf deoful lyl to lede,  
 "And mony child with oute fader, & mony wif lordles,  
 "' Al so sch wole make to day þine sones faderles.  
 "Al so ' doþ bi þis mon, þat so muche wo haþ y do,  
 "So mony child mad faderles, bygyteþ hym al so.  
 þis word was for dom yholde, þe erl Eldel hym drom,  
 And ladde hym with oute þe town ' mid god herte y now;  
 And smot of hys hed, þat so muche wo hadde y do.  
 þe was mony mon a wreke, and mony mon glad al so.  
 þis was euens fourty yer, þat he hadde þis dom,  
 After þat ' he mid his folc to þis land com.  
 þe wende þe kyng myd god oit to Euerwik anon,  
 for to sle ' Hengist'sone, and ys men echon.  
 þe Duta hit onderstod, þat heo comyng were,  
 He sei wel, þat ' power nas noȝt agern hem þere.  
 In ' raketyne of yre in hys hond he nom,  
 And myd þe dexte of ys men ' to þe kyng he com.  
 "Sire," he seide, "myne Godes al ouer come beþ;  
 "And þi<sup>10</sup> Lord ys God al one, as we to soþe seþ.

1. A wif *Ar.* 2. So wole  
 y make to day the sone fader-  
 les *Ar.* 3. Do *Ar.* 4. With  
 gret site y now, *Ar.* 5. He  
 ferst with his *Ar.* 6. Hen-  
 giste's sone, *Ar.* 7. His pow-  
 er was nought a yen so many  
 there. A gret cheyne of iren  
*Ar.* 8. Communicator itaque

consilio, egressus est cum nobi-  
 lioribus qui secum aderant, ge-  
 stans catenam in manu, & sabu-  
 lonem in capite, & sese regi in  
 hæc verba præsentavit *Galf.*  
*Mon.* 9. A ys the kyng com  
*Ar.* 10. God is Lord al one,  
 as we alle y seþ, *Ar.*

"þat

" þat þus noble men to þyn wille brynges in þis manere.  
 " 1 þer fore vs with 2 veteren vnderfong now here.  
 " 3 þat to eche torment, þat ge wole vs, gare we beþ in þis  
 place,  
 " Bute þou wole of vs here pyte habbe and grace.  
 þe kyng hadde rewepe 4 of hem, & ys conseil hym gef þo,  
 Rom of hem sikernesse to ys þral ener mo"  
 And of eche þat with hym was, and in gret destresse,  
 Bi syde Scotlond hem gef a place, al in wildernesse,  
 To wone inne in þraldam vnder þe kyng ener mo.  
 þese, and many oþere, þat y flowe were þo,  
 5 sei, þat þe kyng hadde such mercy hem do,  
 To hym heo wende as prisenen, and 6 bedom mercy also.  
 þe kyng al inon maner hem gef 6 mercy and grace,  
 To wone al in 7 þralhede in þike wyde place,  
 8 To wrope hele al þis lond was he so myde þo.  
 For þe schremes dade to þis lond seþþe wel muche wo.  
 þo al þis was y do, þe kyng, at he wende,  
 Let ordeyne in Euerwik þis lond for to amende,  
 And lette rere vp chirches in al þe lond a bowte,  
 And bischopes dade in heore power, þat 9 er were al withoute.

1. Accipe ergo nos & catenam  
 istam, & nisi misericordiam ha-  
 bueris, habere nos ligatos, & ad  
 quodlibet supplicium volunta-  
 rie paratos *Galf. Mon.* 2. *Thes*  
*eteres* 3. To (omisso  
 þat) which torment though  
 wilt vs do, we beth reddy in  
 this place, But though wilt  
 vs pyte do, or any other grace

*Ar.* 4. Of hym, as þis cons-  
 sail gaf hym tho, And sikern-  
 nesse nam of hym, to serue  
 hym enere mo *Ar.* 5. *Mercy*  
 bede also *Ar.* 6. *Pyte* *Ar.*  
 7. *Thraldom* *Ar.* 8. *To wro-*  
*therhele* to al this lond, that  
 he myde was tho. For they  
 dade to al this lond sathe  
 muche wo *Ar.* 9. *Erft* *Ar.*  
 Thus

After that tyme, þat he hadde y ordeyned his,  
 To London he wende, for to amende þat þer was amys.  
 He let amende al þe town of houses þat were a domus,  
 And in þe contrey churches let rewe, and in þe toun.  
 Gode lawes, þat were slep, newe he lette make.  
 London, þat was erst by name, he rygt eft he lette take.  
 But ys wille al clene was yn leuþ forto amende.  
 And eftur al þis to Wyndesore from London he wende,  
 For to amende þilke syde, & so & so to Salusbury.  
 And so, for to amende more, to þe domus of Ambresbury.  
 þe he com to þat place, þat þe heye men inne laye,  
 þat þengist myd ys seyn let fle and by traye,  
 Of þe moyses he hadde deed, & bi gan to wepe sore,  
 He þoghte in his herte, how he myghte þe place worship.  
 For þer lay so gode men, yt was wel ydo,  
 þat, for to defende þat land, y moystred were so.  
 Wyn conseil he tok þe, how he myght make þere  
 Som werk, in honoure of hem, þat euer in mynde were.  
 þe erchbisshop of Walis seide ys anys,  
 "Sire," he seide, "get þer ys any mon so wys,

- |                              |                        |                                  |
|------------------------------|------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1. Will.                     | 2. All this.           | by this land for to amende       |
| 3. Will.                     | 4. Things that         | 9. City, and so to Salusbury.    |
| were amys.                   | And let amende         | 10. Count.                       |
| at the town.                 | 5. Churches            | 11. Worships more.               |
| he orde in contreye fram     | 6. And London.         | 12. Wyn thoughte it wel          |
| toun to toun.                | 7. Er                  | to do, by cause, in feult of the |
| Olde lawes,                  | 8. To the ryght heires | land, they were amothered        |
| And London.                  | 9. That his name       | so.                              |
| 10. To the ryght heires      | 11. That his name      | 13. That his name                |
| take. His wille was al clene |                        | more after in mynde were         |

"1 þat best red þe can rede, Merlyn þat ys.  
 For þer wys in þi kyndem is wys mon y wys,  
 To segge soþ of þinges, þat to comene beþ.  
 2 He of quoyntes for to rede, as we al day y seþ.  
 Merlyn was þo in Walis. he was sone of sogt  
 Wyrd messingeres, & y soude, & to þe kyng y broȝt.  
 The kyng made hym soþe ynow, & amon hem alle  
 Bed hym telle of som 3 þing, þat hym schulde bi falle.  
 "Sire kyng," quoth Merlyn þo, "suche þinges y wys  
 "He beþ for to schewe noȝt, but wen gret nede ys.  
 "For 4 gef ich selde in bismare, oþer bute yt ned wers,  
 "Hout from me 5 he" wolde wende þe Gost, þat doþ me lere.  
 6 þe kyng, þo non oþer nas, bod hym som quoyntyfe  
 Bi þenke aboute 7 þilke cors, þat so noble were and wys.  
 "Sire kyng," quoth Merlyn þo, "gef þou wilt here caste;  
 "In 8 þe" honour of hem, a werk þat ener schal y laste,  
 "To þe 9 hul of Kylar send in to Erlond  
 "10 Wilt þe noble stoness, þat þer habbet lenge y stonde,  
 "þat was þe treche of geandess, for a quoynte werk þer ys  
 "Of stoness al wyþ art y mad, in þe world such non ys.

Kylar.

1. That best red can ther  
 of rede, Merlyn hit is *Ar.*  
 2. Quippe non existimo, alterum  
 in regno tuo esse, cui sit clarius  
 ingenium, live in futuris dicen-  
 dis, live in operationibus ma-  
 chinandis *Galf. Mon.* 3. He of  
 quoynte thynges for to rede,  
*Ar.* 4. Among *Ar.* 5. Thynges,  
*Ar.* 6. Nam si ea in derisionem  
 live vanitatem proferrem, tace-  
 ret spiritus, qui me docet, &  
 Vol. I.

cum opus superveniret, recede-  
 ret *Galf. Mon.* 7. Deest *Ar.*  
 8. The kyng, the other [f.  
 tho non other] myghte be, bad  
 hym *Ar.* 9. Thulke bodies,  
*Ar.* 10. Deest *Ar.* 11. Wille  
 of Kyldar *Ar.* 12. After stoness  
 noble and gode, that lenge  
 han ther stonde, That was  
 carole of Geantz, for quoynte  
 werk hit is *Ar.*

T

"1 He

"**1** He þer nys noþing, þat ma scholde : myd strength a down  
caste.

"**2** Stode heo here, as hea doþ here, ' oven e malhe lath.  
þe kyng ' foundel to lath, þe he herde þis tale.

"**3** ' How myght,' he segh, " luche stonow, so gret e so sale,

"**4** ' Be þ' best of so fet lond : e get mact of more.

"**5** He wolde wene, þat in þis lond na ðon to worche wete.

"**6** ' Stre kyng,' quoth Merlyn, " as make nyst an ghel such  
lyghing.

"**7** For yt nys an ghel nyst, þat ich telle þis tynge.

"**8** For in þe sarreste lunde of ðe ðe geanden while sette

"**9** þis stonow for medycine, e in Prioud hem sette.

"**10** ' While hea wonden in Prioud, to make here hapen here.

"**11** þer under larto heht, wen þei syh mere.

"**12** For : hea wolde þe stonow walsch, e þer inne bape y mact.

"**13** For as na ðon þer among, þat of gret vertu nys.

**1.** He ther is nothing, that  
hem sholde with strength a  
Down caste *Ar.* **2.** Grandes  
sunt lapides, nec est aliquis cujus  
virtuti cedant. Qui si eo modo,  
qua ibi positi sunt, circa plateam  
locabantur, stabant in æternum  
*Galf. Ann.* **3.** Enere hit molde  
e lath *Ar.* **4.** He gon foundel  
to lath *Ar.* **5.** While *Ar.*  
**6.** Wryng fro so fette lond  
And the mact more, that men  
molde wene in þis *Ar.* **7.**  
" Stre," quoth Merlyn, " as  
" to make nought an ghel such  
" lyghing. For him in an

ghel nought, that e telle of  
this thyng *Ar.* Ad hæc Mer-  
linus : " No moveas rex vanum  
" risum, quia hæc absque vani-  
" tate profero *Galf. Ann.* **8.**  
" The while hit monow on þe  
lunde, to make hem buthen  
there, *Ar.* **9.** Lavabant namque  
lapides, & infra balnea disun-  
debant, unde ægroti curabantur.  
Miscabant etiam cum herbarum  
confessionibus, unde vulnera  
sanabantur. Non est ibi lapis, qui  
medicamento careat *Galf. Ann.*  
**10.** For ther in *Ar.*

þe

þe kyng and þe conseil : rabbe þe honer forre sette,  
 And with gret power of bataill, get any men here leste.  
 After, (þe kyng's wyse,) þat Ambrose sette al so,  
 In another maner name, þe chesse was þe to,  
 And attene poustant men, þis dede forre do,  
 And Merlyn, for his "quodhissit," þider wende al so.  
 "Gyngnash was þis kyng of Irlonde.  
 þo me tolde hym, þat þis Britones y come wote to yrlonde,  
 Aȝen hem he wote and on myd : god power knowy.  
 þo me told him here stonde, he aȝente and lowy.  
 "And wonder," he seyd, "þan Witeles al day go to stonde,  
 " "Was he, þat þe tunc he, such a folow he stonde.  
 " "We he þe herd rich folwe, wot þe he in non ende  
 " Stones, þe þat aȝes do heo hyder sende :  
 " Armeþ how " stite now, and wyteþ howe lowe.  
 " For " heo schal not habbe here no stow, wile ich may  
 weste myn hond.

After and þe compaigne redi aȝen hem were,  
 And a strong bataill aȝte, & þe Britche to writte þere,  
 And wende forþ myd strengþe, þo namon hem no leste,  
 And come an aȝlar, þo stons forre sette.

1. Maude the the honer  
 2. And that with gret power  
 of men, yf any wote leste  
 3. Quereate witt,  
 4. Gyng-  
 nomen, that was thulke tyme  
 kyng  
 5. Grot pro god in  
 6. Theigh Britons  
 7. The make folow of the  
 worlde ofte hit both y founde.  
 Who saw such a folwe in to  
 the worlde's eynde, Stones

out of Irlond to Britayn  
 leynder  
 8. Wote y now  
 9. Hit as thul have the  
 leste ston, the wile is wote  
 myn hond  
 10. So that  
 the Irish men hit overcomen  
 there, And wote forþ with  
 strengþe, that noman hem  
 ne leste, To the hulle of hill  
 dar the stons forre sette

þe hec sey þe stoness, þe wondred y now  
 Of þe werth, þat was so gret, & þe yt þider drew.  
 "Ge gonge men," quoth Merlyn, "cureþ now youre myghte,"  
 "How ge now þis stoness best to þe schip dyghte.  
 Þes stode, & bi þorte hem best, & cables sette ynowe,  
 And ladders, & lounes, & faste schone & drume.  
 Ac þe we myght come for noþing to ende: myd here wille.  
 Merlyn & sey þis, and low, and bad hem stonde stille.  
 He sette þys gynges, as he wolde, & y quoyntise vnde stille,  
 And þe folk myd þe stoness þe vnde al here wille,  
 And lette hem to schippes brynge, & so in to þis londe,  
 Ac þer was som enchantery þer to, ich vnderstonde.  
 To þe Doune of Ambros bury þe stoness y brogt were,  
 A geyn þe fest of Wyntson tye, as Merlyn gan lere.  
 Four hundred yer & four score & aboute þe tenþe yer,  
 After þat gon on erþe com, y set þat were þere.  
 Alle þe hey men of þe lond þe kyng lette of sende,  
 Erles and barones and knyghtes in eche ende,  
 Bischoppes and abbates and oþere þat þere were,  
 þat þe fest of Wyntson tye myd hem were þere."

1. þis pro þo in Ar. 2. Who  
 Ar. 3. Thes Ar. 4. Shippys  
 Ar. 5. Of hure wille Ar.  
 6. Sey at this, Ar. 7. þis  
 queyntise caste. The folke of  
 the stoness tho hadde hure  
 wille an haste, And hem to  
 shippe gonne bryng, and so  
 in to this londe, Ac nought  
 with out enchauntement, as

y vnderstonde Ar. 8. Dounes  
 Ar. 9. Thes stoness Ar.  
 10. Wyntson day, as Merlyn  
 gan hem lere Ar. 11. Lege,  
 cum Ar. that God on erthe  
 come &c. 12. The Ar. 13.  
 By enery ende Ar. 14. O  
 thur soth y say, That wolde  
 come to the kyngus fest a  
 Wyntson day Ar.

he kyng at Wyntowday, he has come alle to us here,  
 Sette he crowns on us here, and held 1 noble feste.  
 And alle he fourte dayes he fest 2 he held there.  
 Bischopes also, pat delyuered were,  
 In honour of þilke kinde, þere he 3 yet us þe,  
 As of 4 Euerwyk, & of Wallis, & also of oþere mo.  
 Werlyn with us chauntement, & myd us queneþe, þer  
 Sette by þe stoues rygt so, as heo stode in Erlond er.  
 þus was Stouenge þus 7 y mad, þat men al day seþ,  
 In honour of þe noble men, þat þer y buried heþ.

**A**lscence, Mortiger's sone, us fader for barnd was,  
 Flye into Germany 8 myd wel hasty þas.  
 þere he gadereþe folc of Barones y nowe,  
 For to a weeks hym of hem, þat us fader slowe.  
 In þe North ende of his lond heo by gonne wius,  
 And faste slowe and 10 barnde, and robbede bi lye.  
 þat word 11 to more kyng com, so þat he wende  
 Myd us power among hem, & heore grude schende.  
 Pascence and us men, 12 þe ascapede o lye,  
 To schippen slowe faste 13 agen, ech whyle hem þorte fyne."

1. A noble Ar. 2. And  
 fully alle Ar. 3. Held he  
 there. Wythopryches, that he  
 held, delyuered there were  
 Ar. 4. Interea honores, qui  
 possessoribus carebant, domesti-  
 cis suis largitur, ut eis obsequii  
 sui laborem remuneraret Galf.  
 Mon. 5. Put hem tho, Ar.  
 6. Wallis, & Ebrarwick, and o

thur many mo Ar. 7. Furst y  
 made, that we al day seith,  
 Ar. 8. Pallent, Mortigeris  
 sone, tho his fader forbrend  
 was, Ar. 9. With full hasty  
 Ar. 10. Brende, and robbede  
 swythe blyue Ar. 11. To  
 kyng Aurelpe come, Ar. 12.  
 That Ar. 13. A ye, hyng  
 swyth blyue Ar.

A houte



He bente his wey by þe fe, so þat to Erlond hec come.  
 Syneman kyng of Erlond and hec gret confell nome.  
 And þis loub forte stonde alle hec swere an of.  
 For Syneman was for þe Stonhege ydward get with.  
 So þat þe Priests and hec myd gret power y wys  
 Come toward þis loub, and arraede in Wallis.  
 In þe town of Sent Dauld hec by leneve and aboute,  
 And forte alle þis loub gressed here route.  
 Kyng Durell at Wyndchestre to gret libelle brow,  
 Syneman and Dulleste wet glad þer of y now.  
 A quoynte maistre of þe Saxones (1 Cope was ys name)  
 To Dulleste wende 2 anon, þat God gese hym ichame.  
 "What woldest," he seyde, "þills men to ys mede gese fame,  
 " þat þe kyng Durell bogete of þis Dames 3  
 "Get ich myght," quod Dulleste, "such men fynde on,  
 " A poulant poulant of seker ich wolde hym gese anon,  
 " And make hym over under me mayster of al my londe,  
 " And þat ich hym wolde myd trowpe shet felle on hande.  
 þis forwarde was felle y mad, now coupe þis loub man  
 4 Laugage of þis loub, as he were Cristenman,  
 5 And þe maner of Wyntonon, as he hadde among 6 þis y go  
 And þe art of lechecraft, al to muche so.  
 þis berde he sette schere sch, 7 and a brod crowne al to,  
 And sette a monke's abyte on hym he sette so.

1. Copea. 2. A non, God yit hym moche shame. 4. The language of Wyntonon, as. 5. And all the manere of hem, 6. Hei go, 7. And make hym a crowne also.  
 3. "What wilt thou," he saide, "give the to his mede fame, that wolde kyng Durell 7. And make hym a crowne also, 8. "kyng of þis Dames."

And nom with hym spicery, <sup>1</sup> þat to spik þrou.  
 And wende hym to Wynchestre quoyntliche <sup>2</sup> y nom,  
 And sepe <sup>3</sup> þe kyng's, þat he wolde hym to hys brygge.  
<sup>4</sup> þat folk was sone glad y now for þe <sup>5</sup> tyngge.  
 So myssliche he wade yt & lowel, þat no lende hym soke.  
 þe kyng in hys <sup>6</sup> lode ys herts al by hym caste.  
 He gef hym a lufur drench, & þo he hadde dronke yt so,  
 He bed hym lygge & slepe wel, þat yt myghe do het hym do.  
 þe kyng bogede wel <sup>7</sup> to hym, and lette hym helpe soke.  
 And stille was with oute noyse, & lye & slepte yn lode.  
 For þe popson in ys slep þe heynes so <sup>8</sup> þore sopte,  
<sup>9</sup> þat it of eode al þat body, & to depe sone hym houte.  
 þe <sup>10</sup> myle he slep, <sup>11</sup> þe traptour þo men awerward nom.  
 Stilleliche hi halnes, þat ma nusse neber he bi com.  
 Ryt aboute þe kyng's deþ, in þe armament an þeg.  
 A Berre, gret and faye ynow, and luyge cler, me ley.  
<sup>12</sup> A cler leom, with oute me, þer stod fram hym mel gure,  
 Y formed as a dragon, as red as þe fure.  
 Out of þe dragone's moun twei leomes þer stode þere.  
<sup>13</sup> Grettor tyde enene Est ouer fraunce, as yt were.

1. And pro that in *Ar.*  
 2. The kyng (that longe  
 hadde he sike) he wende to  
 hys brygge *Ar.* Urben po-  
 tremo ingressus, obtulit oble-  
 quium suum clientibus regis, &  
 gratiam in oculis eorum inue-  
 nit. Nihil enim desiderabilius  
 expectabant, quam medicum  
*Gloss. Mon.* 3. The folk *Ar.*  
 4. Tyngge *Ar.* 5. Side al-  
 so, his herte *Ar.* 6. On hym,  
*Ar.* 7. Thurg *Ar.* 8. That

all the body hit awerpede, &  
 sone to deth hym broughte *Ar.*  
 9. Interea nefandus proditor  
 ille, inter unum & alium cla-  
 psus, in curia nusquam compa-  
 ruit *Gloss. Mon.* 10. This trape-  
 tour his may a myrmour  
 nome *Ar.* 11. A cler leome  
 fro hys com, bryght so gure  
 gure, *Ar.* 12. The grettors  
*Ar.*

þe

"He lette hym hewe to pesen, and also he selde,  
 "As þou hast y mad mony ' wylf deoful lye to lede,  
 "And mony child with oute fader, & mony wif lordles,  
 "Al so ich wole make to day þine sones faderles.  
 "Al so ' doþ bi þis mon, þat so muche wo þaþ y do,  
 "So mony child mad faderles, dygtes hym al so.  
 þis word was for dom yholde, þe erl Edel hym drow,  
 And ladde hym with oute þe town ' mid god herte y now;  
 And smot of hys hed, þat so muche wo hadde y do.  
 þe was mony mon a wreke, and mony mon glad al so.  
 þis was euens fourte ger, þat he hadde þis dom, .  
 After þat ' he mid his folc to þis lond com.  
 þe wende þe kyng myd god oit to Euerwik anon,  
 for to sle ' Hengistelone, and ys men echon.  
 þe Dita hit onderstod, þat heo comyng were,  
 He sei wel, þat ' power nas noht agern hem þere.  
 In ' raketyne of yre in hys hond he nom,  
 And myd þe herte of ys men ' to þe kyng he com.  
 "Sire," he selde, "myne Godes al ouer come beþ,  
 "And þi ' Lord ys God al one, as we to soþe seþ,

1. A wif *Ar.* 2. So wole  
 y make to day the sone fader-  
 les *Ar.* 3. Do *Ar.* 4. With  
 gret ilte y now, *Ar.* 5. He  
 ferst with his *Ar.* 6. Hen-  
 giste's sone, *Ar.* 7. His pow-  
 er was nought a yen so many  
 there. A gret cheyne of iren  
*Ar.* 8. Communicato itaque

consilio, egressus est cum nobi-  
 lioribus qui secum aderant, ge-  
 stans catenam in manu, & sabu-  
 lonem in capite, & sefe regi in  
 hæc verba presentavit *Gaf.*  
*Mon.* 9. A ye the kyng com  
*Ar.* 10. God is Lord al ouer,  
 as we alle y seþ, *Ar.*

"þat

" þat þus noble men to þyn wille dryngeþ in þis manere.

" 1 þer fore vs with 2 veteres underfong now here.

" 3 þat to eche torment, þat ge wole vs, gave us þeþ in þis place,

" But þou wole of vs here pyte habbe and grace.

þe kyng hadde rewpe 4 of hem, & ys conseil hym gef þe,  
from of hem sikernesse to ys þral ener mo "

And of eche þat with hym was, and in gret destresse,

Bi syde Scotland hem gef a place, al in wildernesse,

To wone inne in þraldam vnder þe kyng ener mo.

þese, and mony oþere, þat y flowe were þe,

þet, þat þe kyng hadde such mercy hem do,

To hym heo wende as prissones, and 5 bedom mercy also.

þe kyng al inon maner hem gef 6 mercy and grace,

To wone al in 7 þralhede in þike wylde place,

8 To wrope hele al þis lond was þe so mylde þe.

for þe schremes dade to þis lond seþþe wel muche mo.

þe al þis was y do, þe kyng, ar he wende,

Let ordeþne in Euerwik þis lond for to amende,

And lette rere by chirches in al þe lond a bowte,

And bischopes dade in heore power, þat 9 er were al withoute.

1. Accipe ergo nos & catenam  
istam, & nisi misericordiam ha-  
bueris, habere nos ligatos, & ad  
quodlibet supplicium volunta-  
rie paratos *Galf. Mon.* 2. *Þes*  
*seþeres* 3. To (omisso  
þat) which torment though  
mit vs do, we beth redy in  
this place, But though wilt  
vs pyte do, of eny other grace

4. Of hym, as his coun-  
sail gaf hym tho, And sikere-  
nyse nam of hym, to serue  
hym enere mo 5. *Merce*  
þede also 6. *þpyce* 7. *þhraldom* 8. To wro-  
therhele to al this lond, that  
he mylde was tho. for þey  
dade to al this lond in þe  
muche mo 9. *Erf*

¶

Alene agstene taves, þat he hadde ⁊ ordeyned ⁊ þis,  
 To London he wende, for to amende ⁊ þat þer was amys  
 He let amende al þe town of houses þat were a domes,  
 ⁊ And in þe contrey churches let rere, and in þe toun.  
 Gode lawes, þat were aleyd, newe he lette make.  
 London, þat were ⁊ arst by nome, ⁊ þe rygt eyr he lette take.  
 Bute ys wille al clene was ys lound forto amende.  
 And after al þis to Wyndchestre from Londons he wende,  
 For to amende þilke ⁊ syde, ⁊ so ⁊ so to Salisbury.  
 And so, for to amende more, to þe 10. Domus of Ambrosbury.  
 þo he com to þat place, þat he heye men tunc lare,  
 þat þengist myd ys leres let fle and by trape,  
 Al þe moyses he hadde deul, ⁊ bi gan to wepe sore,  
 He þoghte in hys herte, how he myghte þe place 11. worþi.  
 For þer lay so gode men, 12. yt was wel ydo,  
 þat, for to defende þat lound, ⁊ moysed were so.  
 Wyn confest he tok þo, how he myght make þere  
 Som werk, 13. in honowr of hem, þat euer in mynde were.  
 þe archbisshop of Walsin seide ys awys,  
 "Sire," he seide, "get þer ys any man so wys,

- |                           |                        |                                  |
|---------------------------|------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1. Willelmus.             | 2. Al this.            | by this lound for to amende      |
| 3. Willelmus.             | 4. Thyngs that         | 9. Cite, and so to Wals-         |
| were amys.                | And let amende         | bury.                            |
| at the town.              | 5. Churchen            | 10. Towns.                       |
| he orde in contreyes fram | toun to toun.          | 11. Worþipe more.                |
| Olde lawes,               | 6. And loundes,        | 12. Wym thought hiewel           |
| 7. Er                     | 8. To the ryght hoires | to do, By cause, in sense of the |
| take.                     | Willelmus was al clene | lound, they were amosthered      |
|                           |                        | so.                              |
|                           |                        | 13. That his euer                |
|                           |                        | more after in mynde were         |

"I þat

" þat beste red þe can rede, Merlyn þat ys.  
 For þer wys in þi kyndem so wys mon y wys,  
 To segge soþ of þinges, þat to comene beþ.  
 3 He of quoyntes for to rede, as we al day y seþ.  
 Merlyn was þo in Wallis. he was sone of sogt  
 Wyd messingeres, & y fonde, & to þe kyng y broȝte.  
 The kyng made hym fore ynow, & amon hem alle  
 Bed hym telle of som 3 þing, þat hym schulde bi falle.  
 "Sire kyng," quoth Merlyn þo, "siche þinges y wys  
 "He beþ for to schewe nogt, but wen gret nede ys.  
 "For 6 gef ich seide in bismare, oþer bute yt ned were,  
 "Gone from me 7 he" wolde wende þe Gost, þat doþ me leue.  
 8 þe kyng, þo non oþer nas, bod hym som quoyntyle  
 Bi þenke aboute 9 þilke cors, þat so noble were and wys.  
 "Sire kyng," quoth Merlyn þo, "gef þou wilt here caste;  
 "In 10 þe" honour of hem, a werk þat ener schal y laste,  
 "To þe 11 hul of Hyllar send in to Yrlond  
 "12 After þe noble stoness, þat þer habbet lenge y stonde,  
 "þat was þe treche of geandes, for a quoynte werk þer ys  
 "Of stoness al wyþ art y mad, in þe world such non ys.

Hylar.

1. That best red can ther  
 of rede, Merlyn hit is *Ar.*  
 2. Quippe non existimo, alterum  
 in regno tuo esse, cui sit clarius  
 ingenium, sive in futuris dicen-  
 dis, sive in operationibus ma-  
 chinandis *Galf. Mon.* 3. He of  
 queynte thynges for to rede,  
*Ar.* 4. Among *Ar.* 5. Things,  
*Ar.* 6. Nam si ea in derisionem  
 sive vanitatem proferrem, tace-  
 ret spiritus, qui me docet, &  
 Vol. I

cum opus superveniret, recede-  
 ret *Galf. Mon.* 7. Deest *Ar.*  
 8. The kyng, the other [*f.*  
 tho non other] myȝhte be, bod  
 hym *Ar.* 9. Thilke bodles,  
*Ar.* 10. Deest *Ar.* 11. Wille  
 of Hyllar *Ar.* 12. After stoness  
 noble and gode, that lenge  
 han ther stonde, That was  
 carole of Geantz, for queynte  
 werk hit is *Ar.*

T

"1 He

"**1** He þer nys noþing, þat ma scholde : myd strength a down  
caste.

"**2** Stode heo here, as þan ðay þere, : æfen & morn letha  
þe kyng : soundel to lrygh, þe he herde þis tale.

"**3** 'Dow myght,' he segh, "suche ston, so grette & so sole,

"**4** 'Be y brogt of so fet lond : & get most of were.

"**5** 'He wolde wene, þat in þis lond no ston to worche were,

"**6** 'Sire kyng," queth Marign, "ne make nyst an ydel such  
lryghing.

"**7** 'For yt nys an ydel nyst, þat ich telle þis taryng.

"**8** 'For in þe farreste stude of Afric geardes wile sette

"**9** 'þis ston for medycine, & in Erlond hem sette.

"**10** 'Whila has moneden in Erlond, to make here bapen þere,

"**11** 'þer bunder fasto heht, wen þei sht were.

"**12** 'For : þes wold þe stonow waleh, & þer tunc bapen y mæ.

"**13** 'For ys no ston þer among, þat of gret vertu nys.

1. He ther is nothing, that  
hem sholde with strength a  
down caste. 2. Grandes  
sunt lapides, nec est aliquis cujus  
virtuti cedant. Qui si eo modo,  
qua ibi positi sunt, circa plateam  
locabantur, stabant in æternum  
Galf. Adam. 3. Enere hit mælde  
y lase. 4. He gan sou-  
del to lough. 5. Whilo. 6.  
Wryng fro so ferre lond :  
And the more more, that men  
mælde more in þis. 7.  
"Sire," queth Marign, "ne  
"tuhet nought an ydel such  
"lryghing. For hit is an

ydel nought, that y telle of  
this thyng. Ar. Ad hac Mer-  
linus : "No moveas rex vanum  
"risum, quia hæc absque vani-  
"tate profero Galf. Adam. 8.  
"The whila hit monede in Er-  
"lond, to make hem bapen  
"there. 9. Lavabant namque  
"lapides, & infra balnea dis-  
"debant, unde ægroti curabantur.  
"Miscebant etiam cum herbarum  
"confectioibus, unde vulnera  
"sanabantur. Non est ibi lapis, qui  
"medicamento caret Galf. Adam.  
10. For ther is Ar.

þe

þe kyng and þe conseil : radde þe stoness forte sette,  
 2 And with gret power of bataill, get any mon hem lette.  
 After, (þe kyng's brother,) þat sturde þette al so,  
 In anoper maner name, þe chesse was þet to,  
 And stene þouant men, þis dede sette so,  
 And Merlyn, þet his : quoynt, "þider wende al so.  
 4 Wyndham was þis kyng of Irland.  
 þo me tolde hym, þat þis Britynes þe come wote to þe londe,  
 Aȝen hem þe wende anon myȝ : god power þnowȝ.  
 þo me told him hese stode, þe aȝente and lowȝ.  
 "No wonder," he sepu, "þan Wynter al day go to stonde,  
 " 7 Wan heo, þat þet tme beȝ, such folow þe þrouȝ.  
 "We haȝ þe herd such folȝe, wot þet þe in non ende  
 "Stones, þet þat aȝes do heo hyder sende :  
 "Armed þow "falle now, and wyteȝ þowre lond.  
 "for : heo schal not habbe here no ston, wyle ich may  
 weste myn hond.  
 After and þe compaigne redi aȝen hem were,  
 10 And a strong bataill aȝte, e þe Priȝte to brine þere,  
 And wende forȝ myȝ strengȝe, þe nomen hem no lette,  
 And come to Mylar, þe stoness forte sette.

1. Made the stone  
 2. And that with great power  
 of men, if any would let  
 3. Against will, 4. Wyndham  
 woman, that was the time  
 king 5. Great for god in  
 6. Theigh Britons  
 7. The more folk of the  
 world oft both founde.  
 Who saw such a folk in to  
 the world's end, Stones

out of Ireland to Westyn  
 leynder 8. Sons þe now  
 9. He is that have the  
 lode ston, the while is wote  
 myn hond 10. So that  
 the Irish men þe overcome  
 there, And went forth with  
 strengȝe, that nomen hem  
 no lette, To the hulle of hille  
 dar the stoness forte sette.



þe hec seþ 1 þe stoness, þes wondred 2 now  
 Of þe werk, þat was so gret, & 3 he ȝt þider drow.  
 "Ge gonge men," quoth 4 Merlyn, "cureþ now ȝoure myȝte,  
 "How ge now 5 þis stoness best to þe 6 schip dryȝte.  
 Þes stode, & bi þoȝte hem best, & cables sette ȝnowe,  
 And ladders, & louners, & safte schons & drowe.  
 Ac hec ne myȝte come for noȝyng to ende 7 myȝd here wille.  
 Merlyn 8 sey þis, and low, and bad hem stonde stille.  
 He sette þys ȝyngnes, as he wolde, & 9 ys quoyntise dunde stille,  
 And þe folþ myȝd þo stoness þo dunde al here wille,  
 And lette hem to schippes brynge, & so in to þis londe,  
 Ac þer was som enchantery þer to, ich 10 underfonde.  
 To þe 11 Doune of Dumbres bury 12 þe stoness ȝ broȝt were,  
 3 ȝeyn þe fest of 13 Wyntun tȝde, as Merlyn gan lere.  
 Four hondred ȝer & four score & aboute þe tenȝ ȝer,  
 14 Thur 15 þat ȝon on erþe cam, ȝ let þat were þere.  
 Alle þe heȝ man of 16 þo lond þe kyng lette of sende,  
 Cries and barones and knyȝtes 17 in eche ende,  
 Bischoppes and abbates and 18 oþere þat þere were,  
 þat þe fest of Wyntun tȝde myȝd hem were þere."

1. þis pro þo in Ar. 2. Who  
 Ar. 3. Thes Ar. 4. Shippes  
 Ar. 5. Of hure wille Ar.  
 6. Sey al this, Ar. 7. His  
 queyntise castle. The folke of  
 the stoness tho hadde hure  
 wille an haste, And hem to  
 shippe gonne bryng, and so  
 in to this londe, Ac nought  
 with out enchauntements, as

ȝ underfonde Ar. 8. Doune  
 Ar. 9. Thes stoness Ar.  
 10. Wyntun tȝde, as Merlyn  
 gan hem lere Ar. 11. Lege,  
 cum Ar. that God on erthe  
 come &c. 12. The Ar. 13.  
 By every ende Ar. 14. ȝ  
 thur soth ȝ say, That sholde  
 come to the kyngus fest a  
 Wyntun tȝde Ar.

þe

þe kyng at Wythlondag, þo hec come alle to ȝu hece,  
 Sette þe crowns on ȝu heued, and hauid : noble fette.  
 And alle þe foure dayes þe fest : he hauid there.  
 Bischopes also, þat deliuered were,  
 In honour of þilke kinde, þere he : ȝet ȝu þe,  
 As of ' Euermyk, & of Walle, & also of oþere ma.  
 Werlyn with ȝu chauntement, & myd ȝu mayntye, þer  
 Sette by þe stones ȝyt so, as heo stode in Erland er.  
 þus was Stanchenge þus : ȝe mad, þat men al day seþ,  
 In honour of þe noble men, þat þer ȝe buried heþ.

**Þ** Alcence, Mortigere's sone, ȝu fader for barnd was,  
 Floy into Germanye : myd wel hasty þas.  
 þere he gaderede folc of Saxones ȝe nowre,  
 for to a weeks hym of hem, þat ȝu fader slowe.  
 In þe North ende of þis lond heo by gonne aris,  
 And faste slawe and <sup>10</sup> barnde, and robbede bi lynes.  
 þat word <sup>11</sup> to more kyng com, so þat he wende  
 Myd ȝu power among hem, & heore grude schende.  
 Pascence and ȝu men, <sup>12</sup> þe ascapede o lene,  
 To schippes slowe faste <sup>13</sup> agen, ech whyle hem þorte fyne."

1. A noble Ar. 2. And  
 fully alle Ar. 3. Held he  
 there. Byshopryches, that he  
 held, deliuered there were  
 Ar. 4. Interea honores, qui  
 possessoribus carebant, domesti-  
 cis suis largitur, ut eis obsequii  
 sui laborem remuneraret Galf.  
 Mon. 5. Pat hem tho, Ar.  
 6. Wallis, & Ebracwich, and oc

thur many mo Ar. 7. First ȝ  
 made, that we al day seith,  
 Ar. 8. Pallent, Mortigeris  
 sone, tho his fader forbrend  
 was, Ar. 9. With full hasty  
 Ar. 10. Brende, and robbede  
 swythe blyue Ar. 11. To  
 kyng Aurelpe come, Ar. 12.  
 That Ar. 13. A ȝe, hyng  
 swyth blyue Ar.

A bonte

I bente þes word by þe fe, so þat to Erlond þes come.  
 Syneman kyng of Erlond and þes gret conseil nomt.  
 And þis lond þerte schende alle þes swere an op.  
 For Syneman was for þe Stonhenge hiderward get weþ.  
 So þat þe Prioste and þes myd gret power y wys  
 Come toward þis lond, and arreve in Wallis.  
 In þe town of Bent Dault þes by leuere and aboute,  
 And forto stalle þis lond grepped here route.  
 Kyng Barul at Wyndchestre to gret synelle drom,  
 Syneman and Budestet wez glad þer of y now.  
 I quoynte maistre of þe Saxones (1 Cope was yz name)  
 To Budestet wende : anon, þat God geue hym schame.  
 "What woldest," he seide, "þis mon is yz mede geue same,  
 " þat þe kyng Barulþ boogte of lyl Damer :  
 "Get ich mygite," quod Budestet, "such mon fynde on,  
 " I þougt þat of schene ich wolde hym geue anon,  
 " And made hym swer under me mayster of al my lond,  
 " And þat ich hym wolde myd troupe sket sette on hond.  
 þis forwarde was sette y mad, now coupe þis lyl man  
 1 Langage of þis lond, as" he were Cristenman,  
 : And þe maner of Wynton, as he hadde among : þis y go  
 And þe art of lechecraft, al to muche so.  
 þis berd he sette schere schik, 1 and a blood crowne ad to,  
 And sette a monke's abyte on hym he sette so.

- 
1. Cope A. 2. A non, 4. The langage of Wynton, as A. 5. And all the manere of hem, A. 6. þis go, A. 7. And made hym a crowne also, A.  
 God yll hym moch shame A.  
 3. "What wilt thou," he sayne, "give the to his mede same, " that wolde kyng Barulle " þryng of lyl Damer A.

And

And nom with hym spicery, <sup>1</sup> þat to spik dreu,  
 And wende hym to Wycheſtre quoyntelle þe & nom,  
 And ſerde: þe kyng's, þat he wolde hym to hie brygge.  
 þat folk was ſone glad & now for þe tpyng.  
 So myſliche he made yt & ſo wel, þat mo leneþe hym ſette.  
 þe kyng in þe ſede þe herte al vp hym cete.  
 He gef hym a luter drench, & þo he hadde dronke yt ſe,  
 He bed hym lygge & ſlepe wel, þat yt myghe do het hym de.  
 þe kyng hopeþe wel <sup>6</sup> to hym, and lette hym helpe ſette.  
 And ſtille was with oute noyſe, & laſe & ſlepte þe laſe.  
 for þe poplon in þe ſlep he beynes ſo <sup>7</sup> þe ſepte,  
 þat it of eode al þat body, & to deþe ſong hym beynes.  
 þe <sup>8</sup> wyle he ſlep, <sup>10</sup> þe traytour þo men awygned nom  
 ſtulleliche bi halues, þat ma nuſte noþer he bi com.  
 Rigt aboute þe kyng's deþ, in þe firmament an heþ.  
 A ſerre, gret and ſayr ynom, and ſmyþe cler, mo ſey.  
<sup>11</sup> A cler leom, with oute mo, þer ſtod fram hym wel gure,  
 Þ formed as a dragon, as red as þe ſure.  
 Out of þe dragone's moun twei leomes þer ſtode þere.  
<sup>12</sup> Grettor tyde enene Eſt ouer fraunce, as yt were.

1. And þe that in *r.*  
 2. The kyng (that longe  
 hadde be ſike) he wolde to  
 hie brygge *r.* Urbem po-  
 ſtremo ingreſſus, obtulit obſe-  
 quium ſuum clientibus regia, &  
 gratiam in oculis eorum inue-  
 nit. Nihil enim deſiderabilius  
 eſpectabant, quam medicum  
*Galf. Med.* 3. The folk *r.*  
 4. Tpyng *r.* 5. Side alſe  
 ſo, his herte *r.* 6. On hym,  
*r.* 7. Thurg *r.* 8. That

all the body hit ouerjode, &  
 ſone to deth hym broughte *r.*  
 9. Interca nefandus proditor  
 ille, inter unum & alium cla-  
 piſas, in curia nuſquam compa-  
 ruit *Galf. Med.* 10. This trege-  
 taur his moun a wygned  
 nome *r.* bi halues ſtulleliche,  
 me nuſte *r.* 11. A cler leome  
 fra hure com, bryght ſo gure  
 gure, *r.* 12. The grettors  
*r.*

þe

þe oþer hadde sene branches, alle cler ynome,  
 And toward þe Priſche ſee Weſtward eucne : þei" drome.  
 þe þis ſterre was y ſey, men : wondrede y now.  
 After, þe kyng's broþer, myd yſt þo drom  
 To Walis to þis ſtrange men, to a ſayle hem & ſyge.  
 A drad he was : fore y now of þis wonder ſyge.  
 "Aſerlyn he clepde & aſchede anon, how yt mygite þer of be:  
 Aſerlyn wep a non ſo faſte, þat deol yt was to ſe.  
 "Alas!" he ſeyde, " þe deolful harm, þat yſ endeles!  
 "Alas!" þat folk of Breteyne, þat now yſ heipes!  
 "Ded "he" yſ þe noble kyng Aureli þi broþer.  
 "Ac þe ſterre, þat me yſeyþ, bi tokeneþ a noþer.  
 "We now þou noble Duc, þat þe batail were y ſmyte.  
 "For kyng þou worſt of Breteyne, & þe : maiſtry þou ſchalt  
 geſte.  
 "For þe ſterre bi tokeneþ þe, and þe fur Dragon al ſo.  
 "þe leom, : þat out of yſ mouþ ouer France yſ y do,  
 "þat bi tokeneþ a chyld, þat þou ſchalt bi geſte ywys,  
 "þat ſchal wyne France & oþer londes, in þe world ſuch  
 mon nys.  
 "þe leome, þat tyde Weſtward, a dogter þat yſ,  
 " : þat þou ſchalt bi geſte, and ſchal hadde ſonys ywys,

1. Deſt. 2. Wondrede cometh out of his mouth, 3. Wythe  
 ſore of. 4. Of Aſerlyn he geſte anon, how yt myght be. 5. The folk. 6.  
 Deſt. 7. Aſerlyn biſte. The bryght ſterre bytokeneth  
 the, and the ſury. 8. That 9. Thugh ſhalt biſte of the  
 body, that ſhal haue ſonys y  
 wis, That kynges of Bra-  
 tayne ſhal here aſtur be, Of  
 ſorwe and of contak them  
 me ſhal y ſe.

"þat

"pat scal, eche astur oper, kyng of Breteyne be,  
 "Of some oper al in contek, and þis me schal y se.  
 þe noble mon, of wam he spek, þat he wolde be gete,  
 þat was þe kyng Arthure, as ge schul ywpte.  
 "Uter let al þis be (for he ne leuede yt not anon)  
 And wende toward Sent Dauid, to mete with ys son.  
 þe oper were of hem y war, & garked hem in here syde,  
 And lette arme here oft wel, batail sorto abyde.  
 Heo come & knyte þis bataille, & faste slowe to gronde,  
 In eyper syde muche folk in a lute stonde,  
 Knyghtes and oper folk, atte laste our Lord hogte  
 On ys Cristene folk, and þe maystry hem brogte.  
 for þer was Gynemon y slawe, (þe kyng of Prionde)  
 And Balceuce (Mortigere's sone) þat is gret power hade in  
 honde,  
 And muche of here folk with hem, so þat fowe atte nende  
 Aþue þer of scapede, þat to schip mygte wende.  
 And so heo schulde lerne, with Cristenemen to fyhte.  
 for our lord wols among þys men euer cuþe ys mygte.  
 To Uter of ys broþer deþ þer com werd atte laste.  
 Astur þis batayl he wende to Wynchestre faste.

Bellum.

1. Shalde biyte, &. 2. U-  
 ther, when he hadde hard al  
 this, forth he wende anon  
 toward Seynt Danidis, to  
 mete with his son &. At U-  
 ther (in dubio tamen existens,  
 an verum protulisset Merlinus) in  
 hostes, ut corperat, progreditur.

Advenerat namque prope Mene-  
 vium, &c. *Galf. Ann.* 3. Gese-  
 thede hem &. 4. Lete hem  
 army swithe well, the bataille  
 to a byde &. 5. Uistore &.  
 6. Asten ende &. 7. By  
 myghte leryng, &.

1 **First** was þe kyng & buried, er he 2 mygtes" come þere,  
 Withinne þe place of þe Stonheng, þat he 3 lette rere.  
 For he lette þe hude halwe, for þe gods cors þat þer were,  
 And bischopes and worthi men ys body þider bere."

**A**fter, aftur ys 4 breþer deþ, þe crowne to hym nam,  
 And þeru þe heys men 5 of þis lond song þis kyndom.  
 Of þe dragon 6 he vnderstod, þat 7 sepe was on heys.  
 And of þat Meryn hadde 7 & seid, of þe sigts þat me sepe.  
 To riche dragones of gold he lette 8 make anon,  
 9 And at þe mynstre of Wynechestre he offereþe þat on.  
 10 þat oþer he lette bi sors hym bere in batail wan he was.  
 He clepede hym Alterpendragon þer aftur for þis cas,  
 þat 11 was, Alter dragone's heued, 12 & þat was to signife,  
 þat Meryn hym clepude Dragon in hys prophete.  
 13 Otte, (Wengiste sone) þat luter Saxone,  
 And 14 Gols ys colyn, heo þogts of treson.  
 þe of, þat to kyng Meryl heo swere by fore,  
 Hem þogts, þo he was ded, þat yt was al for lore.

1. He er was the kyng *Mr.*  
 2. Deest *Mr.* 3. Let first rere.  
 He hadde lete halwy the  
 place, for carles that ther  
 were, By therchebisschopp  
 Seynt Dobrice, and other  
 that were there *Mr.* 4. Bro-  
 ther is deþ, *Mr.* 5. Of the  
 lond a heng the kyngdom *Mr.*  
 6. He gan by thencþe, that

was y sepe an hegh *Mr.* 7. &  
 seid, thurgh sight that he segh.  
 Two ryche *Mr.* 8. Meryn *Mr.*  
 9. Otte hegh mynstre *Mr.*  
 10. The oþur *Mr.* 11. Is, *Mr.*  
 12. Deest *Mr.* 13. Otte (Wen-  
 giste's sone) the luthere *Mr.*  
 14. Of his brother also by-  
 thoughte hem on treson *Mr.*

Heo þeȝte, to do þis lond ſchame, to Germanye heo ſende  
 ' þ lome,"

(þat ys lond in Alymaine, ' from wam heo alle come)  
 Aftur more folk of here kynde, ſo þat þer come rnoſe.  
 At Scotland heo by gonne, and faſte barnde and ſlome,  
 And ſo ' forþ toward Euerwyk þe contre ' a down þei caſte,  
 And bi ſegeþe Euerwyk, þo heo þider come, faſte.  
 þe kyng Ater herde" here of, þiderward faſte þe dromþ.  
 To gedere heo come, and ſmyte a batail ſtrong y now. Bellum.

Heo ' ſmyten & ſlome in eþþer ſyde, þat remþe yt was to ſe,  
 Atte laſte ' þis Saxones by gonne forto ſe,  
 And ' þis Britones aftur, and ſlome to gronde faſte;  
 So þat ſome of ſcapode by monteynes atte laſte,  
 And ſome in to townes, and yt drow to nyȝt,  
 So þat ' heo ne nyȝt noþer longor y ſe to fygte.  
 And þe Britones hem wyþ drow, & þe Saxones hem reſte.  
 kyng Ater nom ys conſell, ' wat red were beſte.  
 Gorloys, erl of Cornewayl, (þat wyfeſt was y halde,  
 And old, and meſt hadde y ſeþe) ys red firſt he tolde.  
 "We mote," he ſeþe, "be hardy, & ſalmorþe, & wyſe,  
 "geſ we wol hadde oure lȝf, and halde oure franchiſa.  
 "Wexing ener beþ oure ſon bi water and by londe,  
 "þat, geſ we abydeþ longe, we ſchul hem not at ſtonde.

1. Sone, *Ar.* 2. Of wham  
 hit firſt come) *Ar.* 3. Euer  
 to ward *Ar.* 4. Down caſte,  
 And wham hit come to Ebra-  
 wyk by ſegeþe the toun faſte.  
 Wþan kyng Ather hurde *Ar.*

5. foughte and *Ar.* 6. The  
 Saxones *Ar.* 7. The Brus  
 tones *Ar.* 8. Hi ne myȝt  
 y ſe no lenger forto fight *Ar.*  
 9. What hym were do beſte  
*Ar.*

U 2

"Now





Egerne, Gorloys wyf, was fairest of echon,  
 þat was contasse of Cornemall, ' for' so fair nas þer non.  
 þe kyng by huld hire faste y now, & yñ herte on hire castre,  
 And þoghte, þay heo were 2 wyf, to do soþys atte laste.  
 He made 3 hire semblant fair y now, to non oþer so gret.  
 þe erl 4 nas not þer with y payed, þo he yt vnder get.  
 Stur mete he nom yñ wyf myd 5 stordy med y now,  
 And, with oute lene of þe kyng, to yñ contrai drom.  
 þe kyng sende to hym þo, to by lene al nygt,  
 for he moste of gret conseil hadde som insygt.  
 6 þat was for nygt. Holde he nygt þe kyng sende get yñ sonde.  
 þat he by leuede at 7 yñ parlemente, for neðe of þe loade.  
 8 þo kyng was, þo he nolde nygt, angnyfous & wroþ.  
 for 9 despyte he wolde 10 a wreke be he swor yñ oþ,  
 Buts he come to amendement. Yñ power atte laste  
 He garkede, and wende forþ to Cornemall faste.  
 Gorloys yñ castles a store al a bonte.  
 In a strong castel he dade yñ wyf, for of hire was al yñ  
 bonte.

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| 1. Deest <i>sr.</i> 2. I wil, <i>sr.</i><br>3. To hire semblant fair, to<br>non <i>sr.</i> 4. Was nought a<br>paid ther with, tho he <i>sr.</i><br>5. Stourdy mod <i>sr.</i> 6. But<br>al was nought. The kyng<br>effious sende a yen his sonde<br><i>sr.</i> 7. Deest <i>sr.</i> 8. The kyng<br>was, tho he wolde nought,<br><i>sr.</i> 9. That despit <i>sr.</i><br>10. Be a wreke, & that he swor<br>his oth, And but he wolde | do his wille, he wolde hym a<br>gaste. So that in to Corne-<br>waille he greithed his oñ<br>faste. In a castel of that cost,<br>me claped Tynagel, The erl<br>let putte his wil that stord<br>was ful wel. And in another<br>hym self he was, for he wolde<br>nought, Yñ cas come hit were<br>wonne, bothe to deþe he<br>brought <i>sr.</i> |
|---|---|

In

In anoper hym self he was, for he wolde nogt,  
 god oas come, þat heo were boþe to deþe ⁊ droȝt."  
 þe caſtel, þat þe erl inne was, þe kyng by ſegeþe faſte,  
 for <sup>1</sup> he myȝte ys gynnens for ſchame to þe oper caſte.  
<sup>2</sup> þe he was þer ſene nyȝt, and <sup>3</sup> he" ſpedde nogt,  
 ȝerne þe contels ſo muche was in ys þoȝt,  
<sup>4</sup> þat he mihte non oper wyt, ne he ne myȝte for ſchame  
 Telle yt bute a pryue knyȝt, Alſyn was ys name,  
 þat he truſte meſt to. And þo þe knyȝt herde þis,  
 "Gyre," he ſelde, "⁊ ne can wȝte, wat red here of ys.  
 "for þe caſtel ys ſo ſtrong, þat þe lady ys inne,  
 "for ich wene al þe lond ne ſchalde yt myð ſtrengþe wȝne.  
 "for þe ſe geþ al aboute, ⁊ bute entre on þer nȝs,  
 "And þat ys bp <sup>5</sup> on harde roches, & ſo narm wel it ys,  
 "þat þer may go bats on & on, þat þe men with inne  
 "myȝte ſis al þe lond, or heo come þer inne.  
 "And nogt for þan, ȝof ſperlyn at þi conſeill were,  
 "ȝof <sup>6</sup> any myȝte, he couþe þe beſt red þe lere.  
 ſperlyn was <sup>10</sup> ſone of ſend, ȝleid yt was hym <sup>11</sup> ſone,  
 þat he ſchalde þe beſte red ſegge, wat were to done.  
 ſperlyn was ſory ȝnow for þe kynges folȝe,  
 And napeles, "Hire kyng," he ſelde, "<sup>12</sup> here mot to maiſtrie.

1. F. he ne myȝhte. Et tamen  
 particula negativa deest etiam  
 in M. 2. Tho M. 3. Deest  
 M. 4. That almoſt he loſte  
 his witt, ac yut he ne dorke  
 for ſhame Telle hyt but to a  
 pryue M. 5. I can no red,  
 what vs to don is M. 6. That  
 y wene al this lond hym ne

holde a wȝnne M. 7. But  
 on entre ther is, M. 8. In  
 harde roche, & ſo narm ȝwis,  
 M. 9. Enȝ man couþ or  
 myȝte, he wolde the beſt  
 lere M. 10. fullone M.  
 11. fullone, M. 12. Her to  
 by houeth maiſtrie M.

"þe

"þe eri hæp twey men hym next, <sup>1</sup> Brygthol & Jordan.  
 "Ich wol <sup>2</sup> make þi self, gef þou wilt, þou art þat y can,  
 "þat habbe al þo fourme of þe eri, as þou were rygt he,  
 "And Olym as Jordan, and as Britthol me.  
 þis art was al <sup>4</sup> clene y do, þat al <sup>3</sup> chaunged he were.  
 heo þre in þe operen forme, <sup>6</sup> þe seius at yt were.  
 Ægeu enen <sup>7</sup> he wende forþ, <sup>8</sup> nanke noman þat can.  
 To þe castel heo come rygt as yt enene man.  
 þe porter y se yu lord come, & <sup>9</sup> yu meste princey twot,  
 With god herte he lette yu lord in, & yu men hope."  
 þe contas was glad y now, þo hire lord to hire cam,  
 And effer oþer in here armes myd gret ioge nam.  
 þo heo to bedde com, þat so longe a twa were,  
 With hem was so gret delyt, þat bitwene hem þere  
 Bi gets was þe beste bodey, þat euer was in þis londe,  
 kyng Arthure þe noble mon, þat euer moþr underkonde.  
 þo þe kynges men nanke amowe, wer he was bi come,  
 heo ferde as wodenmen, and wende he were yuone.  
<sup>10</sup> heo a satleden þe castel, as yt schulde adoun a non.  
 heo, þat with inne were, <sup>11</sup> garked hem echon,  
 And smyte out <sup>12</sup> in a fole wille, & fogte myd here son:  
 So þat þe eri was y flawe, & of yu men mony on,

Occisio  
Gorlois.

1. Brygthol *or* Britachel  
 Galf. *aka*. 2. The make, it  
 thou wilt, *or*. 3. Haue the  
 fourme *or*. 4. Bore *or*. 5.  
 Chaunged hit *or*. 6. Hem self  
 as hit were *or*. 7. Hit *or*.  
 8. He meste no man this can

*or*. 9. His meste princey  
 hope, his hym thought, and  
 let hem yu, & his seruans  
 tweye *or*. 10. They assa-  
 ulte the castel egrely, as he  
 shold down anon *or*. 11. Grete  
 thed *or*. 12. With a full *or*.

And

And þe castel was y nome, & þe folk to sprad þere,  
 get, þe þei hadde al ydo, heo ne fonde not þe kyng þere.  
 þe 'typing to þe 'compas sone was' y nome,  
 þat hire lord was y slawe, and þe castel y nome.  
 We 'þe þe messinger' hym ser þe erl, as hym þogte,  
 þat he hadde so soule 'þlow, sul fore hym of þogte.  
 þe countesse made som del deol, 'for no soþnesse heo nuste.  
 þe kyng, 'for to glade here, bi cluþte hire and custe.  
 "Dame," he seide, "'no sirt þou wel, þat les yt ys al þis:  
 "He wost þou wel ich am eigner Ich wole þe segge how it ys.  
 "Out of þe castel 'stilleliche ych wende al in pryncete,  
 "þat none of myne men yt 'nuste, for to speke with þe.  
 "And þe heo myste me to day, and nuste wer ich was,  
 "'Heo forðen rixt as gyðle men, myd wam no red nas,  
 "And sogte with þe folk 'with oute, & habbeþ in þis manere  
 "'I lore þe castel & hem selue, ac wel þou wost y am here.

1. Cyðyng. 2. I. contas. Nam countesse in. 3. Re-  
 cius, y come, cum. 4. Sed  
 cum regem in specie consulis  
 juxta eam residere inspexissent  
 [nuncii,] erubescences admira-  
 bantur ipsum, quem in obsidio-  
 ne interfectum deseruerant, ita  
 incolumem prævenisse Galf.  
 Ann. 5. I seigh the Erl right,  
 as hym thought, 6. I  
 sowe, sore hit hym of thought,  
 7. But yt forlothe heo  
 nuste. 8. Thenne, to glady  
 hure, cluþte hure ofte & kuste  
 9. He seist though well,  
 that saig hit is al this He

seist though well y am a lyner  
 I wold telle hough hit is. 10.  
 Poteit tamen ne idem quod nō  
 hic significare, quo sensu plena  
 distinctione, non interrogandi  
 nota, est utendum, id quod di-  
 cendum etiam est de nō in textu,  
 quod idem atque nō valere  
 queat. 10. Princely 11.  
 Wiste, to speke a word with  
 the. And whanne hit satlede  
 of me to day. 12. Wit forðe  
 y wot as gyðe men, with  
 wham no red nas, 13.  
 Ther oute, and haneth  
 14. I lost the castel & hem seif,  
 but y am with the here.

"Ac for my castel, þat ys ylore, forþ ich am y now,  
 "And for myn men, þat þe kyng and ys power slog.  
 "Ac my power is now to late, þer fore y drede sore,  
 "Lesse þe kyng<sup>1</sup> bs nyne here, & sorwe þat we were more.  
 "þer fore ich wole, how so yt be, wende agen þe kyng,  
 "And make<sup>2</sup> my paps with hym, ar he bs to schame<sup>3</sup> & bs"  
 brynge.

Forþ he wende, & het ys men, þat gef þe kyng come,  
 þat þei schulde hym þe castel gelde, ar he with strengþe it  
 nome.

þo he come toward ys men, ys owne forme he nom,  
 And leuede þe erle's fourme, & þe kyng Alter by com.  
 Sore hym of þogte þe erle's deþ, ac in oþer half he fonde  
 Joye in hys herte, for þe contasse of spoushed was unbonds.  
 þo he hadde þat he wolde, and payled with ys son,  
 To þe contasse he wende agen, me let hym in a non.  
 Wat þalt it to telle longer bute heo were seþþe at ou,  
 In gret lone longe y now, wan yt nolde oþer gon;  
 And hadde to gedere þis noble lone, þat in þo world ys þere  
 nas,  
 þe kyng Arture, and a dogter, Anne hire name was.

---

1. Dure power ys now lyte, Ar. 4. Reste omittit Ar. 5. þi  
 Ar. 2. þer yune bs nyne, that the Ar. 6. And kyng  
 that were sorwe more Ar. a ye by cam Ar.  
 3. fersk my pees with hym,

<sup>1</sup> **D**uta and Dula, þis lufre Saxones twey,  
 In prison were at London, as ich þen tolde, þeyr.  
 Wyð þere warden þei lufen, so þat þei beþ ƿ moȝ  
 flome into <sup>2</sup> Germanus, þat in Almayne ys,  
 And grete power gadereð of Saxones þer.  
 Gif it hadde betur <sup>3</sup> ƿ þo, þat me hadde ƿ slawe hem er:  
 In Scotland þes armede, and <sup>4</sup> werraden faste,  
 And barude & flom to groude, & townes a down castr.  
 þe kyng lay þe sore syk, heo were glad for þat cas.  
 An erl þer was of Leycetre, ðet ƿs name was,  
 þat <sup>5</sup> strong knygȝt was & god, þe kyng hym be tok ƿs myȝt.  
 And þe power of þis lond, <sup>6</sup> with þe heþe men to fyȝte.  
 Also ƿs dogter Aune þe gif hym to <sup>7</sup> hys" wƿue.  
 þis noble <sup>8</sup> erl with þe Britones aȝen ƿs son mente bilne,  
 And fagȝt, and flom <sup>9</sup> faste, and þe heþene <sup>10</sup> al so god.  
 Ac naþeles þe heþene folk fastor a ȝen ſted.  
 For þe Brutones nolde far grude astur þe erl do.  
 For he nas not kyng, & þer fore þe worfe hem <sup>11</sup> com to.  
 þo þe tȝipȝ com to þe kyng, þat <sup>12</sup> heo so feblȝche ſpedde,  
 He was so fori and so wroȝ, þat he neȝ amedde.

1. Duta and Dula, the luthere  
 Saxones tweye, *Ar.* 2. Ger-  
 manus *Ar.* 3. ƿ be, they hadde  
 be queld ere *Ar.* 4. Werrde  
 swithe faste, *Ar.* 5. Stale-  
 worth man was & good, the  
 kyng toke hym his myȝt,  
*Ar.* 6. With heþene men *Ar.*  
 7. Deest *Ar.* 8. Erl a penit the

Saxones wende forth as  
 bȝut, *Ar.* 9. Staleworthy,  
 and *Ar.* 10. No good. For  
 the heþene men ſirȝdore t-  
 ur with ſted. The Brutones  
 eke for pruyte nought for the  
 Erl do *Ar.* 11. Cam to *Ar.*  
 12. Hit *Ar.*

Wifore hym he lette bringe ys men, & bi gan hem talle blame,  
pat heo for heore grude bringe þis lord to schame.

þider he seide he wolde hym self, þag he ne mygite on fote go,  
get any horsbere wolde hym bere, to werke hym of ys so.

Myd god mille he wende sech in an horsbere,

And ys sech sech with hym, pat he balder for hym wote.

þe Saxones were so proude, pat þe kyng com so,

pat 2 unneþe heo wolde armen on hem do.

for heo seide, it were schame, pat we y armed were.

3 Ays he more þan half ded y lad in a berer

þe kyng 4 sette up ys herte hys, & ordeyned ys men talle.

þe Saxones 5 he asaillede, and to gronde caste.

So pat some dayes hem of 6 þegte here grute,

pat heo of þe nobis men þe kyng tolde so 7 into.

for þer was 8 Dita y slame, and ys colga Dese al so,

And so yt hadde þe heter, pat me hadde er y do.

þe Saxones, pat mygite se, bi goune to se talle.

þus 9 þe same dede kyng comþe hem agaste.

"10 Lo," he seide, "þat clepde me sam ded kyng some,

"And get ich hadde leuer sam ded hem ouercome,

"þan hol and sond be ouercome; and leuer al so me ys

"for to dpe myd honour, þan 11 libbe in schame y wps.

Occisio  
Ostr.

1. The folk, that wende  
forth with hym, the bolder for  
hym were *Ar.* 2. Unneþe for  
hure grute hit wolde *Ar.*  
3. He is more than *Ar.* 4. His  
herte sett an hygh, & ordeyned  
his folk talle *Ar.* 5. Hit asail-  
lede, and slough to gronde  
faste *Ar.* 6. Thought al hure  
gret prunte, That hit of the  
noble man *Ar.* 7. Lupte *Ar.*  
8. Dita y slame, and Dese also,  
*Ar.* 9. The half dede *Ar.* Se-  
mimortuus *Galf.* *Man.* 10. "Lo  
half dede kyng," he seide,  
"ye clupeth me some, Pat  
haue y leuer half dede hem  
ouercome, *Ar.* 11. Lpne *Ar.*

X 2

þe



' þe Saxones ' were þe ouercome, ac þes ne leaede get nogt  
 Heores schreameþe dede, ac to wroþe þele wer þes to deþe y  
 brogt.

For heores eftner was þem com ener mo and mo.  
 Boþe bi Est and bi Norþ þei duðe ' muchel wo.  
 þe kyng wolde agen þem wende, ac þe no moſte for ys conſeil.  
 For þe ' feblor wel þe was for þe oþer tranail.  
 þe Saxones hem hadde ymad in þis leand ymys

Primi re-  
 ges Saxo-  
 rum.

kynges in þre ' ſtudes, þat al to on y comen ys.  
 Hengist ' was firſt kyng of ' Kent, & Elle in Souþſex,  
 And ſeþþe laſt was Certyk kyng of Weſſex.

For þe and Henryk ys ſone come bp at garnemouþe,  
 And ſeþþe a duk, þat hatte Þort, com bp at Þortelmonþe.  
 It was as ' in Gere of grace þat God was bere, ich mene,  
 þat Certik com firſt, four hundred yer & four ſcore & tens.  
 Kyng he was of Weſt ſex, and ys ofſpreyng al ſo,  
 And atte laſte þiþke kynde al þe oþer wen þer to.  
 For Þort, þiþke grete duk, com bp here by Houþe,  
 He clepuþ ' yt," þer he firſt com bp, aftur hym Þortel-  
 monþe.

1. The Saxones tho were  
 ouercome, that hi by left hit  
 nought. Wure Herewed herte  
 hem wrother þele to deth for-  
 ſoth brought. Afterwar eft  
 the Saxones oft war ener mo  
 and mo *Ar.* 2. Devicti autem  
 Saxones, non idcirco à malitia  
 ſua deſtiterunt, ſed aquilonares

provincias ingreſſi, populos in-  
 ceſſanter infeſtabant *Galfr. Mon.*  
 3. Gret *Ar.* 4. feblor he was  
 tho for his erſt travayll *Ar.*  
 5. Stedes, that come to on now  
 is *Ar.* 6. firſt was kyng in  
 Kent, and Elle *Ar.* 7. Sic.  
 8. In the yer *Ar.* 9. Deest *Ar.*

þus

þus were <sup>1</sup> heo <sup>2</sup> in werre and <sup>3</sup> wo ymenges þe Saxones,  
 Som tyme aboue <sup>4</sup> & <sup>5</sup> some tyme by nepe, <sup>6</sup> þere myð þe  
 Britones.

Ac al aboue <sup>7</sup> neuere hit nere ar astur þe kyng Betwre,

<sup>8</sup> Ac suppe hit wonne al clene out, as ge solle þere astur hure.

After, þe gode kyng, (of <sup>9</sup> man we speke by bore,)

<sup>10</sup> Was feble after þat he was in þe hors bore y bore,

þat he mošte wor febleste nede <sup>11</sup> holde hym stille,

<sup>12</sup> þer bore þe laper Saxons <sup>13</sup> so muche adde her wille.

<sup>14</sup> And gude þo hyt ne mygte hym se, <sup>15</sup> hyt þegte wyt trayson

In some manere hym bryng of lyne, oþer wyt porson.

Hyt sende her feble messagers in pouere monne wede,

þat at doles in þe court her mete myð oþere bede.

Hit aspyed in þe court ouer al of þynges alle,

So þat hyt under gete <sup>16</sup> an wells, ney þe halle,

Of wat þe kyng ofte dronc. wor he ne dronc in sach cas

Latyl oþer þyng bore þere of, wor þe wadyr so cold was.

Wanne he dronc ekyn wyn, þeramong yt was ydo.

And me made metes in þe court myð pulke water al so.

1. Deest *Ar.* 2. In wo men-  
 ged *Ar.* 3. Deest *Ar.* 4. Ac-  
 mong the *Ar.* 5. Were hit  
 neuere er after *Ar.* 6. But  
 after hym hit wonne al clene,  
 as ge shal after hure *Ar.*  
 7. Whan *Ar.* 8. Can faste for  
 to feble an horse beere y bore,  
 So that he mošte for febleste  
 nedes *Ar.* 9. Ther fore *Ar.*  
 10. To muche *Ar.* 11. ynt  
 (omisso and) tho they ne *Ar.*  
 12. Hit thoughte in trefon

for to brynge hym to deth  
 with som maner popson. Hit  
 sende fele messagers in poure  
 mennes wede, *Ar.* 13. Well,  
 negh the kyng's halle, Of  
 which the kyng ofte dronc.  
 For in this like cas hitel  
 oþur thyng he dronc, but  
 water that cold was. Whanne  
 he dronc also any wyne, ther  
 on hit was y do, And mete  
 me made in the court of thilk  
 welle also *Ar.*

þo

þo þe tyngeours yt under gete, hit 1 on beynmunde wyþ þanne  
 þe melle aboute in eche tyde 2 myð her in þer gynne.  
 þat þe water, þat þerof com, poiſon was 3 wel ſtrong.  
 þe kyng was ſone aweiſend, 4 þo þe þerof drene,  
 Ðe mo þan an hundred of þys men, ar me myðe were of yt com.  
 Spuche ſame more hit myðe, þat þat ſuch 5 ſayde þen.  
 Sop hym ſede Merlyn er, þat þe ſolde þen þeiſon deye.  
 þe chere men of lond, þo hit ded hym gleſe,  
 Deale forme hit made quon, ac þo þer nas oþer red,  
 Hit let hym beburge by þe deſper, as þe hym ſalk beþe,  
 6 Hitts mynyſtre of Ambryſſure, at Stonchenge jure.  
 Wel ege 7 þat þe be myðe ſude, þat ſuch ſignature þe.

**A** ſture, 8 After ſone, (of man me tolde by more,)

Þe abbyth 9 had þen þe was bygete 8 yþere.

þo þys kyng was þen ded, þe hope men alle come  
 Of þe lond to 10 Cyſtre, and conſeyl þerof ſome  
 Wor to make hem a kyng. 10 Wor note hem deof þerto.  
 Wor the Saxons myðe, þat þe kyng was ded to,

1. Fontem namque aggressi  
 funemophandi proditores, ipsum-  
 que affecerunt veneno, ita ut ma-  
 nans aqua tota corrumpereetur  
*Galf. Adm.* 2. With þure on-  
 beynmunde gyne *Ar.* 3. Full  
*Ar.* 4. When þe *Ar.* 5. Swis  
 helðom. So hym ſeyde Mer-  
 lyn as þe tholde thurgh poi-  
 ſon deye. The hegh men of  
 the lond, tho hit his deeth 8  
 ſeyþe, *Ar.* 6. By ſide the tonn

of Ambresbury, at Ston-  
 chenge 8 wis *Ar.* 7. That þe  
 a worthi ſode, oþer ſuch ſi-  
 gnature is *Ar.* 8. After's  
 ſone, (of wham *Ar.* 9. Cy-  
 ſtre *Ar.* 10. Urgebat enim  
 eos necessitas, quia, audito præ-  
 dicti regis obitu, Saxones con-  
 ues suos ex Germania invitate-  
 rant, & duce Colgrino ipsos ex-  
 terminare nitentur *Galf. Adm.*

Hit sende northe to Almayne after more goot knyght,  
 And þoght þyn Bruteus al elene of londe dryue.  
 So þat hit adde y woune al elene þat shorþ londe,  
 fram Wyndesore to Catunyn, & adde al in her hande.  
 That was þe gong nok of bysant þere vaukeþ,  
 And gut al þat londe made : hym, after þe fader's deþe,  
 And <sup>2</sup> began soon after such man vertu be,  
 þat menessolde in noue londe ys per noue yte.  
 So large he was & so hendre, & <sup>3</sup> al so be honore;  
 So hardy and so gentyl, and of so dayr manere.  
 ' þo so muche folk to hym come, ' of knyghtys gong & elde,  
 þat he <sup>4</sup> hadde noght wel wate wryth such myght up to helde.  
 Ac <sup>5</sup> ys herre was more god, gong þer he were,  
 ' That he þoght of þe Saxons ys spente by avert.  
 He bygan þe wel done to avert ys banet.  
 Alor ys prouesse he adde done gret folk and port.  
 He wende toward Cactungh ' wryth dayr ' capowys y non.  
 þo þe Saxons þet under gert, þat he þaderward doun,  
 Of Scottes, and of þeyars, and of þyn shone hit nome,  
 Gret þer y non and strong, and ayeu hym come.

1. Subintellige, wyng. 2.  
 That he bygan such a man  
 to be, That he myght in  
 nou londe to what his per se  
 M. 3. Drest M. 4. And so  
 M. 5. Of gonge and of elde,  
 M. 6. Hadde vaukeþe wryth  
 wryth such a myght helde M.  
 7. That he ys go, quia in illa

probitas largientem comminabatur, statim Saxones inquitur,  
 ut eorum opibus, quas ei famula-  
 batur, diuaret familiam Cliff.  
 M. 8. And euer þe thoght  
 of the Saxons his dispende  
 wert M. 9. With gret power  
 y myght M. 10. Sic.

<sup>1</sup> per

1 þer was slagt in eyþer half, none mercy þer was.  
 Þe kyng Arture atte laste (as God wolde) aboute was,  
 And symede into Euerwyk 2 Colgryn þer cheunteyn,  
 And hym, þo he was myþynne, byleged 3 myd al ys many.  
 Baldulf, Colgryne's broþer, fyr þousend men myd him nam,  
 And, ys broþer boote help, toward Euerwyk com.  
 4 So he was fram Euerwyk aboute 5 an ten myle,  
 He 6 at knute, & þogte, þat he wolde myd gyle  
 Wp þe kyng Arture come anonymar by nygte,  
 And so him and al ys folc sende, gylt he mytte.  
 Þe kyng was 7 þerof ywar, he þogte to do boote.  
 Myd fyr hondred kyngtes, & 8 þre þousend men 9 anote,  
 Cadour, erl of Cornwale, agen hym he sende,  
 10 þat agen hym come anonymare, by awey þat he wende,  
 And slou and bere woundede, and moupe brogte to deþe,  
 So þat þys 11 Baldulf of scapede alyue vnneste.  
 Þe wyle 12 þat 13 þe kyng Arture byleged Euerwyk,  
 He tolde hym of a gret duc, 14 þat het Cheldryk,  
 þat out of Helayne com 14 in to Scotlonde so  
 15 Myd fyr hondred spynful kyngtes, & al þe atyl þer to.

1. Ther was slaughter gret  
 & noȝh, and mercy lite ther  
 was *Ar.* 2. Colgryn *Ar.*  
 3. With his myght and mayn.  
 Baldulf Colgryne's brother,  
*Ar.* 4. And tho he was *Ar.*  
 5. A *Ar.* 6. Wynte, *Ar.* 7. Her  
 of y war, and thoughte her of  
 do boote. With six *Ar.* 8. Foure  
*Ar.* Sed ut Codex noster Har-  
 leyanus in *Gulfr. Ann.* 9. A fote,

*Ar.* 10. An yn ywar to falle  
 on hym, by weye as hit wende.  
 The Erl brak vp his bussh-  
 ment, & broghte manyon to  
 deþe *Ar.* 11. Like Baldulf  
 ascapede a lyue vnneste *Ar.*  
 12. Deest *Ar.* 13. He claspde  
 Cheldryk, *Ar.* 14. To Scot-  
 londe tho *Ar.* 15. With VI  
 hundred shynful of men, and  
 þure atyl ther to. That was  
 power

here was so gret poyr in to an londe y lad.  
 þo þe kyng's conseil wouke þys, þyt was som deis adrad.  
 þe kyng Arture hit radde anon, to London vorte wende,  
 To nyne þer ys conseil, wach were best gende,  
 Lette such poer come vp hym, and hym kende.  
 þe kyng dade after her rede, and to Londone wende.  
 þere he hulde ys þarlement, wat were best to done.  
 1 þo 2 þat he and ys conseil at ons red were sone.  
 3 þo þat to þe lasse Brutayne þe kyng sone sende  
 To Howwel, kyng of þe lond, þat he to hym wende  
 To helpe hym in such nede, and þat hym vnderstode  
 þat knaude yt wolde þat he dade, þor hit were of one blode.  
 þe kyng Arture's syſter's sone þys kyng Howwel was,  
 4 And þe kyng's sone of lasse Brytayne, & none nerer kande  
 þer nas.  
 þo þe meſſager wyþ þe tydýng to kyng Howwel com,  
 Þys conseil wel haſtelyche in ſuch nede he nome,  
 Thor to helpe ys 5 neuen, and ys kynedom.  
 6 Wyþ byſſens þouſend kyngtes into þys londe he com.

power wonder gret to on  
 londe y ladde. Tho the kyng  
 harde this, he was somdel a  
 dradde. The kyng's counſail  
 radde hym a non, to London  
 ſorto wende, To counſaile  
 hogh he myght beſt his ene-  
 myes a ſhende.

1. So that. 2. Commu-  
 ni tandem aſſenſu illato, mittun-  
 tur Armorica nuncii ad regem

Hoëlum, qui ei calamitatem  
 Britannia notificarent. Erat au-  
 tem Hoëlus filius ſororis Arthu-  
 ri, ex Budicio, rege Armorico-  
 rum Britonum, generatus Gaſt.  
 Mon. 3. To the laſſe Bru-  
 tayne ſorto ſende ſone. 4.  
 The kynredene of hem no  
 ferther nas. 5. Kynnel-  
 man. 6. Wyth XV. thou-  
 ſend of men to this.

At Souþhamton 1 he com by, & þo hy to gadere come  
 þæt tene kynges hit cufte hem, & hit clippe hem ydone.  
 þo hit adde þer folc y set, 2 as rygt was in ſuch cas,  
 Northward towarþ Lyncolne hit wende. 3 myd god pas.  
 þere hit come & mette hym, & ſtrong batayle ſmyte þere,  
 So þat man þan hyr þouſend of þe Saxen aſlame were,  
 What aſlame wat aduent, ſo þat atte laſte,  
 þe 4 hit ne ſege oþer mon, hit goune to the baſte  
 In to a wode þer by ſey: and 5 þo hit þer in come,  
 þem þogte hit mere ſþere ynon, & toke þe laſte gome.  
 þe kyng ſymede 6 after, and byſeged hem aboute,  
 7 þe among þe 8 tren hit muſte hem, þat hit nadde nodoute."  
 þo þe kyng Arthur yſey, þat hit nolde out come,  
 þat he wode he, let falle þe grette tren ſone,  
 And leyde ech bye oþer aboute in ech ende,  
 þat yt was, as yt were, awal. þat hit ne ſolde out wende.  
 þe 9 dayes & þe nyght meze les hit muſte hem ſo,  
 þat hit muſte hou on take, ne wat þon hunger do.  
 þe kyng Arthur hit byſogte merry 10 atte ende,  
 þat he granted hem in pes out of ys londe wende,

1. This kynges tweyne  
 furst to gedre come. Wither  
 othar clippe gan, and kufte  
 to gedre y lome Ar. 2. As  
 hit ſel in ſuch Ar. 3. A ful  
 good pas. The Brutones and  
 the Saxones ſmyte a gret ba-  
 taille there, So that ſixty  
 thousand [ſed, *ſex milia* in *Galfr.*  
*Mon.*] Saxones ther y ſlawe  
 were, And ſele ther of were

a dreynt, ſo Ar. 4. Hit ſepgh  
 non othar mon, Ar. 5. When-  
 ne Ar. 6. After laſte, and Ar.  
 7. Deest Ar. 8. Treſſ, hit  
 kepte hem longe, for al Ar-  
 thure's route Ar. 9. Dayes  
 & thre nyght hit were y kepte  
 ſo, That hit muſte for hangre  
 What hit myghte do. Of  
 kyng Ar. 10. Atten ende, Ar.

An

In his granted hym al her god, þat hit hyder laddow,  
 Gold and silver and tresour, al cleue þat hit wold.  
 And biþete hym eke ech gre, to bere hym truage  
 Out of her lond, and þerto take hym god offage.  
 þe kyng þow hit consel encanted wel her to,  
 In god offage of won, þe truage wold to do;  
 And etel al her god, wold let hym al þat wende.  
 And hit hym of þiste lond, þat he was hem to sende.  
 Wyð her god & riht & wyð her tresour he wylde  
 Sufferen gode wylle hit oð boðe sigte.  
 Ac gut his lastre wille men, in þe hit so hit towe,  
 Turnede agen to fyllerwode, and whoset eðd wone.  
 Witte hanene of Cotwode hit gonne eft aryue,  
 And dode hym wille, & rewe in Denegate blyue.  
 And so wold in Biddelfelt, and muche wo gonne he  
 Al anon to Sentint, and to Wate to,  
 And bylegede þe thynk, he wold þoute hit wete.  
 Wold þe kyng wylde was hit bygonne het werre þere.  
 For þe kyng was toward Scotland, & awreke hym þogte  
 Of Scottes and of Pigars, þat euet dode hym wroghte.

1. Promiserunt quoque, se da-  
 turos ei tributum ex Germania,  
 obliquesque inde mansuros *Galf.*

*Non* 2. Make hym god *Ar.*

3. Mentede ther to, And  
 offage of hem nam truage to  
 do. Et helde hem & al hure  
 god, & let hem bat wende *Ar.*

4. Up aryue, And come a  
 londe, & tobbede in Denegate  
 wite as blyue *Ar.* 5. Deest

*Ar.* 6. Also, *Ar.* 7. Couin,  
 but out hit holde were. The  
 kyng fer by North was for-  
 to werry there. Of Scottes  
 & of Picardz a wreke hym he  
 thoghte, That entermort to his  
 lond mache same wroghte.  
 The thyng to hym com of  
 thes Saxones tho, he wiste  
 neuere hoder turne so wo was  
 hym tho. Of Scottes *Ar.*

Y 2

þo



þo þe tȝdyng to hym come of þe Saxons : we,  
 He niste in weper ende turne, so wol he was of no.  
 Of þe Scottes" he wolde awreke he, gif tyme hym þeris geue,  
 Ac he : wolde þer non þyng þe Saxons bylene.  
 : Howwel, þis scyfter sone, kyng of þe oþer Brutayne,  
 Best in ȝis herte was, þer anguyſte to playne,  
 (For he lay bynoure syk) þat he solde by lene hym þere,  
 Laste þe Scottes hym dude shame, oþer þat he ded wert.  
 He bylenyd hym poer ynou, and toward Somersete  
 Wende toward þe Saxons, þer þat wolde he noght lete."  
 þo he come to Somersete, and þe Saxons seȝ,  
 He houeðe, & spec to ȝis men þes wordes al an heȝ:  
 "For : þis lufur Saxons : abytt gret dedeyn  
 "Worto holde me treuþe, gif ȝch abbe enȝ mayn,  
 "Ich chyȝle treuþe holde to Ihesu Crist treuȝly (gif ȝch may)  
 "And þat blod of ȝis kande sloce awreke gut to day."  
 "Armeȝ gon non hastelyche, armeȝ gon anon,  
 "For we wolle to day : myȝd God help ouercome us son.

1. *Idem est quod Anglo-Sax. pa five pz, i.e. wo vel forrow. Sed þo (ut reor) est repouendum è Cod. M. ut prius þo, when, posterius then signet.*  
 2. *Wolde for no thyng M.*  
 3. *But for Howel, his sister sone, kyng of laste Brutayne, At Alclud fore sik lay, he was in gret payne, And that he moste nedely bylene hym tho there, Leste the Scottes dude hym shame, or elles that he dede were. He bileft a power*

*with hym, and toward Somersete He wende a þen the Saxones, he wolde hit noght for lete M. 4. These M. 5. Haueth of us dedeyne, And haueth thus & broke hure oth, yf y haue myght and mayne, I make a vogh to Ihesu Christ, (to holde, yf y may,) The blood, that they haueth had, to venge put to day M. 6. Thurgh Gode's help ouercome oure son. The kyng at the gynnynge let an hange anon*

Ac þe kyng atte bygyrnynge let hang echon  
 Her ostages wor þe treson, he ne bylenede nogt on.  
 þo þys " gode" folc gare was " in to batayle ryde,  
 Seyn Dubryc, þe archebyscop of Carleon, gan abyde,  
 And wende " by a lute hul amydd þys compayne :  
 " Ge Crystyne men," he seyde, " of " so" noble seynore,  
 " þat þeþ Gode's owe lymys, þoru goure Crystenedom,  
 " þenc þe on God, þat wor vs deýde, & on " þys kynedom.  
 " Frygteþ wor gure " kande, and defendeþ goure rygte.  
 " þencheþ þe neds of þe londe, & of " vr louerd" mygte..  
 " And gif eny of gou ys aflawe here in þys frygte  
 " To sauy " þe lond folc wor þe londe's rygte,  
 " He symeþ purlyche God, þat gef ys owe luf here,  
 " To sauy vs synneful men fram þe deuele's poer.  
 " And wo so here ys aflawe, ys deþ hym sal be  
 " In " lesnesse of al ys synnys, & ys soule shalle fle  
 " And be ybrogt bynore God, ar " þat body be cold.  
 He " asonled al þys folc, þo he adde al þys y told.  
 " þat folc þoru ys prechynge so god wyle nom þere,  
 " þat hem þogte echewyle fyue, in batayle ar hit were.

anon Alle hure ostages, he  
 leste a lyne non .

1. Deest . 2. In bataille  
 for to ryde, Cherchebyscop  
 Dobryght bade hem alle a-  
 byde, . 3. Upon a litel  
 hulle among this . 4. Deest  
 . 5. Thenketh on God,  
 . 6. His . sed rectius þys.  
 7. Kynde blod, and also for  
 your ryght . 8. Our Lorde's  
 . 9. The Christene sey,

and his Lorde's ryght, he  
 fyweth purly God, that gaf  
 . 10. Forþenenge .  
 11. The body . 12. Shoul-  
 ede . 13. The people .  
 14. That enery while hem  
 thoghteten, er hit were there.  
 The kyng thanne let arme  
 hym self in handerk noble &  
 riche. In helm of gold upon  
 his hed, nowher non hitte  
 liche .

þe

þe kyng was about þat tyme wyth hundred men & fyfte,  
 Wyth hem of gold on þe hound, (and went wyth fyfte)  
 þe fourme of a dragon þen : was þus.  
 Wys men, þat þet þerforde, was þat þe yonge man  
 Aboute þe myght, and þen þe þe þe man and þe  
 þe þe of our lady, and þe man al þe þe.  
 Wyth þe man þe was þe, þe to þe strong man & þe,  
 Calyboute þe was þe, and was no lath þe.  
 In þe eyt þe man þe man, þe þe man was þe,  
 Long & gret : & strong þe, hym he myght kille þe.  
 He þe al : on þe Crisse, and þe man ethen,  
 Wpe þe donne about þe þe : myte myd þe.  
 Wp myte datayle strong þe, þe al long þe.  
 þe Saxons in þe þe man enen þe.  
 Wyche folk þe was þe man in eyt þe.  
 þe þe myt þe man, þe al myte no lath abyde,  
 : Wp an toret of an : þe hulle þe Saxons wende þe,  
 þe þe hulle to hym was a castel, as þe wete.  
 Amorag, þe þe day was, about est þe myte,  
 And in datayle strong þe bygone of lath to þe,

1. Ipse vero Arthurus, Ionica,  
 tanto rege dignus, indutus, au-  
 rum galeam, summatro dra-  
 conis insculptam, capiti adaptat  
 Goff. Ann. 2. Was his crest.  
 Wp hild, that þe þe man,  
 aboute his nekke he kille. A  
 crow þe on was þe, and  
 on a corner An þe of our  
 lady on that þe he be.  
 Wp his sword Ar. 3. Deest

Ar. 4. Þerlers as þe wete.  
 5. Was þe man, myte  
 þe of the man Ar. 6. In Ar.  
 7. Wp the man Ar. 8. Wp the  
 cop of an hille the Saxons  
 wende þe, for to be re-  
 lupt to þe, and kille, as þe  
 wete. A morwe as lath as þe  
 was þe, down þe a lath, Ar.  
 9. L. þe.

And

And flower was in either half, þat wuþe yt men ymoun  
 þo þe kyngs letters y ley. þat me so wiste yn men. Gou.  
 Hys herte began to arere, þat he wold þe maystre.  
 And wude yn wille <sup>1</sup> al to God, & on ys moder Marie,  
 And Calibourne, ys gode suerd, <sup>2</sup> myn gode, earnest adraue,  
 And suert aboute <sup>3</sup> in either wyde to grounde & hard ymoun,  
 And, four hundred men, as he tiste, ys oure hande be foun.  
 In forty and ten also, þe asant was, lordel, ten.  
 And þer to, hadde he oþer help, boþe God & Seynte Marie,  
 In Calibourne ys gode suerd, to do, such maystrye,  
 þo ys men, yleys þys, after wiste þis drome.  
 And to grounde aboute fuyte, & þe Saxons hadde foun.  
 Colgryn, þat þe mayster was, and <sup>4</sup> Batholf, yn brother,  
 Aflame were, at þis asant, & also mony, <sup>5</sup> a naber,  
 Alas, many þat seyn þere were aflame, & Celidrec atte laste,  
 Hys felawes, þo he sey, aflame, bygan, to fle wiste.  
 þo þys batayle, was yde, to þe kyng, cam, messoge,  
 þat þe Scotas & <sup>6</sup> þygars, wude þym get out rage,  
<sup>7</sup> And lre, Homel yn nenen, þeng of þer þer, Statannys,  
<sup>8</sup> þat fyk <sup>9</sup> day, as ych seyn er, þesed wist, al þer mayne.

1. Al on God, and his mo-  
 der. 2. With earnest by he  
 woud. 3. In either half  
 to grounde and faste foughe,  
 four hundred under his  
 hand, with his sword gon  
 daye. 4. Through the help of our  
 lord and his moder Marie.  
 The kyng's men, seyn this,  
 & after hym faste, drome.

4. Batholf. 5. Another.  
 Then, then men, thus, were  
 flame, Chelidrec atte laste,  
 Who he seyn non other man,  
 gon to fle faste. 6. Thicars  
 den. 7. And, that Homel  
 8. That, as was, as. 9.  
 lre þe er, by seged with þere  
 wape. 9. Legg, lay.

þo

þo þe kyng hærde þys, hym longede þader fore,  
 1 He ne mygte þer leng abyde, þe Saxons to fywe more.  
 Cadour, erl of Cornwale, þe 2 bylenede þere  
 3 Wyð ten þousend men 4 borro fywe hem, þat of scaped were.  
 The erl sympe 5 myð ys men þe Saxons bakke ynon,  
 And strong batayle smot, and 6 Teldryc þe prince slou,  
 And ys compayne þe mestedel, bete anwe atte wende,  
 Meryc hym cryde, þat hit moße in to her owe lond wende,  
 And suore 7 & take hym ostage, þat hit ne wolde neuere ywys  
 Thys lond 8 eft asayly, ne skawe don amys.  
 þe þat þe folc of Saxons 9 namore hyðyr 10 us" come,  
 þe wyle þe kyng Arture 11 wulle þys kynedome.  
 Cadour, erl of Cornwale, þo he adde ydo al þys,  
 To þe kyng ys louerd wende, to Scotlond ymys.  
 þe kyng adde 12 er" among þe Scottes yslyryd hym wel wel,  
 13 And delyuered of hym, or he come, ys nenen fyre Howwel,  
 And ysawe of hem monyon, so þat 14 in an yle  
 Hit 15 of scapede atte laste 16 by nore mong amyle,  
 17 þet water geh al aboute, and þer yane eke bep  
 18 Sixty heye roches, as men þere yleþ.

1. As myghte he ther no  
 lengor byde, the Saxones to  
 werry more 2. By leste  
 3. With 4. To fol-  
 we hem, that a scaped were  
 5. With 6. Cheldrik  
 7. And ostages yene, hit  
 wolde neuere y wis 8. A  
 saily more, ne shawe, ne do a  
 mys. So that 9. No more

10. Deest 11. War-  
 dede 12. Deest 13.  
 And remewed the sege, or he  
 com, fro his colyn Howel, 14.  
 In to an 15. A sca-  
 pede 16. Before hym ma-  
 ny 17. The water by  
 goth hit al 18. LX. roches  
 in that yle, þo that cometh  
 ther leth

þer

þer ynn nomak ne wonyep, ac in erthe roche þer ys  
 In tyme of gere an <sup>1</sup> erne's nest, þat hit bredeþ en yfrys.  
 Ech ys in a roche hym self, þer hit ne mowe nogt ne be.  
 Wor hem byhouep muche mete, & hit ne mowe nogt wel be  
 Wor febleke of her brode, ac man her bryddys rype beþ,  
 þere hit syndeþ more mete, in london aboute hit sleþ.  
 þe kyng <sup>2</sup> bylyf þys Scottes <sup>3</sup> þere myd al wo,  
 þat þer deyde of hem þer hongre a þousend and mo.  
 And gut nolde þe strowen to none þer go.  
 Gyllem, kyng of <sup>4</sup> her londe, to hem wende þo  
 Wyth gret poer in þe watet, to helpe hym in þys cas.  
 þo kyng Arture yt wiste, prest agen hym he wiste  
 And sloe of hem to grounde, so þat hit goume with drafte,  
 And hit, þat mygte come agen, alys weste wel drafte.  
 þo þe kyng hem adde asayten so, þat hit ne hepte nanmore  
 hym mete,  
 gut he forhte asayty þe Scottes, ar he hem lete.  
 He bysette hem drafte ynn, so þat ote laste þere  
 þe byllopes and oþer prelatz, þat of londe were,  
<sup>5</sup> Some with grette procesyon in gret anguyll and fere  
 Depynde bynore þe kyng, & her rekykes myd hem bere,

1. Eagle's nest. At in marg.  
 2. Nest of Ernes as ead. ma-  
 rin, licet adjacent manus admo-  
 dum recent, or Nest of Eagles.  
 Es quidem vocī Eagles addi-  
 palatur *Gulfr. Mon.* 2. *Wilegedo*  
 3. They and drafte hem  
 muche wo, So that of hem  
 for hunger dede a thousand

& wel me. And yit wiste  
 nocht the strowes the  
 kyng's wile do. The kyng  
 of Irland William to  
 Scotland com that while  
 Wyth gret power by water,  
 to helpe hem in this Ile &c.  
 4. L. Irland. 5. L. com  
 cum &c.

And oþer haly chyrche þynges <sup>1</sup> bare worþe echon.  
 Wyȝ <sup>2</sup> welle alle adoun eke bynore þe kyng anon,  
 And bed hym, þor yȝ suete lone, þat deyde on þe rode,  
 þat he hadde reuþe of hem, & of <sup>3</sup> yȝ" soule vnderſode.  
 4 Wanne he adde þer bynore of hem yllawe y nowe,  
 5 þat he ſoffrede þulke iȝbde, þat he ſollyche alle ne ſlome;  
 And þat he ſom þurne of þe londe grauntede hem þere,  
 War yune hit leuede, & enermo ſernage hym bere.  
 þe kyng, þor wyte <sup>6</sup> herof, bygan to wepe ſore,  
 And nom of hem ſykerneſſe, þat hit ne ſelde mȝs do nanmore,  
 And graunted hem <sup>7</sup> annende lond, to monye yune in ſernage,  
 To bere <sup>8</sup> þer of hym and yȝ enenemor truage.  
 Non <sup>9</sup> were þer myd hym þre men, (þat of ryȝte kunde come  
 Of kynges of þulke lond, <sup>10</sup> borte Saxons hem bynome)  
 Bancel, and Urian, and Lot þe þrydde was,  
 þat ſpouſede þe kynges <sup>11</sup> ſuſter, (ȝe abbȝþ yȝhard þat cas,)  
 And adde by hyre tneye ſones, ſyre Wawen þe þende,  
 þe oþer het Wodred, þat þe kyng bytrayde <sup>12</sup> atte nende.

1. Lege, bare botte, ſive, ut in  
*Ar. barſot. Nam nudis pedibus*  
*in Gaſfr. Mon.* 2. felle *Ar.*  
 3. Deeſt *Ar.* 4. And ſuthe he  
*Ar.* 5. A ſewe, that leſte, hit  
 prayde hym ſane, and holde  
 hem al his owe. And that  
 ſom þeorne of the lond he  
 wolde hem graunte there,  
 Wþer inne hit myȝhte lye,  
 and enere aſtur truage hym  
 bere *Ar.* 6. Hadde reuþe, he  
 ſegh hem wepe ſo ſore *Ar.*  
 aliter atque *Gaſfr. Mon.* 7. An

ende of lond, to lye inne in  
 ſernage, *Ar.* 8. Ther fore  
 hym *Ar.* 9. Aderant ibi tres  
 fratres, regali proſapia orti, Loth  
 uidelicet, atque Urianus, nec non  
 Anguſelus, qui, antequam Sax-  
 ones prævaluiſſent, principatum  
 illarum partium habuerant *Gaſfr.*  
*Mon.* 10. For Saxones it hem  
 by nome) Aguiſſel, & Urien,  
 and Loth *Ar.* 11. Wane ad-  
 dit *Ar.* 12. After atten ende  
*Ar.*

þe

þe kyng Arture þys þre men kynges made þere

<sup>1</sup> Ech of þs rygte ertage, as her elderne were.

<sup>2</sup> Kuncel kyng of þur Scotlond, and <sup>3</sup> Uryan þs broþer

<sup>4</sup> Kyng of lond of þurystecens, þor he was net þen anoper,

Of þe contrepe of <sup>5</sup> Ledenespe Lot he made kyng,

<sup>6</sup> And of al contrepe þat þerte bel, & þat was muche þyng.

þo he adde al þys lond ybrogt and Scotlond al so

Al clene in rygte to þs wylle, anoper he moſte do.

He ſpouſede a noble wyf <sup>7</sup> Guerwar her name was

Of þe þeye kenne of Rome, no þaytor womman nas.

**A**s ſone as Somer come, to Yrlond he gau wende,  
Thor to aſapty þat lond, <sup>8</sup> & to wyinne ech ende.

Gyllam, kyng of lond, ar he þader com,

Walc, as yt were wyþoute noumbre, agen hym he nom.

Hit com <sup>9</sup> & ymette hem ſone, & gret batayle hit ſmyte,

Ac þe kyng Arture was aboue, as me may wel ywpte.

And þe kyng Gyllam was ynſome, and ſo al þat lond

<sup>10</sup> By certey conuenant was in kyng Arture's hond.

<sup>11</sup> Fram <sup>12</sup> þan he wende ſone to þe lond of Þs lond,

And wan hit al clene to hym, and al þat he wond."

1. Every in his heritage

*Ar.* 2. Anguissel *Ar.* 3. U-

rien *Ar.* 4. Kyng he made of

þorell, for he was net than

othur, *Ar.* 5. Liones Loth he

*Ar.* 6. With al the porte-

naunce ther to, and that was

gret a [i. a gret] thing *Ar.*

7. Gunnore *Ar.* 8. And wyinne

in every ende. Gwillamour,

kyng of that lond, *Ar.* 9. And

mette with hem ſone, & gret

bataille ſmyte, *Ar.* 10. By as

cordement *Ar.* 11. Hæc duo

carmina omittit *Ar.* 12. Subju-

gatis itaque totius Hyberniz

partibus, claſſem ſuam direxit in

Yſlandiam, eamque debellato

ſibi populo ſubjugavit *Galf.*

*Mon.*

Z 2

<sup>1</sup> So



1 So 2 such tythyngs aboute com, an ech sonde oþer sonde,  
 þat so noble man he was, þat us myȝte no lond at sonde,  
 Doldan wende anon to hym, þat was kyng of Godlonde,  
 And 3 Gwynas, kyng of Orcadag, ys grace herte sonde,  
 And bycoms ys men, & hyhete hym, to here hym truage  
 Eche ger, and holde of hym and of hym in seruage.  
 4 Of þys Brytanye he was þe kyng, & adde alle Scotlonde,  
 And ys londe and Orcadag under hym, and yr londe.  
 þo wynter was al ydo, in to þys londe he wende,  
 To brynge þys londe in god pes, and þe lames amenhe.  
 Twelf ger he bylenede þo here wyth noblepe & nou,  
 And 5 herte men of many londes aboute hym hake drou.  
 6 And bygan to astrengþy ys court, & to eche ys maynye;  
 And myd so gret plente holde ys hous, & myd so gret cortefye,  
 þat us us myȝte 7 of so noble las man neuere underfonde.  
 And þat þer 8 was þere aboute 9 kyngt in none lond,  
 þat 10 me tolde of eny þyng, þats he of fyrte were  
 Of þe kyng Arture's hous, oþer som sygne 11 þer of here,  
 Of robes oþer of armes, & þe god man was so hende,  
 þat he 12 among hawe echon, þat to hym wolde wende.

1. Kynges a houte ech to e-  
 ther sonde thanne hure sonde,  
 Of the dedes that he dide,  
 non myȝt hym a sonde.  
 Doldan *Ar.* 2. Exinde divul-  
 gato per ceteras insulas rumore,  
 quod ei nulla provincia resistere  
 poterat, Doldanius, rex Gotlan-  
 dia, & Gunvadius, rex Orcadum,  
 ultro venere, promissoque vesti-  
 gali subjectionem fecerunt *Galfr.*  
*Alan.* 3. Gwynas *Ar.* 4.

Thanne was he of Wryntaput  
 kyng, & hadde al Scotlonde,  
 Godlonde and Orcadag un-  
 der hym, and Yrlonde *Ar.*  
 5. Beke *Ar.* 6. He gan to  
 strengþe his lond, & encrofte  
 his mayny; *Ar.* 7. Of such a  
 las no man underfonde *Ar.*  
 8. Aldas *Ar.* 9. Knyght *Ar.*  
 10. Oþen *Ar.* 11. Desunt *Ar.*  
 12. Faire underfenge alle,  
 that to hym *Ar.*

Note

Bote to legge koutlyche, þer ⁊ nan her ne ner,  
 Of promette ⁊ us of cortaysye, in þe worl þu get.  
 Hys lew sprang to wyde sone of ys largesse,  
 Of strengþe and of cortaysye, and of þu promette,  
 To þe werroth ende of þe world, þat such men nas none.  
 So þat oþer grete kynges douted hym eþon  
 Bygende see in eche lunde, and doudde her and ner,  
 þat he come and by nome her loundes, oþer her poer.  
 ⁊ Hii bygonne her hays tonnes strengþy balle aboute,  
 Her castles ⁊ flores, þat hii myhte be ynne in doute.  
 þo þys gode tydying com to þys noble kyng Arthure,  
 Wyd god herte he wolde such tydying yhare.  
 He þoghte come by hem, ⁊ bryngs hem somme to lare,  
 And to wynne gut al Europe, gif he myhte dure.  
 þe þrydde del of al þe world Europe yclyped ys,  
 ⁊ þat tyth fram her bygonde Rome to þe West worl's ende  
 ywys.  
 Hym þoghte he adde yrest ynon, ⁊ no leng he nolde abyde.  
 Hys poer he let sumny, þat ysprad was wel wyde,

1. Was non fer ne nere, Ar.  
 2. And of courtaisye, Ar. 3. Hii  
 lete hure tonnes strengthe  
 falle, for hii hadde gret doute,  
 By cause he myghte with  
 hym lede of knyghtes such a  
 route Ar. 4. That is bi his  
 dere the Grechish see al Cri-  
 stendom ⁊ wis Ar. 5. He  
 wolde no lengor abide. He let  
 of sende his power, that spar-  
 puled was ful wide. And

when that they al redy were,  
 thei went forth in hure weye,  
 And dode hem so in to the  
 see, and luttie to floreweye.  
 So fell, er thei thuder come,  
 the kyng of florewete dede  
 was, And Loth, Arthure's  
 othom, his heir was by cas,  
 And hadde ordeyned hym  
 ther to by fore his deth longe.  
 But the men Ar.

And

And greppede ys noble oß, and dade hym in þe weye,  
 And dade hym so in to see, and bork to Norþweye.  
 Non was þe kyng of Norþweye ded þer by uore by cas,  
 And Lot, þat was ys opom, þe kynges' neuen was,  
 And þe kyng hym adde mad ys eyr þer byuore longe;  
 Ac þe men of Norþweye wolde bor grute hym <sup>1</sup> vnder nange,  
 Ac adde ymad anoper man kyng of þe londe,  
 þat agen þe kyng Arture hopede mel at stonde.  
 Chyld <sup>2</sup> Wameyn, Lotys sone, þulke tyme was  
 Bote of twelf get, & þe pope of Rome bytake was  
 To norys þoru þe kyng Arture, & þulke tyme rygt  
 þe pope hym tok armes, & ys owe þonde made hym <sup>3</sup> kynyt.  
<sup>4</sup> As þe kyng Arture, as ych leyde, to Norweye com,  
 þe kyng of londe agen hym þen wey sone nom  
 Wyd ys poer, and smyte an batayle strong ynon,  
 And stehþe blod in eyþer half, and muche folc me slou.  
 Ac þer poer of Norweye ydo was anon,  
 þe kyng hym sulf was sone aflawe, & <sup>5</sup> ys men monyon.  
 • þe Brutons hym sturde þo, and slowe and barnde vasse,  
 So þat hit wonne al cleue Norþweye atte laste.  
 þer after hit wonne Denemarch, vorto do seruage  
 To þe kyng Arture enermo, and to bere hym truage.  
 He <sup>6</sup> made Lot ys opom kyng of Norþweye,  
 þer <sup>7</sup> after toward France hit dade hym in þe weye.

<p> <sup>1</sup>. I longe Ar. <sup>2</sup> Erat tunc          Walwanus, filius prædicti Loth,          XII. annorum juvenis, obsequio          Sulpicii papæ ab avunculo tra-          ditus, à quo arma recepit <i>Galf.</i>  <i>Mon.</i> <sup>3</sup>. Kynyt Ar. <sup>4</sup>. Wðan          the Ar. <sup>5</sup>. His men negh       </p>	<p>         echon Ar. <sup>6</sup>. Quibus subactis,          cum Loth in regem Norguegiz          promovisset, navigavit Arthurus          ad Gallias, factisque turmīs pa-          triam undique vastare incepit  <i>Galf. Mon.</i> <sup>7</sup>. Afterward to-          ward France he dade Ar.       </p>
--	--

<sup>1</sup> Non

1. Non hadde France þulke tyme þe emperour Leon;  
 And he bytroc yt in warde an duc, þat het ffolow,  
 þat hardy body was and god, and poer adde y non.  
 þo he wuste, þat þe kyng Arture þader drou,  
 2. Alle þe kyngtes and þe folc, þat in ys poer were,  
 He nom, & mette þe Brutons, & smyte batayle þere.  
 Ac al þat hem was late wurþ, þor agen þe kyng Arture  
 And ys poer hit mygte late wule dure.  
 3. Wor euere, wanne he 4. nom alond, al þe bachelerye,  
 þat agt was in þe lond, he 5. nom in ys companys  
 6. And of ys maynage by ys cost. & þor he was so hende,  
 Ech noble man bawe was myd hym vorto wende.  
 7. And beste partye of fraunce to hym al so drou.  
 8. Wor he was so large & hende, þat to hym com poer ynou.  
 Wor me ne tolde welney of no mon, noþer here ne þere,  
 Note þs myd þe kyng Arture in som manere were.

1. Rogh hadde fraunce  
 thulke tyme a lord, het frol-  
 lon, (That undertok the go-  
 uernaunce thurgh emperour  
 Leon) That hardy man was  
 & strong, and hadde power y  
 nogh Ar. 2. Alle maner of  
 men, of his power that were,  
 He toke, and with the Bru-  
 tones mette, & smyten a ba-  
 taille there Ar. 3. Nam Ar-  
 thurum iuventus insularum om-  
 nium, quas subjugaverat, comi-  
 tabatur, unde tantum perhibe-  
 batur habere exercitum, quantus

erat difficile ab ullo posse supe-  
 rari *Galfr. Mon.* 4. Wan a lond  
 Ar. 5. Toke Ar. 6. And of  
 mayne at his cost. and for he  
 was so hende, Every noble  
 man was glad with hym vorto  
 wende. And the best part of  
 fraunce Ar. 7. Famulabatur  
 quoque ei melior pars Gallicane  
 provincie, quam sua largitate  
 sibi obnoxiam fecerat *Galfr. Mon.*  
 8. For his largesse & hendes  
 nesse, that hym com folk y  
 nogh Ar.

' þe þe duc fallen yfey, þat ys goot noþyng nas,  
 He fleh in to þarys myd wel quyt þas,  
 And aſſeured : þen town, and ſtrengþe hym aboute.  
 Kyng Briture and ys goot aſaged hym wyþoute.  
 So þat wyþoute : a monþe þe duc fallen yfey,  
 þat ys men, bot deſaute and bot hunger, deyde ny,  
 And þat ys goot nas noþyng, agen kyng Briture  
 ' He þoghte do ys owne body, wyle he myȝte durt.  
 Hec he was ſtrong man & hardy, þe ſtrengthe of ys londe.  
 To þe kyng Briture he ſende, þat he ſholde : hym "under honde  
 ' To do an batayle hem ſalae tuo myd her owne honde,  
 And weþet ſo myȝte aboute be were lonerd of oþere's londe.  
 þe kyng Briture hurde : þys, no gladdere man nas.  
 He ſende word, þat al preſt to ſuch batayle he was.  
 Syghetneſſe : & trouþe : yþlyȝt, of þys borewarde hit nome.  
 So þat, at certeyn day yfet, to þys batayle hit come  
 A late wyþoute þarys, <sup>10</sup> ayled wel y non.  
 Muche was <sup>11</sup> þat folc aboute, þat to þys batayle drom.

1. When that frolle under-  
 ſod, that he ſconſted was,  
 He flegh in to þarys with a  
 quyte þas, . 2. The town,  
 and ſtrengthed hym aboute  
 . 3. A monthe day durh  
 ſtelle & ſeigh, That his men  
 in deſaute for hunger deyde  
 negh, . 4. He thoghte with  
 his owene body, while he  
 myȝt endurs . 5. Deek  
 . 6. And do the bataille,  
 yf he wolde, with his owne  
 honde, And whether myȝhte

a howe he were maſter of  
 othere's londe . 7. This,  
 gladder neuere he nas .  
 8. Dato igitur in amba parte  
 ſordere, conuenient uterque in  
 inſulam, quæ erat extra civita-  
 tem, populo expectante quid de  
 eis erat futurum *Calp. Ann.*  
 9. Hit ylight, and haue ſor-  
 ward nome. So that at a day  
 ſett to bataille hit come .  
 10. Trayed wel y nogh .  
 11. The folk .

1. Hii soudebe her steden vorst, & her lancen suppe hii nome,  
 And wyl hard dunt & gret yre to gadere suppe hii come.  
 2. þe kyng Arture agen þe brest ys selawe norst anhytte  
 Agen þe breste, þat he bel, & ne mygte noleng sitte.  
 As sone as he mygte turne ys hors, ys suerd he drou þer,  
 Wor to asayly þym þerwyl, ac þe oþer was wyte er,  
 And 3. gel þe sted myd ys sper agen brest deþe's wounde,  
 So þat boþe stede and kyng leye sone at grounde.  
 4. þo þe Brutons seye þys, hii vor bere vnnepþe,  
 þat hii ne breke þe couenant, & brogte þen oþer to deþe.  
 Ac kyng Arture knewerebe vp, & asaylede follen vasse,  
 And smyte eyþer oþer her & þer, & harde duntet caste,  
 So þat follen myd a stroc þe Brutons fore agaste,  
 Wor þe kyng Arture agen þe frount þe smot atte laste,  
 þat, gif he nadde wyl þe selde somdel þe dunt yhent,  
 Syker he hym adde aflawe, oþer al out yllent.  
 þo kyng 6. Arture yt yuelde, and yley al so ys blod  
 Up ys handert & ys selde, he was ney vor wrappe wol.

1. Hii a salue hure steden  
 furst, hure lances. 2. And  
 kyng Arthur on the brest  
 frolle so hitte, That he fel  
 down to grounde, he myghte  
 no lengor sitte. 3. Smot  
 his stede in the breste, & gaf  
 hym deþe's wounde. 4. De-  
 sant aliquammulta in ut-  
 pote in quo solum unum inte-  
 grum (fol. sc. Lxix. quatuor dun-  
 tarat versibus exceptis) hic loci  
 excisum esse, particulamque u-  
 nius paginæ (five facie secundæ  
 Vol. I.

folli LXVIII.) plane vacuum  
 video, in cujus tamen particula  
 vacuæ margine The rounde ta-  
 ble of Arthur scriptum legitur.  
 5. Brittones ut regem prostratum  
 viderunt, timentes eum perem-  
 ptum esse, vix potuerunt reti-  
 neri, quin rupto fœdere in Gal-  
 los unanimiter irruerent Galf.  
 Mon. 6. Mamante igitur san-  
 guine, cum Arthurus lorica &  
 clipeum rubere vidisset, ardenti-  
 ori ira accensus est, atque erecto  
 totis viribus caliburno, impressit  
 eum

A a

eum

He drew þys Calybourne ys luerd, þat was so gode,  
 And anowarþe þe helm wyþ wel stourdy mod  
 þen oþer he smot, and to clof þat heued myd þe wounde.  
 He bel and sloe þe helm, and deyde in aþownde.  
 þe þys dede was ydo, and þere oþer was ded,  
 þut conseyt of france lene nom ys red,  
 And to þe kyng Arture hym golde ech man þat was wys,  
 And golde hym bp al þat lond, & þe keyen of þarys.  
 þys was lo þe Cornwellykeber, of man Merlyn spet ynou,  
 And clere leme of þe stetre, þat ouer france drew.  
 Som was ycome, as he seþe, of þe noble kyng Arture,  
 Wel me sat her after of hym gut yþure.  
 þe he adde ywonne france þus, & al þys was ydo,  
 þys noble kyng Arture delde ys men atuo.  
 þe kyng Howwel he bytoc, and þe oþer princes al so,  
 þat odel of ys oft to wende to þeyto  
 Al to wyne þat lond, and hym fulf he wolde wende.  
 Al to wyne seynorye aboute in oþer ende.  
 Kyng Howwel wyþ ys poer man lene þeyto  
 Al to kyng Arture's wyll, and Gascoyne al so.  
 þe kyng won Normandy, and also god Hungeo,  
 And wyþynne ane ger al þys was ydo.

eum per galeam in caput Follo-  
 nis, quod in duas partes disse-  
 cuit. Quo vulnere cecidit Follo,  
 tellurem calcaneis pulsans, &  
 spiritum in auras emisit *Galf.*  
*Mon.*

1. Et unam partem Hoelo duci

commisit, præcepitque illi, ut  
 ad expugnandum Guitardum,  
 Pictaviensium ducem, iret; ipse  
 vero cum reliqua parte ceteras  
 provincias sibi subjugare vacavit  
*Galf. Mon.*

þe

þe kyng wende þo to þarys, þo he adde ydo al þyg,  
 And al heȝ men of lond þader come ymȝs.  
 Her homages of hem, and her scruple, he nom,  
 And þe lawes, as he wolde hym sulf, sette on þe kyndom.  
 He gef þat lond of Normandyȝ Bedmer ys boteler,  
 And þat lond of Angleo<sup>1</sup> Raxe ys panter,  
 And oþer þyng oþer heȝe men, & lykȝ yt made ynon,  
 And suppe aboute Leynte toward þys lond drou.

**P** O þe kyng Artur com here in þys londe,  
 And so muche lond adde ymonne, & adde al so an honde,  
 In poe & blyſſe he was ynon, & alle þat wip hym were,  
 And agen Wyteſounted yt was in þe gere.  
 He þogte þe heȝe feſte of Wyteſountyd do  
 Wyþ honour among ys men, and þat alle come þer to,  
 Boþe kynges and dukes, and erles echon,  
 Barons and knyghtes, ſqueers monȝon,  
 Laydyes and maydens, and ech mon þat agt were  
 In enȝ lond, þat ys was, þat hit were alle þere.  
 Of ys rounde table ys ban aboute he ſende,  
 þat eche a Wyteſountyd to Carleſon wende,  
 A toun þat ys in Glammorgan by þe water of Olc ydo,  
 A lute byſpde Senerne, in murpe ſtede al ſo.  
 Wor me may þere in þe Souþhalf al by the ſes lede  
 fram oþer londes god ynon, to endy ſuch a dede.  
<sup>2</sup> In oþer alk beþ grete wodes, leſe and mede al ſo,  
 So þat þer was no defaute ſuch noble þyng to do.

1. F. Raxȝ. Nam *Gaioque Dapifero* in *Galfr. Mun.* 2. Hic denuo  
 pergit Cod. *Ar.*



þer come to þys rounde table, as þe sende ys ban,  
<sup>1</sup> Ansel kyng of Scotland, and al so Bryan,  
 þat was kyng of Muryfycens, & also of Norþ Walys  
 Cadwal, and also <sup>2</sup> Scater kyng of Souþ Walys,  
 Cader kyng of Cornweyle, and erchebyschopes al so  
 Of Londone, and of Euerwyk, and of <sup>3</sup> Carlen þer to.  
 Erles þer come ek monyon, as þe erl of Gloucestre  
<sup>4</sup> Mowbray, and Ingomer erl of Leycestre,  
<sup>5</sup> Maren erl of Warewyk, and Cursal of Cycestre,  
 Gallac erl of Salesbury, Jonatal of Dorcestre,  
 Wynmar erl of <sup>6</sup> Canterbury, of Bape fyre <sup>7</sup> Wigen,  
 Wose' erl of Orenford, þat were alle noble men.  
 þe barons & þe kyngtys, þat of þys londe aday  
 At þys rounde table were, noman tells ne may.  
 Kynges þer were eke of ylys, <sup>8</sup> ar þe kyng of yrlonde  
<sup>9</sup> Gyllam, and also Malueys kyng of yflonde,  
 Lot kyng of Norþeweye, and <sup>10</sup> Doldam of Godload,  
 And þe kyng of Orcadas, <sup>11</sup> & of Denemarch ych vnderstonde.  
 Kynges eke of bygende see, as Kay of Runges,  
 Bedwer of Normandy, Guyder of Seyto,  
 Lygger of Colonye, and al so the <sup>12</sup> dulle pers  
 Of franco were þere echon, þat so noble were and fers.

1. Anguissel *Ar.* 2. Estanter *Ar.* 3. Carlyon *Ar.* 4. Mowbray *Ar.* in quo & Wade  
 pwan pro Ingomer. 5. Maren  
 ran of Wircetre, [Maren Gwi-  
 gornensis, quæ nunc Warguic  
 dicitur, *Galf. Mon.*] Cursal erl  
 of Cheestre, Neth of Salesbur-

ry, Jonathas of Dorchestre,  
 Wynmar *Ar.* 6. Kent, *Ar.*  
 7. Wigen, Wose *Ar.* 8. Is  
*Ar.* 9. Gwillamour, & Malueys  
 kyng of Yflonde, *Ar.*  
 10. Doldam *Ar.* 11. Dulse  
*Ar.*

Wys

hys neuen kyng Howwel of þe lasse Brutenyē al so  
 1 Myd so bayr folc þader com, & myd so gret charge þerto  
 Of mules, of cartes and of hors mydde alle gode,  
 þat þer nas non so wyttý man, þat yt al vnderstode.  
 2 þer nas 3 bytneue þys & Spayne no prince wipoute al þys,  
 þat nas at þys rounde table, & at þys sette ýwys.  
 And no wonder. For þe kynges los so wyde sprong ýnon  
 Of godenesse & of cortesy, 4 þat her herte to hym drou.

**P** O þys heye men were alycome, & þe heye tyme also  
 Of wyntontyd, þe sette þor to do,  
 5 þe herchebyssopys were ýbroght, to sette þe kynges  
 crowne

On ýs heued. Ac 6 Seyn Dubryc of sulne tyme  
 Was erchebyssop. hym byuel þe crowne on hym do,  
 And þe seruyse of holy chyrche ek, þat byuel þer to.  
 þo crowne was on ýs heued, and ýde was ech oþer þyng,  
 Teneye erchybyssopys ladde þys noble kyng

<p>1. With muche poeple thus          der com, &amp; gret noblete ther to          Ar. 2. Ther was no pryncē          by twiste Spayne &amp; Alemyne          of pris, Ar. 3. Præter hos non          remansit princeps alicujus pretii          citra Hispaniam, quin ad istud          edictum veniret. Nec mirum.          Largitas namque Arthuri, per to-          tum mundum divulgata, cunctos          in amorem illius illlexerat <i>Galf.</i>  <i>Mon.</i> 4. That every man to          hym drogh Ar. 5. Thre Er-</p>	<p>chebissopes were come, to          sette on the kynges crowne.          But Seynt Dubrice, that          Erchebissop was of the selne          toune, (As hit was his con-          stume that offys te do) Wude          the seruis of holi churche,          that byfel ther to. Tho the          crowne Ar. 6. Dubricius ergo,          quoniam in sua diocesi curia te-          nebatur, paratus ad celebrandum          obsequium, hujus rei curam          suscepit <i>Galf.</i> <i>Mon.</i></p>
--	--

Co

To þe chyrche of þeȝe munstre. And þer ȝeode bynore hym  
þere

four kyngs, and four ſuerdes of golde bynore hym bere;

Worſt þe kyng of Scotland, and þe kyng of Norþwales,

And þe kyng of Cornwale, and þe kyng of Southmaȝs.

1 Oþer biſſhoppes and poelats by nore þys kyng Briture

And clerkes longe as ryȝt was, þat ſeȝe yt was to hure.

In 2 oþer all þe quene was 1 of erchebiſſhopys al ſo

ȝlad, and ȝcrouned eke, as ryȝt was bot to 4 do,

And to noþer munstre ȝlad, & four quenes bynore hyr wende,

þe four kynges wyues, þat we by nore nemde,

3 And foure myȝe colfren bynore hyr alſo bere.

þe compagne of laydyes wel grete alſo were.

þo 6 hit were to chyrche ybrought eyþer in ȝs ſyde,

7 So gret & marȝe was þat long, þat me ſong þer inne meȝe,

þat þe ſolc ſtod, þat þer were, as hit were y name,

þe hit nuſte to weȝer chyrche murgorye yt was to come.

þe kyng was to ȝs paleȝs, þo þe ſcruple was y do,

ȝlad wyȝ 8 þys meȝe, and þe quene to hyre al ſo.

1. And biſſhoppes, and other  
poelates, to ſore the kyng Brit-  
tune ſonge with hure cler-  
gis, that ſeȝe it was to hure  
2. The oþur 3. Of  
the archbiſſhop alſo 4. Do,  
To a nother munstre there, 5  
the quenes by ſore wende  
6. And wryȝ of hom in  
hure hond a whit coloure  
bere. And ſen ſole and ſaire y  
nogh alſo ther were 7. 6.  
Poſtremo petacta proceſſione, tot

organa, tot cantus in utriſque  
ſunt templis, utpote nimia dul-  
codine milites, qui aderant, ac-  
ſcironent quod templorum prius  
adirent Gaſfr. Mem. 7. So noble  
and mery was the ſong and  
melody that tyde, That men  
thoghte alſo marȝe as theȝ  
hit hadde benome, þe hit ne  
wiſte to whether chyrche  
merȝer it was to come 8.  
8. His meȝe, 9.

Wor

For <sup>1</sup> hit hulde þe elde blages, þat men wox þe more  
 By þem fulne, and wpmen by þem fulne al so þere.  
 þe hit were echone y set, as yt to her stat bycom,  
 Ray, kyng of Hungre, a þousend knyghtes nome  
 Of noble men, y cloþed in ermyne echone  
<sup>2</sup> Of on fywete, and seruede <sup>3</sup> as þys noble feste a non.  
 Bedwer þe botyler, kyng of Normandye,  
 Rom al so in þys half a mayr compayne  
<sup>4</sup> Of on fywete, vorto seruy of þe botelerye.  
 By note <sup>5</sup> þe <sup>6</sup> quene yt was also of al such cortesyfye,  
 Vorto telle al þe noblye þat þer was y do,  
 þey my tonge were of <sup>7</sup> sei, me helde nogt vure þerta.  
 Wymmen no kepte of no knygt as in drury,  
 Wote þe were in armys wel yprewed, & atte lesse þe.  
 þat made, <sup>8</sup> to! þe wymmen þe <sup>9</sup> chafoure þys lede,  
 And þe knyghtes þe stalwardors, & þe betars in þer dede.  
 Sone after þys noble <sup>10</sup> mete, as rygt was of such tyde,  
 þe knyghtes asyled hem aboute in echo fyde,

1. Antiquam namque consue-  
 tudinem curie seruantes Brit-  
 tones, consueuerant mares cum  
 maribus, mulieres cum mulieri-  
 bus festivos dies celebrare sepa-  
 ratim *Galf. Ann.* 2. Ille in on  
 fowte, to serue the feste a non  
*Ar.* 3. Malim, at, 4. Of a no-  
 ther fowte, to serue the butel-  
 rie *Ar.* 5. In palatio quoque  
 regiarum innumerabiles ministri,  
 diversis ornamentis induti, ob-  
 sequium suum prestabant, mo-  
 rem suum exercentes. Quem si  
 omnino describere pergerem, ni-

miam prolixitatem historie ge-  
 nerarem *Galf. Ann.* 6. Quene  
 she also thet was such cour-  
 taise, *Ar.* 7. Sei, his nobles  
 suffice thet to. Wommen tolde  
 of no knyght thet as in lona  
 and drurye, But he were in  
 armes prewed atte lesse thet  
*Ar.* 8. The the *Ar.* 9. The  
 thet to lede, *Ar.* 10. Wote,  
 ech mende in þys tyde,  
 Knyghtes and squyers she,  
 and tofode hem to ryde, In  
 the falden and in the medon  
*Ar.*

In

In feldes and in medys to prene her bachelerye.  
 Somme wip lance, some wip swerd, wip oute bylenye,  
 Wip pleyunge at <sup>1</sup> tables, oþer atte chekerre,  
 Wip cassynges oþer wip sctynges, <sup>2</sup> oþer in som ogyrt manere.  
 And <sup>3</sup> much so of eny game adde þe maystrye,  
<sup>4</sup> þ þyng hem of ys gyfteþ dade large corteyse.  
 Wipe þe alurs of þe castles þe layden þanne stode,  
 And byhulde þys noble game, & wyche knyghts were god.  
 Wile þe þre herte dames ylaste þys noblepe  
 In halles and in belles, of mete and eke of pleye.  
 þys men come þe berþe day bynoure þe kynges þere,  
 And he gef hem large gyftys, enere as hit worþe were.  
 Byshopryches and cherches <sup>5</sup> clerkes he gef somme,  
 And castles and townes knyghtes þat were ycome."  
 Seyn Dauid was þe kynges uncle, hym he <sup>6</sup> gef aday  
 þe herchebyshopryche of Carleon, as he wel bysai.  
 For he was swyþe holy mon, <sup>7</sup> and munstre let rere,  
 þat me clepuþ in Walys Seyn Dauid, & gut he lyp þere.

1. The tables, & the esche-  
 here, *Ar.* 2. Oþur som oþur  
 manere. What man of any  
 game hadde *Ar.* 3. Quicumque  
 ergo ludi sui victoriam adeptus  
 erat, ab Arturo largis muneri-  
 bus ditabatur *Galf. Mon.* 4. Sic  
 Codex *Harleyanus*; at in *Ar.*  
 plane, The kyng hem gaf  
 yiftes grete, & dade hem cour-  
 taisy. In hegh vpon alures  
 ladies gonne by holde, To  
 waitte ho so dade best, & most

was of tolde. Wile fülle fower  
 dates last thus hure pleye  
 In valets aboute, and faire  
 feldes, & mete eke of noblepe.  
 The v. Day come thes men  
 bifore the kyng there, *Ar.*  
 5. To clerkes he gaf some,  
 Castelles to knyghtes eke, as  
 best hym thought to done. *Ar.*  
 6. Gaf that day *Ar.* 7. And  
 let a munstre rere In the cite  
 of Wenebe, and lith nogh du-  
 ryed there *Ar.*

þe

þe byſſopryche of Wynecheſtre a god mon he get þo,  
 Of Chycheſtre anoper, and gut oþer mo.  
 þe wule þe kyng and ys men aboute þys nobleſe were,  
 þer come in twelf olde men myd<sup>1</sup> euene pas þere,  
 Men of wel bayt ſemblant, and branchys hit bere  
 Of olyue, as in ſygne þat hit of pes were.  
 A letter<sup>2</sup> he toc þe kyng, þat þo he yt let rede.  
 fram þe cenatour of Rome hit come, and þes ſeyde:  
 "Lucie, þe cenatour of Rome, to Wrture þe kyng,  
 "3 Send, þat he<sup>4</sup> ofte ſerned ap, wyþ oute gretynge.  
 "Muche<sup>5</sup> me wondreþ and ouer muche of þy reuerye,  
 "Of þyn cruel luþer hede, and of þyn robbery;  
 "And namelyche of þyn vn rygt ychabbe gret dedeyn,  
 "þat þou to þe noble ſtede of Rome deſt myd al þy mayn.  
 "And þat þou nelt<sup>6</sup> hym yknowe, ne do þyn ſeruage,  
 "Ne vnder ſtonde þou luþer yt þe, to<sup>7</sup> do eny outrage  
 "8 Oþer wernyout þe noble ſtude, þat al þe world<sup>9</sup> abueþ to.  
 "Nor þyn auncetres dude al, þat we þe hoteþ do.  
 "And þou, as in gret deſpyt of ſo noble ſeynorye,  
 "10 Ne at halft nogt one þy truage, ac myd þy reuerpe

1. Moderatis paſſibus *Galf.*  
*Mon.* 2. Hit toke to the kyng,  
 and he than let hit rede. fro  
 Lucye the ſenatour hit come,  
 and thus hit ſede: "Lucie  
 ſenatour *Ar.* 3. Sendeth, as  
 he hath deſernyd, with oute  
 gretynge. Muche wonder we  
 haneth of thi reuerye, *Ar.*  
 4. F. of deſerned ap. 5. Admi-  
 rans vehementer admiror ſuper

tuz tirannidis protervia. Admi-  
 ror, inquam, & injuriam, quam  
 Romæ intuliſti, recolligens in-  
 dignor *Galf. Mon.* 6. Hure *Ar.*  
 7. Do hure eny *Ar.* 8. De  
 greyn ought that noble ſtede,  
*Ar.* 9. Boweth *Ar.* 10. Noght  
 only at halft hure truage, but  
 doſt alſo roberie, By reynynſt  
 fraunce and oþur londes,  
*Ar.*

"Kauyest France & oþer londes, þat by Wdesir beþ echon,  
 "þat bere ⁊ truage to Rome, & þoru þe ne doþ naȝt non.  
 "Hlor þanne of þe gret despyt þe noble court of Rome  
 "Ryȝt wale habbe of þe ywys, þat þou hym dest ylome.  
 "Amþðe harnest me þe setteþ day of þyn nexte gere,  
 "At Rome vorto answere, and þat þou be þe sail þere  
 "Wde þe hoteþ, vorto anonge þat þe court þe wale dome.  
 "And hote þou do ⁊ of oue þyng nym wel gode geme,  
 "þat ychylls my sulk þe seche out, & þoru suerd restore  
 "Al þat þy renerys in aþ by nome, and more.  
 þyn was a prout mandement, ⁊ and en heynol bede.  
 þe kyng adde þerof gret despyt, þe þe herte yt rede.  
 Hlor þe werke truage, þat he sende to Rome, of finer oþer  
 of golde,  
 þat was Lucye's bod aflame, harys ȝif hit yt wolde.  
 The kyng claped ac naȝt þor þan ys consceþi wel soue,  
 To answere to þys ⁊ mandement, wat were best to done.  
 Cadour, erl of Cornwale, stod sounel and loun,  
 And berste seþde ys anyn myde gode wylle ynou.

1. Som tyme truage to  
 Rome, & nogh bereth hit non.  
 And for this like grete de-  
 spit the noble court of Rome  
 myȝht wale have of, that  
 thugh hest myde oþer y lome  
 2. Of that y seighe take  
 ryȝt nogh gud yome, Elles  
 my sulk y mole the seche, and  
 thugh my suerd restore

Al that thugh ys hest bynome,  
 and put ther to wel more 1.  
 3. And gret manasþyng. The  
 kyng hadde foul storn of this  
 like bolþyng. for in stede of  
 truage of finer and of golde  
 he sende hem Lucye's body,  
 berste hit he to wolde 2.  
 4. Like lettere, what 3.

"Spre,

"Syre," he seide, "her i bymore ychabbe ybe sore drau,  
 "Lasse i pat ydel lyf, pat hyne men i abbyp y lad,  
 "Non mony day out of los and in sleupe hem broghte.  
 "Alor wanne men beþ al ydel, pat er batayles sogte,  
 "Her ydelnesse hem shal bringe to synne lecherie,  
 "To tauerne, and i to sleupe, and to halsarderie,  
 "Hytt ys ney wyf ger, pat we abbyp ylyued in such wyce,  
 "Alor we i nadde noght to done, and in suche delyre.  
 "And þer wyþ i nys noght God ypayd, þer wore he aþ ybrogt  
 "þe Romeyns i in suche wylle, pat we nere to ydel noght,  
 "Ac pat we come to þr stat agen of þer bette promesse,  
 "Lest we selle in dedlych synne þor þr ydelaylle.  
 þo he adde ysed ys auys, & oþere hym bere wytnysse,  
 i þe kyng Arture seide ys al in gladnesse.  
 "Ze louredynges," he seide, "pat ychabbe in conseil & in batayle  
 "i founde as þor agte men, pat me wolde neuere sayle,  
 "Dop nou i al goure wpt þerte, me wel to consayle,  
 "10 And ych hoppe we shalle þe lasse recche of þe Romeyns  
 tale.

1. Huc usque in timore fueram, ne Britones, longa pace quietos, otium, quod ducunt, ignavos faceret, famamque militiæ, qua ceteris gentibus clariores censentur, in eis omnino deleteret *Galf. Mon.* 2. The ydel *Ar.*  
 3. Longe haneth y lad, Rogh out of hure good loos in to slouth hem broghte *Ar.* 4. To drunkenesse, & oþur halsardrie *Ar.* 5. Nadde noght to done, and haure had oure

delice *Ar.* 6. As noght God a payd, *Ar.* 7. As to such a will, that we be ydel noght *Ar.* 8. Than seide kyng Artur in murthe & in gladnesse. "Ze lordynges, that y preued haue in conseil and bataille, And as noble men founde, & wolde me neuere sayle, *Ar.* 9. Facilius ergo inquietationem Lucii tolerare poterimus, si communi studio præmeditati fuerimus, quibus modis eam debilitare

B b 2

tare



"**Uor** me þencheþ myd þu ryȝt hit ⁊ eſſeþ þu truage.

"**Uor** ⁊ **Julz** Ceſar yt nom borſt myd ſtrengþe ⁊ myd outrage,

"þoru deſcord ⁊ contek, þat bytvene br elderne was þo.

"**He** nom verſt myd vnryȝt, ⁊ broȝte þat lond in wo.

"**And** þyng þat ys myd ſtrengþe ynou, þou myȝte yt be myd ryȝt.

"**Uor** he ⁊ naþ reſon non, bote robberye and myȝt.

"**And** ⁊ myd as reſon we mowe of hem eſſe þwys.

"**Were** he þanne he oþer truage, þat byneþe ys.

"**Uor** **Julz** and oþer emperours, hit ſeggeþ, come þer to,

"þat emperours were of Rome. ych may ſegge al ſo,

tare inſliterimus. Quam non multum timendam nobis exiſtimo, cum irrationabili cauſa exigat tributum, quod ex Britannia habere deſiderat *Galf. Mon.*  
10. And caſteth, hogh to make a knotte in the Romaynes taille *A.*

1. *Ar.* 2. **Julius Ceſar** alther furſt tok hit with outrage, for a contek that bytwyne oure eldrene was tho. **He** nom hit furſt with vnryȝt, ⁊ broȝte the lond in wo. That thyng, that with wrong is nome, hogh myȝht hit be with ryȝt? *Ar.* 3. **Wath** no reſon to, but *A.* 4. **And** with alſo gōd reſon we mowe of hem þ wiſ **A**bere thilke truage, that as thyng robbed ys. For by **Julie** and other

emperours hit thenketh come ther to, And we in the ſame manere may ſeþe alſo, That oure auncetres of this lond ſom tyme wonne Rome, As **Beilyn** ⁊ **Brenne**, noble men that ye haue hūrd of þ lome *A.*  
5. Quoniam ergo id, quod injuſtum eſt, à nobis præſumpſit exigere, conſimili ratione petamus ab illo tributum Romæ, & qui fortior ſupervenerit ſetat quod habere exoptavit. Nam ſi, quia **Julius Ceſar**, ceterique Romani reges Britanniam olim ſubjugaverunt, veſtigial nunc debere ſibi ex illa reddi decernit, ſimiliter nunc ego cenſeo, quod Roma mihi tributum reddere debet, quia antecellores mei eam antiquitus obtinuerunt. **Belinus** etenim &c. *Galf. Mon.*

"þat

" þat myn auncetres of þys lond wyle wonne Rome,  
 " As Welȝ þe noble kyng, þat ge abbeȝ yþurd y lome,  
 " And Constantyn, Cleyne sone, <sup>1</sup> hit wateȝ wel Rome nom,  
 " And suppe Marymȝan, and of <sup>2</sup> bepre blod ȝch com,  
 " Myn auncetres <sup>3</sup> were alle þre, & kynges of þys londe,  
 " And wonne þe emperye of Rome, & boȝe adde an honde.  
 " Of <sup>4</sup> France & <sup>6</sup> oþer londes, þat we wonne myȝt be myȝte,  
 " We mowe segge, þat we <sup>7</sup> nabbeȝ to answerye nogt myȝt rygȝte.  
 " Wanne hit for loke ys, & for flewȝed, & to non defence ne  
 come,  
 " þo ȝe þoru chȝualerye out of her poer ys nome.  
 " For hit ne mowe nogt segge, þat with treson, oþer stalpe, yt  
 were do.  
 " For wyȝtne nye ȝere non of hem ne com enes þer to.  
 Howwel, kyng of þe oþer Brytayne, þo he hurde þys he seȝde:  
 " þey ech of vs sete alȝay, þe beste red to rede,  
 " Betere answere ne wolde we fynde, <sup>8</sup> þan ge abbeȝ non ysȝed.  
 " þere bore we agte honourȝ wel of so noble wyȝt þy red.

1. *Pe witeth Ar.* 2. *F hepre.*  
 Nam hure in *Ar.* 3. *Hit were*  
 alle *Ar.* 4. *Hit wonne them-*  
 perie of Rome, & tho hit hitte  
 hadde an honde *Ar.* 5. *Cen-*  
*setifne ergo vestigal ex Roma-*  
*nis petendum? De Gallia autem*  
*sive collateralibus insulis non est*  
*respondendum, cum illas diffu-*  
*geretur defendere, quando eas-*  
*dem potestati eorum subtraher-*  
*bamus Galfr. Mon.* 6. *Of other*  
 londes, that we wonne with  
 unryȝht *Ar.* 7. *Re mogh an-*

swere ther to with rygȝt.  
 When they forloke and for  
 sleuthede, and to non defence  
 come, Tho we thurgh chȝual-  
 rye out of hure hondes hit  
 nome. For hit ne mogh seȝe  
 with treson, ne with stalthe,  
 hit was do, for thes ix. yer  
 non of hem ones come ther to  
*Ar.* 8. *Chan that that ye han*  
 seȝde. Wel oughte the man ho-  
 noured be, that is so noble  
 of rede *Ar.*

" For

"Her<sup>1</sup> gif we in þys manere wendeþ, we ne fayleþ<sup>2</sup> anone  
wyle,

"þat we us selde abbe þe maystre, wanne we defendeþ oure  
franchise.

"But we do anoþer monne's<sup>3</sup> god bynyme wole myð vnrygt,

"þyþe rygt þe may þs<sup>4</sup> owe lese, gif þe defendor aþ þe mygte.

"But<sup>5</sup> monne þe Romeyns aboute beþ, vs to bynyme vr rygt,

"þyþe reþon we<sup>6</sup> wolle hem bynyme, gif we mowe to gadere  
rygt.

"Now yt werþ<sup>7</sup> gended, þat Sybyle þe sage seþe by nore,

"þat þer hold of Britayne þre men be ybere,

"þat hold myne þe emperys of Rome,<sup>8</sup> & þe tureþ yðe yt ys,

"As of Bely and Constantin. & þou art þe þrydde gwyn.

"þyþe<sup>9</sup> non wolle vorto anonge þys noble honour al,

"To bynyge hem vnder þe,<sup>10</sup> þat þe wolde make her þral.

"þyþe<sup>11</sup> non to anþanþy us alle, & ynelle nogt be byhynde,

"Ten þousand hors<sup>12</sup> gweye ych þe wolle fynde.

1. Nam si, juxta prædictam  
rationem, Romam adire volu-  
eris, non dubito quin triumpho  
potiamur, dum libertatem no-  
stram tueamur; dum iuste ab ini-  
micis nostris exigamus, quod à  
nobis iniuste ipsi repetere ince-  
perunt. Quicumque enim sua  
alteri eripere conatur, merito,  
quæ sua sunt, per eum, quem im-  
petit, amittit *Galf. Mon.* 2. In  
non wille, To haue the mai-  
stre, in defence of oure owene  
franchise *Ar.* 3. God taketh

with vnrighht, *Ar.* 4. Owene  
leste, & the defendour haue  
myght *Ar.* 5. Sutte the Ro-  
meynes deth aboute to reue  
vs of oure right, *Ar.* 6. Wole  
leth hem hure bynyme, & to  
gederesight *Ar.* 7. fustid,  
that *Ar.* 8. Of the two do hit  
is, *Ar.* 9. The faste for to  
*Ar.* 10. That wolde the make  
thral *Ar.* 11. Wyne to a  
vauce vs alle, y wole noght  
be by hynde, *Ar.* 12. Heled  
ther to y wole the fynde *Ar.*

Junfel,

Bunfel, þat þe kyng abbe ymad kyng of Scotlande,  
 Glad y nou was <sup>1</sup> myd þys word, & þor soye held þy þoude.  
 "Thor þat," he seþe, "ychabbe yhurð, so gret soye ychabbe  
 and blyþ,

"<sup>2</sup> þat y nabbe non tonge, þat mowe al yt steme ymyg.  
 "Thor al, þat we abbyþ of londes and of kynges byuene  
 "y monne myd chyualerys, yt þynch me al þor lere,  
 "Bote we of Romeyns be awreke & of Saxons al so,  
 "þat bre eldres er þys so muche steme abbeþ yþe.  
 "And nou þe tyme ys come, þat we mowe þen awreke,  
 "So glad yham, <sup>3</sup> þat y not, mat þor soye speke.  
 "Thor y ne mylneþe neuere þyng so muche, as ych þe þer bled,  
 "Du! Ihesu! þat þulke day mowþ me softe and god.  
 "Swete walleþ þe wounded be to me, & noþyng strange:  
 "Swete wole ek my þeþ be, gyf ych ym anonge  
 "Worto awreke: þor faderes, & to holde þy oure franchyse,  
 "And worto <sup>4</sup> anansy our kyng, as we wolde in al myghe.  
 "Seche <sup>5</sup> we out þulke halne men, ne abyde we naxt to longe,  
 "þat <sup>6</sup> we after þer wrecche þeþ þer londes anonge.  
 "And ycholle our ost eche, and oure bachelerys,  
 "Wyþoute archers & bot men, myþ tuo þousend hors y myge.

1. For that word	2.	a fonge	5. Dore
That I have no tongue, to telle	6. A banace	7. Aggredia-	
how joyful my herte is		mur igitur semiviros illos, & ag-	
3. That I ne not, what		grediendo perstemus, ut devictis	
4. We thinketh, to have to		ipsis, eorum honoribus cum laeta	
do a day with hem wold do		potiamur victoria	<i>Gloss. Mon.</i>
me good. Softe walleþ the		8. We mowþ, when they beth	
wounded be to me, and no		dede, here sitas londes fonge	
þyng strange: Swete wole			
also be my þeþ, yf y hym shal			

Or

Of men here of þys lond þe kýng adde þer wyþoute  
 Sixty þousend hors <sup>1</sup> & wyre, & þat was a naye route.  
 þe kynges of fyr yles ek, as Norþewey & Erlonde,  
 Godlond and Orcadas, Denemarch and Pflonde.  
 Sene kynges ek aboute fraunce, as Brutayne & Normandyr,  
 Gascoyne and Fungeo, and al so Þycardye,  
 Of Berþe, and of oþer tuo, and <sup>2</sup> dozze pers of France.  
 Among hem alle <sup>3</sup> hit were syker al, wyþoute balance,  
 Of an hondred þousend hors, & four score þousend þerto,  
 And þre <sup>4</sup> þousend wel wyre, & tuo hundred also,  
 Wyþoute sot men, þat were so bale, þat þer nas of non ende,  
 þys was a naye compaynye, þoru al þe world to wende.  
 þo þys was syker & byspeke, þe kyng hem het <sup>5</sup> echon,  
 þat hit wende ech in ys syde to her contreye anon,  
 And þat hit alammasse day myd her poer come  
 Echone to Warbeslet, and þes brage nome.  
 þe kýng bed þe messagers, þat hit þe senatour sede,  
 þat he wolde to Rome come, ac no truage hym to lede,  
 Ac borto conquerý of hym þulke sulue seruage,  
 þat hit askýeþ of hym <sup>6</sup> byllyche, and myd outrage,

1. V heled, and that Ar.  
 2. Duzze Ar. 3. Syker hit  
 were, with oute variaunce.  
 An hundred thousand hors he  
 led, of sotmen was non ende.  
 Ther was a faire compayne  
 thurgh al the wordle to wen-  
 de. Tho that al this was  
 byspoke, and syker were  
 alle at on, Euery man to his  
 contre highede sone anon, A

charged a Lammasse day with  
 hure power hit come Euery  
 man to Warbeslet, and this  
 biage nome. Thanne to the  
 messagers answerd Arthur the  
 kyng, That to Rome he wolde  
 come and no truage bryng,  
 But sotte wyne ther of hem  
 thulke self seruage, Ar. 4. Sic.  
 5. L. echon. 6. Spitionly, Ar.

And

And þat he wolde to Rome come þe day þat hit hym sette  
 ' þe rygȝte abbe weþer so myȝte, wanne hit hem to gaderen  
 mette.

þus <sup>2</sup> departede ' þo' þe court, and <sup>4</sup> ech to ȝs lȝde  
 ȝarked hem agen þe day, bar hit <sup>5</sup> myȝte lang abyde."

**L**etȝe þe senatour, þo he wuste þys manndement,  
 Sene he adde wyȝde aboute ȝs messagers <sup>6</sup> gend,  
 Wrote gaderen to ȝs help al' þat poer of Rome,  
 So þat agen Lammalle alle þes kynges to hym come,  
 Of Aſſyre and of Grece, of Spayne and of Syrry,  
 Of Medes and of Perſes, <sup>8</sup> of <sup>9</sup> Ptoours, of Lybye,  
 Of Egypt and of Babyloune, and of Frugye,  
 And al so of <sup>10</sup> Melopot, of Eptȝnye, of Boecye.  
 Alle þes kynges, and al oþer þat were by Eke Rome,  
 And al þat to Rome sholde seruyſe, to hym come,  
 So þat fourty þouſend hors & ſyrtȝ hondred also  
 þer were, <sup>11</sup> þo hit ȝare were, þys chȝualerye to do.  
 Kyng <sup>12</sup> Arture bytok Modred, ȝs ſyſter ſone, ȝch mene  
<sup>13</sup> þys lond to loke, þo he mende, & Gouernour þe quene.

1. And ryȝht hane he so  
 myȝht, when hit to gederen  
 mette *Ar.* 2. Digrediantur er-  
 go legati, digrediantur reges,  
 digrediantur proceres, & quod  
 eis pręceptum fuerat, perficere  
 non differunt *Galf. Mon.* 3.  
 Deest *Ar.* 4. Every man  
 wende on his lȝde, And every  
 man to holde his day & ryȝde  
 hym thanne to ryȝde *Ar.*

5. F. ne myȝte leng. 6. Sent  
*Ar.* 7. The power *Ar.* 8. Of  
 Charce and of Libie *Ar.* 9. I-  
 turzorum *Galf. Mon.* 10. Mes-  
 opotanie *Ar.* 11. Tho hit  
 were alle redȝ, this *Ar.*  
 12. Composito igitur adventu  
 ipſorum, Arturus, Modredo ne-  
 poti ſuo conſervandam Britan-  
 niam atque Gannumarę [*Ar.*  
*Codex MS. quoniam uult peruenire be-*

For he truſte to <sup>1</sup> hym mek, as me þyngh he wel agte,  
 And, as ge ſolde her after þare, hit brohte hym ſuppe to  
 nægte.

Þyð al ys oſt of þys londe to Souþhamptone he wende,  
 And dade hym <sup>2</sup> in ſee, myð wynd þat God hym ſende.  
 þo he come ber in þe ſea, and he aſlepe was,

At tyme of mydargt of þe nýgt, hym mette a greuous cas.

Hym þoghte he ſey a gryſlych beore <sup>3</sup> he in þe eyr anhey,

þat alle þe haucnes quakede of þe ſýgt hym þoghte he ſey.

And an dredful dragon fram þe Weſt come myð hym to fygte,  
 þat <sup>4</sup> he leom of ys eyen al þe contreye <sup>5</sup> lýgte.

In þe dragon <sup>6</sup> heide þulke bere, & to grounde hym caſte.

And noþer dragon com fram Eſt, & myð þulke dragon fagt  
 vake."

þo þe kýngt amok, he tolde ys meýne of þys cas.

And ſome býþoghte, and tolde wat þe <sup>11</sup> býtokne was,

*nigra domus amicissimus Graueſius,*  
*ſicut alii Guennoveram & Guen-*  
*heram, vel Gonnoſſam ſive Go-*  
*uernauram appellant] reginz*  
*committens, cum exercitu ſuo*  
*portum Haymonis adivit, ubi*  
*tempeſtivo ventorum ſtatu mare*  
*ingreſſus eſt Gaſfr. Mon. 13. Hys*  
*lond to kepe, tho he wende, &*  
*alſo Gonnoſſe the quene Ar.*

1. F. hem. 2. He, as ge ſhall  
 her after here, to moſt ſorme  
 he hym broght Ar. 3. Forth  
 in the ſee, Ar. 4. Euene a  
 houte mydnyght, hym mette a

wonder cas Ar. 5. fle out of  
 the Eſt an hegh, That alle  
 men, that negh hym were,  
 quaked, whan they hym ſegh.  
 A gryſly dragon fro þe Weſte  
 Ar. 6. Cuius murmur tota lit-  
 tora intremebant Gaſfr. Mon.  
 7. Thurgh the lightneſſe of  
 his eyen Ar. 8. A light Ar.  
 9. Overcome this bere, Ar.  
 10. Loco huius verſus hac habet  
 Ar. And ded leſt hym in the  
 ſeld, this Arthur ſore a gaſte  
 Ar. 11. Bityokneſ Ar.

þat

þat þe dragon of by Weste bytokned þe kyng Arture,  
 And þe beore som foul geant, þat me wolde of yhare.  
 ⁊ þat he wolde ouercome þe geant; & þe dragon of byheste  
 Bytokned þe emperour of Rome, & þe batayle of the beste  
 Ouercome bytokned þat þe Romeyns wolde al so.  
 Ac þe kyng ne iugede noght, þat yt wolde be so y do.  
 þer after hit come to Barbestat, & pygte þer by syde  
 Her tentes and paulyons, her compaynye to abyde.  
 Under þat þer com word to þe kyng Arture,  
 þat þe beste geant, þat mon wolde of yhare,  
 Out of þe lond of Spayne com, & adde ⁊ ynowe Cleyne,  
 þat was so bayr, þe kynges nece Howwel of Pentayne,  
 And by þe mount of Seyn Wythel yre lede atte laste,  
 And þe kyngtes of þe lond fwyed after bakke,  
 Ac hit ne mygte nout agen hym do. For ⁊ weper so hit wende  
 By water, oper by londe, anon rygt he hem stonde,  
 ⁊ Wyd gleyue oper myd roches, and newe alyue he let.  
 And some he myd strengþe nom, & al quyt hem fret.  
 ⁊ Al stylllelyche mypiane rygt þe kyng nom ys boteler  
 Bedwer, þat nomon yt wiste, and Gay ys pauntyr,

1. Some seide also, that the  
 kyng holde with honour  
 fighte er longe were with  
 the Cenatour, And seide, the  
 Cenatour bi tokned the best  
 of by Est, And Arthur to the  
 dragon that com fro by West.  
 Ther after hit come *Ar.* 2.  
 Ransshed *Ar.* 3. Nam five  
 mari, five terra illum invade-  
 bant, aut naves eorum ingenti-

bus saxis obruebat, aut diverso-  
 rum generum telis interimebat.  
 Sed & plures capiebat, quos  
 semivivos devorabat *Galf. Mon.*  
 4. With speres & stones also,  
 fewe a lyue he let *Ar.* 5. Al  
 stillely, whan hit was nyght,  
 Arthur clepede a part Bed-  
 wer his boteler, and Gay his  
 steward, And two squyers  
 with hem also, that he muche

Cc 2

trist,



(For he truste to hem nesse) and wende vop as alone,  
 For he wolde to such geant verdes lede bone  
 For obody, as we segh, and so mache ek he truste  
 To hym sulue & to hardyly. Ps men wanne hit yt waste,  
 So he come toward his hul, a gret fur þeruppe he sey,  
 And anoper voppe a lasse hul, þat þer bysyde was ney.  
 Non nuste hit to sope, voppe weper þe geant were;  
 Bedwer he sende vorto aspye stylyche verst þere.  
 Werst to þe lasse hul: myd allp, þat he bond,  
 He wende al by water, vor he ne mygt noht alonde.  
 So he com vp þe hul an hey, he hurde atte bygennynge  
 Of a womman a deolnol cry, and a pytos wepynges.  
 Werst he was sore adrad, þat þe geant were þere ney,  
 And napeles he hente herte, & drou more an hey.  
 So bond he gere þet fur, and a lute þet bysyde  
 In buryels al nywe ymad, & a womman, þat so cryde,

triste, And wende forthal pri-  
 uely, that his ost hit nyte.  
 When thei negh the hulles  
 come, a fure uppon they segh,  
 And vppon the lasse hulle a  
 nother that were somdel negh.  
 Than nuste hit.

1. Tanta namque virtute præ-  
 valendo negligebat contra talia  
 monstra exercitum ducere, cum  
 & suos hoc modo inanimaret,  
 & solus ad illa destruenda suffi-  
 ceret *Galfr. Mon.* 2. Dubitantes  
 illico super quem eorum habi-  
 tassent gigas, Beduerum dirigunt,  
 ut certitudinem rei exploraret  
*Galfr. Mon.* 3. In a bot, that he

send, *Ar.* 4. *Navicula Galfr. Mon.*  
 5. *Spight by lond Ar.* 6. *Cu-  
 jus [montis] dum cacumen in-  
 cepisset ascendere; audito desu-  
 per femineo ululato [Sic Codex  
 ille, quem mihi dono dedit amicissimus  
 Gravesius, non ululatu] primo in-  
 horruit, quia dubitavit mon-  
 strum adesse Galfr. Mon.* 7. *Up  
 to the hulle an hegh; at the  
 bygennynge, Of a womman he  
 hurde a cry pytonly playn-  
 yng Ar.* 8. *Tok good herte,  
 Ar.* 9. *Tho he fond ther a  
 fupr, and a lytel Ar.* 10. *Sic  
 quidem Codex (quem sequimur)  
 Harleyanus, pro quo alii (ut*  
 12

Alner holded sytte here, and anon, so hito y sey  
 þe kyng Bedwer, heo sygte, and bygan to grede an hey,  
 "Alas! alas! þou wrecche man, much mys aventure  
 "Hap þe ybrogt in to þys stede, alas! how shalt ou dure?  
 "Alas! þe pynes, þat þou shalt sone paye, deþ!  
 "þe pyte, þat ychabbe of þe, þoru out myn herte gef.  
 "Thor þys verbroyde geant, abbe he of the an sygt,  
 "þy fayre body so gentyl bot swolwe he wole to nygt.  
 "Thor he wole sone come þulke verbroyde pece,  
 "þat nom Helene, noble mayde, kyng Howwel nece,"  
 "þat ychabbe non rygt her ybuteþ, was noryle ych was,  
 "þat was al my soule, & al my luf, ych went non such nas.

in Ar.) þer (five here) forsitan  
 malint. Sed gere (quod para-  
 tum notat) retineo. 11. Bu-  
 ricles newe made, & the wom-  
 man, that cride, Al for oldeþ  
 & for wope, and tho heo segh  
 Bedwer, "Lord haue mer-  
 cy," heo sayde, "on the man,  
 "what dost though nouth her?  
 "Alas!" heo seide, "though  
 "wrecche man, what mys a  
 "venture hath broght the to  
 "this stede, how shalt though  
 "longe endure? The pyte,  
 "that y haue of the, thurgh  
 "my herte it geth. Sory I  
 "am, that though shalt suffre  
 "sone deþ. For this soule  
 "Geant, haue he of the asyght,  
 "The body, that so gentyl is,

"wel sone be to twyght. For  
 "hider he wole come right  
 "sone that like soule pece,  
 "That ranelhede faire Ce-  
 "lepyne, kyng Howels nece  
 Ar. 12. Inspeixit quoque tumu-  
 lum recenter factum, & juxta eum  
 quandam anum flentem & eju-  
 lantern. Quæ ut eum aspexit,  
 conspectum fletu impediende in  
 hunc modum profata est: "O  
 "infelix homo, quod infortu-  
 "nium te in hunc locum sub-  
 "vectat? O! inenarrabiles mor-  
 "tis poenas passure! miseret me  
 "tui, miseret, quia tam detesta-  
 "bile monstrum florem juven-  
 "tutis tuæ in hac nocte consu-  
 "met. *Galfr. Mon.*

" : And

"And þe wole þe wolde þys tendre þyng memmyr soule  
y nou,

"And heo ne myhte yt soffry nort, myð lecherye þe yr flou.

"þe code þe to me olde : wrecche, to endy ys e floule cas,  
("To wrytnesse God ych take, þat agen my wille yt was)

"And dude by me ys lecherye, alas ! þulke stounde !

"þer uer ðe þou þendy mon, þer syker be þou y founde,

"Wanne þe comþ by me to lygge, þe wole þe lyme mele

"To drame and berfinesse, gerantre at one mele.

Bedwex" bygan to comforty þe womman in þe place,

And by þet yre hate of hyr mo bytyme, þoru Gode's grace,

And wende agen to þe kyng, and tolde al þys cas.

þe kyng was sorý, þe he wiste, þat : þet mayde assawe was,

"Ac anantre þe þogte hym do, e dude hym : in wreye,

þys clene mayde borto : wreche, and ys selawes beye.

1. And as this soule Geant  
wold hane leye here by, This  
ilk faire mayde þe slogh  
thurgh his lechery. Tho yede  
þe to me, olde wrecche, his  
lecherye to fulfille, I take  
God to witnesse hit was a ye  
my wille, So that enere wole,  
whan hym lust with me hane  
a do. And thus I lyue in this  
penance, and durý moch wo.  
Wel sone þe wole come her  
to me, and if though þer be  
founde, Though halt sey  
wailaway, e curse the harde  
stounde. Bedwex Ar. 2.  
Namque, recepto infra tenerri-

mum pectus timore, dum eam  
nefandus ille amplecteretur, vi-  
tam, diuturniore luce dignam,  
sinivit. Ut igitur illam, quæ erat  
mihi altera spes, altera vita, al-  
tera dulcedo jocunditatis, scædo  
coitu suo deturpare nequivit, de-  
testanda venere succensus, mihi  
invita (Deum & senectutem  
meam testor) violentiam inges-  
sit. Fuge, dilecte mi, fuge, &c.  
*Galf. Mon.* 3. L. wrecche. 4. L.  
soule. 5. The Ar. 6. In a  
venture Ar. 7. In his weye,  
Ar. 8. A wreke, with his  
selawes tweye Ar.

**Ar** hit come tpe <sup>1</sup> þys hul, arft he was ycome  
 þys gryflyche geant, & hadde an batte barn ynome,  
 And yspytte hym þoru out myð an yrene spyte,  
 And rosteðe in þys grette fure, to abbe þe folle byte.  
 Artur bed ys <sup>2</sup> felawes, talate hym yworpe alone,  
 Ac gyf hit seye hym in nede, þat hit ne made targynge none.  
 Kyng Artur hym blessede, and baldelyche ynou  
 Toward þys gryflyche <sup>3</sup> fourme myð gode herte hym drou.  
 þe <sup>4</sup> geant, þo he sey hym come, bygan ys mace adrawe,  
 þat turye stalwarde men ne sholde nozt <sup>5</sup> enes wawe.  
 Toward <sup>6</sup> þe hened þe kyng he smot, ac he hente myð ys  
 shelde.  
 Ac gut he dryde aladoun, and wel harde yt belde.  
 For yt <sup>7</sup> porte al þe hul myð þe stroc was astoned.  
 Artur was lygt ynou, as he was ywoned.  
 He hupe vp, þo he wroþpe was, and ys suerd adrou,  
 And smot <sup>8</sup> þen strowe in the frount, myð gode ernes ynoung.

1. To the hul, the Geant was come, And hadde broght a gret swyn, that he hadde nome, *Ar.* 2. felawes tho to lete hym al one, *Ar.* 3. Gess with good hert he drogh *Ar.* 4. Mox illos ut, nihil tale præmeditatus, aspexit, festinavit clavam suam sumere, quam duo juvenes vix à terra erigerent. Evaginavit ergo rex gladium suum, & prætenso clipeo, quantum velocitas sinebat, properabat eum præcedere, antequam clavam cepisset. At ille, non ignarus meditationis, jam ceperat eam, re-

gemque interposito clipeo tanto conamine percussit, quod sonitus ictus & tota littora replevit, & aures ejusdem ultra modum hebetavit *Galfr. Mon. 5. Ones Ar.* 6. The kyng's hed he smot, he kept hym with his shelde. But yut he bowede hit al down, and wel harde hit shelde. For hit ferde of the stroc al the hulle was stoned. Arthur was lyght a fote, as he was woned. And lept vp, tho he wrothed was, *Ar.* 7. F. porte. 8. The *Ar.*

Ac

He þe bel & selfe mag so <sup>1</sup> hard, & þe scolle hard & þyche,  
 þat, vor þey yt ne come nogt þere, þe dunt nas nogt wyche.  
 And ys mace þe duðe ek bytneue, <sup>2</sup> ac þet blod adoun wende  
 So baſte in eye, and in face, þat hym ney ablende.  
 þe kyng <sup>3</sup> hugte her & þer, & leyde on euere baſte,  
 So ſtrang þas þe ſtreme, þat no dunt ne mygte hym adoun  
 caſte.

He heuðe, & gnyte, & ſhod agen, as yt were a ſtrong þer,  
 þat euere mole agen þe ſtroc, borte he ne may namor.  
 þe kyng ſmot euere her and þer, ſo þat attie laſte  
 Cruel of herte þe nome to hym, and adoun ſo baſte  
 Calyburne, ys god ſnerd, þat þe ſcolle clef a tpo,  
 þat þe ſnerd was al þer tyme yhud, <sup>4</sup> þat brayn outhout alſo.  
 þo <sup>5</sup> gryſlych gal þe ſtreme þo, þat gryſlych was ys bere.  
 He bel doung as a gret ok, þat byneþe ycorne were,  
 þat yt þogte þat al hul myd þe ballynge ſtok.  
 þo ſhod þe kyng and lon, þey ech lyme hym ok,  
 Wor þe was wery yſagt. Bedwer þe het þere,  
 þat he <sup>6</sup> crone of þe gryſlych hened, & to caſtel bere.  
 So þat hit come to her felawes <sup>7</sup> in dawynge.  
 So noble <sup>8</sup> los nas neuere rþurd, as me bar þo þe kyng.

1. Togh, and the scolle ſo  
 thicke, That hit greuede  
 hym nogt ſul muche, thegh  
 he harde hitte *Ar.* 2. And put  
 the blod out wende, And ran  
 in his epen ſo, that hit hym  
 muche a blende *Ar.* 3. Lepte  
*Ar.* 4. The brayn outhout al-  
 ſo. So gryſly pul the ther=

reme, and gryſly was his  
 bere, And fel down as an  
 oke, that for torne were *Ar.*  
 5. Exclamavit vero inuisus ille,  
 & velut quercus, ventorum viri-  
 bus eradicata, cum maximo soni-  
 tu corruit *Galf. Men.* 6. Smpte  
 of *Ar.* 7. In the damentynge  
*Ar.* 8. A los was neuere *Ar.*  
 wys

Hys men truste þe bet to hym, and mony blessinge  
 He adde, for he deliuerede men of an so voule þynge.  
 þo kyng Arture's men y come were echon,  
 Sone hit drowe hem toward France, vorto seche her son.  
 Hem com tytynge, þat <sup>1</sup> emperour to France ycome was  
 Wyð so gret folc hym to seche, þat such neuere yseye was.  
 þer of nas noȝt þe kyng adrad, <sup>2</sup> ac forþore he wende byfyde,  
 And bygan to <sup>3</sup> pathe ys paunylons, hym vorto abyde.  
 þe erl of Orenford he nom, and anoper erl al so,  
 And syre Waweyn, ys syster sone, þo al þys was ydo,  
 And to Lucye þe senatour in þys manere hem sende,  
 To hote hym, þat hastelyche out of France he wende,  
 Oþer þat he come <sup>4</sup> amorne, batayle vorto do,  
 Vorto enye, weþer adde betere ryȝt þer to.  
<sup>5</sup> þys noble kyngtes wende forþ, and hete Lucye so  
 Vorto wende out of France, <sup>6</sup> oþer batayle do.  
 Quynnteyn, ys neuen, answered attē ende,  
 þat he nas noȝt þader ycome, out þanne vorto wende,  
 He to gōuerny France, <sup>7</sup> þat of rygte of Rome ys,  
 And þat hote gylþynge and boist nophyng myð Bratons nys.  
<sup>8</sup> Syre Waweyn, þe gode kyngt, was þo wroþ ynou,  
 And among al þat folc hupte ner, and ys lacerd adrou,

1. Theperour <i>Ar.</i> 2. He wende ther by sīde <i>Ar.</i> 3. Picche his panelones, them- perour to a bīde <i>Ar.</i> 4. On the morwe, <i>Ar.</i> 5. The <i>Ar.</i> 6. Or elles the bataille do. The senatour's cosyn Quin- tian answered gayne attē	ende, <i>Ar.</i> 7. That holden of Rome is, <i>Ar.</i> 8. Sire Wa- wayn the god knyght was tho wroth y nogh, God wot, And lodeynly drogh his sword, & of his hed he smot, And with that hed to hors he lepte, ther folwede hym y
--	---

And smot of þat heved, & anon þat heved myð hym nam,  
 And wif ys slayned to þe hees for þem all þat he cam.  
 He wat an heris, wat a hote, þe Romayns hym bywyde yong,  
 Herte enwrothe þat gret meyster, þat fyre Maweyn slon.  
 Geryn, sei of Gaseys, þat myð kyng Arthur was,  
 He bytunede hym þe he sey þe Romayns in þer pas,  
 And on þem wat þat dedy he smot myð ys laure.  
 þe erl of Wyntoun & þogte of ys cheance,  
 And bytunede hym, & myð ys laure þem þe þrote smot on.  
 And þus þys þe gode kyngtys doted þem among þer sea.  
 þe was þer on, þat þat sparrow, þat sendede myð al ys mayn,  
 Forto : enwrothe Maweyn, to he þys Maweyn.  
 Byre Maweyn hym bytunede, & an swer hym gaf,  
 þat al : þat heved & þe drest : claudyche hym to claf.  
 "Go," he seide, "to : Maweyn on heide þer he ys,  
 "And seye hym, þat fyre Maweyn hym shude word þys,  
 "þat suche strouen þe Wyntoun come gyne ywre,  
 " : þat he seide, þat myð þem dote gylfynge & doct nys.  
 "For : ychet wylfader þan Maweyn, þan del þan myght hym shone.  
 Hys schynen þe dote mynne agon, : al þay þei me se wene.

nowe Maweyn, to hant  
 wrecheþe meyster, & made  
 gret a howe. Geryn Erl of  
 Chartres, þat messenger also  
 was, bytunede hym, when  
 he sey þe Romayns folme  
 such a pass, And thurgh the  
 dedy on he smot with his god  
 launce . 9. Iratus illico  
 Gwalguanus, ens quo accinctus  
 erat, irruit in eum, & ejusdem  
 capite amputato, ad equos cum

focis regreditur. Insequuntur  
 itaque Romani, partim pede,  
 partim equis, ut concivem suum  
 in legatos omni nisi dissuagen-  
 tes vindicent *Galf. Mon.*

1. I benge Maweyn, and  
 quelle fire . 2. The .  
 3. Al done he to claf .  
 4. Maweyn . 5. For he  
 seide, þat gylfynge and doct  
 with Wyntoun is . 6. But  
 . 7. Al thogh they .

Hit turnde agen, & ech of hem sette iohs one floe.  
 He enere þe Romeyns after synche hals gny.  
 So þat her com out of an mode, as yt was byspoke,  
 In fyr housend of Wentons, her selowes herte smoeche.  
 Hit come out wýð god eys, and aspiende hals  
 The Romeyns, & maye floe, & sounne adoun cast.  
 Þo to Petreie, a græt Romeyn, þys tydyngs come,  
 Ten housend of hors ymye wýð hym soun he nome,  
 Werto helpe ys selowes, and þe oþer as myght be,  
 Toward þe wode, fram manchester come, þe Mercurius gonc  
 to se.

He þo hit come among auncie haggis, hit stode agen anon,  
 And turnde : þe breche agen, & toke slouche-horse.  
 And þe Romeyns had agen þe, þat þe was gret slagt.  
 : þe erl of Hereford þey, þat þys face was mygt,  
 fulke, þat he most dour to, as a gret companye,  
 He bed hym fywy, turnynge to do chynelers.  
 þo þys borewarde was ymad, þere out & of he was,  
 And gresche þe ný þere out, and toke aboute slas.  
 So þat to þer mayster Petreie he come,  
 And bad, as he adde yþogt, by þe noche hym nome,  
 And : þurke hym adoun of ys chere, & hym salve al so  
 " Anowarde hym bel adoun, as he adde yþogt to do."

1. Johannes that hit come,  
 2. Toward þere ene-  
 mys, & toke leyde hem on  
 3. So that the Erl of  
 Hereford (segh) þere face was  
 myght, 4. Adeo ut in Codice  
 etiam Harleyno was pro nas

foritan sit exponendum. 4.  
 Elys est 5. Adest  
 quo modo etiam in Codice  
 Harleyno potest legi, si litteram  
 primam non pro þ sed pro p  
 (nam in hoc codice eodem mo-  
 do hæ litteræ effinguntur) ha-  
 D d 2 beas.



þe Romeyns hurte <sup>1</sup> to anon, her prince vp to rere,  
 þe Brutons to helpe <sup>2</sup> her alf, vasse aboute were.  
 þer was gulting and konyng, and throc mony one.  
 So þat þe Brutons atte laste, among alle her son,  
 Myd strengþe ladde vorþ þetreye <sup>3</sup> her prince þere.  
 þo þe Romeyns were wyþ out chef, dyscomforted hit were  
<sup>4</sup> And to spradde hem her & þer, & þe oþere after vasse,  
 And slowe & despoylede, and to grounde hem caste,  
 And assored hem myd her armes, & þe herte alþus nome,  
 So þat myd gret promesse to <sup>5</sup> þe kyng Arture hit come.  
<sup>6</sup> Welles þat þe kyng was so glad, vor þe naste her of noght,  
 Mayre gyfþyn þe hym gef, and wel mo þe adde þhogt.  
 þe prysons amorne to þarys þe sende,  
 To holde in prisson, & wyþ <sup>7</sup> hym god condut þer wende.  
 þe Romeyns <sup>8</sup> þogte þyn wel, and, as þe maystres hete,  
 Gyltene þousend þer wende, þyn prysons vorþe mete.  
 þo þe Brytons come myd þe prysons þar,  
 þe Romeyns come agen hem al anonymar,  
 And wende hem to sende anon, ac þe Brutons agen stode,  
 And defended hem wyle hit mygte myd wel stourþe mode.  
 So þat, þor defaute of help, hit were al ney ysend.  
 Ac þo com þe duc of Deyto, as God adde þe grace ysend,

beas. 6. fel down euene vp  
 hym, and ley ther bothe two  
 Ar.

1. Deest Ar. 2. Hure lord,  
 faste Ar. 3. The Romeynes  
 prince there Ar. 4. And dis-  
 parpled her & ther, the Bru-

tones after hem faste, Ar.  
 5. Deest Ar. 6. The kyng  
 was tho glad þ nogh, for he  
 wiste ther of noght, Ar.  
 7. hem Ar. 8. Thoght her  
 on wel, Ar.

Myd

Wyð þre þousend þoren ywylle, & þar of was <sup>1</sup> 2 war.  
 þo were þe Brutons glad ynou, & þen sold made bar,  
 And þe kyng of <sup>2</sup> Wyrg, and many oþer hit flome,  
 And loundynges, þat hit nome, to prisen wasts hit drome.  
 þo hit to þe kyng come, and kened þer skilwardþede,  
 þe kyng was þo glad ynou, þer hym þogte he hadde no drede.

**L**icȝe þe senatour in þogt was he soun,  
 In such ard cas as hym bel, wat were best to done.

So þat he þogte <sup>3</sup> Wylllelyche, to a strong cyte wende,  
 Wrote þe emperour hym myȝte more poer sende.  
 Kyng Briture was þer of ywar, and þogte, at he slepe,  
 Wyð al ys poer by þe wey soumar hym <sup>4</sup> kepe.  
 Werþ he wende myð ys oft, and þo he was y come  
 To þe stede, þer he wolde be, chenetours he made samme;  
 As þe kyng of Cornuayle, and of Scotland al so,  
 Of Norþweye, of Denemarch, of Bruteyne, of Deyto,  
 Of Galscoyne, of Normandy, and erles gyt þerto  
 Of Cartoys, of Orenford, of Leycestre al so,  
 And fyre Wawetein ys nenen, flour of corteyse.  
 Wyð oft he delde a senene, and in ech compaigne  
 Wyð þousend and wyð hondred he dade of bachelerye  
 And wyfȝe and wyne, and þat was bayr sepugnerye.  
 þe eyȝte oft to hym sulne he adde þer wyþoute,  
 Six þousend and six hondred þere were in pulke route

---

1. Id est, he was aware of the trap of the Romans.  
 Nam, "Guithardus etenim, dux  
 "Pictavenſium, comperto dolo

"cum tribus milibus adveno-  
 "rat," in *Galf. Ann.* 2. *Strie,*  
*N.* 3. *Princkly,* *N.* 4. *To*  
 kepe *N.*

And



"Such enemies wolde you come, gif ye hem encounter  
 "Thor we wolde anon her after berþ and wyne blame.  
 "Of þe treason, þat you haue a worth, as of treason, as of  
 town,  
 "He of londen, man ende as worth, as of þese honours.  
 þet folc by herte hym þe esen, prest her to be  
 To deye rater in a sold, þan þe batayle be.  
 Lucye þe countess al so in þe dede  
 Ordeyned and sadde ys aft, and þer moche soþer  
 "Myne noble kyngdom, to was goon and helle  
 "His landys solle abonyt a to by thidde and by the,  
 "þencheþ on þoure alderne, þat were of so noble wyght,  
 "He dradde most to seþe her bled, þate wyne þat wyght,  
 "He euer soþe, as þan here þat þeþe none,  
 "In so his wenne her soþer, a marroun her son,  
 "And adde seruaunt of al þe world, marroun and bygonn,  
 "þat we lore þe soldage, þat he so woldyche maner  
 In er, as he of þe soner, he sette by of gude,  
 And wende toward þis batayle, abysse ande welle.  
 He made her cry in eþer holf, a to gader schyns,  
 Who nyste maner of lort, þan he myght synne.  
 7 þat folc bel down to grounde allone, as lorde þat of the,  
 þe. Mentons and þe more a helle, her þan was þat of the.

1. That honour goth wile  
 byfalle, the Homenes and ye  
 overcome, for we were anon  
 þer after wende to wyne  
 blame. 2. That he,

3. The sold, 4. Deft 5.  
 That wende 6. He  
 though he never doth the  
 non, 7. The sold 8.  
 Right pro battle in

þe kyng Bedmer was þere asslawe, þer þe kyng of Speden  
him slou

Wyd an lance þer þe þrote, as he toward him drou.  
May yn selawe hym wolde awreke, kyng of Hungro,  
And to deþe was in þulke <sup>1</sup> berde ywounded al so.  
And gyt, as a noble kyngt, hym selawe's body he nome,  
And þer wof, ded as yt was, to þe kyng's dragon come.  
On ! leuerd ! þe deol þat þer was of hem of Normandye,  
þe hit seye þer kyng asslawe, flour of chynalerye !  
þe deol ch of hem of Hungro, þe hit þer kyng yleie  
<sup>2</sup> Wyd wounden to rannced so, þat þe moſte neðe deye !  
Wyel, Bedmer's neuen, þe yn uñcle asslawe he seie,  
<sup>3</sup> He berde as a wofles mon, yt was deol to be hym neie.  
Wyd þre hundred hors ywofe in yn wof rage he wende  
Wofte awreke yn <sup>4</sup> uñcle deþ, as þer yn herte tende.  
He perced oft and oþer, wofte he yleie ynou  
þe kyngyn baner of Speden, þat yn uñcle slou.  
So grei was yn herte, þat of deþ he ne roge noþing.  
<sup>5</sup> To grounde he smot he e yn, e asslawe þen kyng,  
And þer, as yn uñcle ded lay, yn foule caroyne he brogte,  
And ryt þer by þere mele hakhed yt al to roge.  
þe grabde he to yn selawes, myd gode herte þere,  
To legge on vafte þe inþer men, þe wuls hit <sup>6</sup> berke were.

- 
- |                                |                          |        |                             |
|--------------------------------|--------------------------|--------|-----------------------------|
| 1. Route wounded               | Ar.                      | Ar.    | 5. But atte laste the       |
| 2. With his woundes alto       | raced, that              | Ar.    | kyng Spede to his eynde he  |
| 3. He ferð, as                 | he were wof, myght noman |        | broghte, And thader, that   |
| come hym negh                  | Ar.                      | 4. Un- | his uñcle lay, his caroyne. |
| cle's deth, so his herte tende |                          |        | broghte                     |
|                                |                          |        | Ar.                         |
|                                |                          |        | 6. fresh                    |

For

For þe promesse þat he adde ydo, 'hti stured hem alle vasse,

<sup>1</sup> And sogte in eyþer alf, and þet folc adoun caste.

In þe Romeyns alf to deþe þer were ydo

þe kyng of Babyloyn, & þe kyng of Spayne al so,

And þe kyng of Medes, & tweye gret scenatours, & folc myþs  
oute ende.

<sup>2</sup> In þys half þere were aslawe þe noble men and hende,

Syre Lyger Duc of Babyloyn, & anoper Duc al so,

And þe erl of Salebury, and of <sup>3</sup> Cycestre þerto;

And also þe erl of Wape, so þat þoru þys cas

þe compaynye <sup>4</sup> aþes half muche aneþered was.

þo com þe kyng of Brutayne, & syre Waweyn þe hende,

Mýd her nýwe oft al <sup>5</sup> veris, & stured hem in ech ende;

So þat þer were among hem þere to deþe ydo

<sup>6</sup> A gret Duc, and tuo þousend, and oper mýd al so.

<sup>7</sup> þe" kyng Howwel, & syre Waweyn, <sup>8</sup> þat" so gode bodyes  
were,

<sup>9</sup> Euere hti were ylych veris, & slowe here & þere.

Note hti som mon brogte adoun, newe duntres hti smýte.

Weþer of hem betere were, <sup>10</sup> strong yt was to wýte.

Syre Waweyn wýlnede euere mýd al ys mygte

Mýd Lucye þe scenatour in batayle to fygte.

<sup>11</sup> Lucye ne wýlnede naþemo, noþyng so muche alonde;

As to fygte mýd a such kyngt, hym sulue vorto fonde.

1. So that ther was in al  
ther sýde much folc doun caste

Ar. 2. In Brutones sýde Ar.

3. Chestre Ar. 4. Of Bru-

tones half much a petred was

Ar. 5. fresh, Ar. 6. Deest Ar.

7. Omittit Ar. 8. That place

Vol. I.

hti made whar hti come, and  
stured her and there Ar.

9. Wonder it Ar. 10. Lucie

welneþe also no thyng more in

londe, Than forto fght with

sire Wawayn hym self forto

fonde Ar.

E e

So

So þat hit mette hem þer, boþe hit were wel bawe.

' þer were dantes erygt, and swerden wel ydrawe.

þe Romeyns come to her mayster sone, to helpe hem in such  
cas,

So þyche, þat þese Romeyns wey ydrogt to grounde was.

þe kyng seture yt vnder get, and come sone in assaunde.

"What do 'ge," he seyde, "fere kyngtyn? Quelleþ on to  
grounde.

"Wý lete ge ' þyn alme men þus longe alyue go?

"þencheþ on þe datayles, þat ge abyþ ar þyn y do,

"On vr elderno, þat þyn wrecchen ' wretede myð burygte,

"On vus franchys, þat hit wolde þynyme vs, xpf hit mygte.

"As latesþ nous alyue go, to grounde smyteþ gours son.

Syre Calybourns yn suod he bygan to stike anon,

And slou to grounde her o þer, at he ne smet nogt oer,

þat he ne slou hym oþer yn hors, & among hem esþon,

þe kyng of Lybye & of Wytynde hym sulf he gan quelle

Myð Calybourns, & stude her heþene soulys to helle.

þe Wyntons, as hit berde were, to grounde þe slowe,

And þe Romeyns in her all wakke ch agen browe.

Lucye, to herby yn men, prykeþ her and þer,

And bygonne as enywe datayle rygt as hit berde were.

Sporan, sul of Gloucestre, myð ys olt by fyde

In an valeþe þenche, þe esþyngs werts abyde.

Wtte lufte myð ys berde wot to hem he come þer,

And bycloþede ' þyn Romeyns by hynde anonymar.

1. Dantes þer were grete y | huggenes alle & quallety .  
 knyges of swerden that were | 3. Thes þalme men . 4.  
 drawe . 2. Þe nogh my | wreted . 5. The .  
 þe

þo were þe Brutons al aboute, hit slawe þe to grounde  
 7e mony þousend of þe Romeyns in a lute houde.  
 þe 1. senatour was wyl a sper Lucye þer yslayte.  
 þo adde þe Brutons þe maystre al bygyte,  
 þe Romeyns, þat myghts of leapye, slawe halle loue,  
 And þe Brutons after, vorte hit were alle ouercome.  
 2. Armes hit adde þers & hors, & alle rycheſſe y non.  
 þe kyng, þo hal þys was ydo, toward reſte drou,  
 And let þe bodyes of ys men, þat aſlawe were,  
 Cadery out and burye noblyche ynou þers.  
 Kyngys in to þer owe londe he let lede al so,  
 As Bedwer in to Normandie, and Ray to Fanges,  
 And anoþer in to Flandren, and oþer of þe route  
 kyngtys he let burye in abbeyes þer aboute.  
 Men byſyde of þe lond he het to burye ys ſon.  
 For he ne kepte þer reuþe, þat þer wer vnbured non.  
 Ac Lucye's body he ſende 3 hym to Rome,  
 And bed hem, þat þer mayſtre's body þer ys truage noue,  
 And þat he nolde neuere more oþer truage hem ſende,  
 Ac he wolde hym ſulk gut þader come, & ſeche hem in ech  
 ende.  
 Grettore batayle þan þys was, 7eþ meue, nas neuere non,  
 Bote yt wers þulke of Troye, þer þer nas vnuſte non  
 Prince in al þe world, þat ne moſte be þer, oþer ſende  
 fram þe Weſt ſide of þe world to þe Eſtmoſt ende.

---

1. Cheuenteyn Ar. 2. Ar= hors, and rycheſſe y nogh Ar.  
 mure the Brutones hadde & 3. Hit Ar.



þo adde þe kyng Arture y wonne fram þe Westmost see  
 1 Anon to þe monns al þat lond, at he come age,  
 He þogte 2 wyne al clene Rome, & al þe lond þer aboute.  
 And vorte 3 passy borþ þe monns, he garked faste is route.  
 And as he was prest to do þulke noble dede,  
 A messager com fram þys lond, & nywe tydynges hym seyde,  
 þat Mordred, ys neuen, 4 wan he bytoc þys lond,  
 And ynome ys kynedom claneliche in ys hond,  
 And ycrowned hym sulue kyng, þoru þe quene rede,  
 And huld hyre in 5 spousbruche in byl fleste's dede.  
 Alas! þe luper tricherpe! þou mygte 6 be more 7  
 þo was þe kyng Arture bol of sorwe and sore,  
 7 In much all turne he nuste þo, weper Est þe West,  
 He to wreke hym 8 of ys luper neuen, ys herte ber euere best.  
 þe beage toward Rome he 9 bylenede þor þys cheance,  
 And þe kyng Howel of Brutaine myd þe poer of France  
 He 10 bylenede þer, toward þe londes bygonde see,  
 And hopede to wynne Rome, wanne he come est age.  
 Myd þe poer of þys londe hyderward he drou,  
 And myd 11 þe kynges here byfyde hym þogte 12 et longe ynou.

1. A non to the mountes to  
 ward Rome non was hym a  
 yer, Ar. 2. To wyne Ar.  
 3. Passe ouer the mountes, he  
 grethed faste his route Ar.  
 4. Wham he bytoke Ar. 5.  
 Spousbreche in byl lechore's  
 ded Ar. 6. Wit be Ar. 7. In  
 whather half tourne he  
 myghte he nuste Est or West,  
 Ar. 8. Of Mordred, his herte

Ar. 9. Leste Ar. 10. Bileste,  
 to kepe his londes ther by  
 yonde the see, Ar. 11. — di-  
 misso Hoelo, duce Armoric-  
 rum, cum exercitu Galliarum, ut  
 partes illas pacificaret, confestim  
 cum insularis tantummodo re-  
 gibus, eorumque exercitibus,  
 Britanniam remeavit *Galf. Mon.*  
 12. Erst Ar.

Ac **M**odred, þe lufet lufke, þer bypore byfogte  
 Cheiryk kyng of Saxons, þat <sup>1</sup> he hem help brogte,  
 And he byhet hym and ys al Kent ber and ner,  
 Al þat þengyft adde wule <sup>2</sup> wyþe kynges dæge Herryger:  
 He byhet hym and ys also al Norþomberlond,  
<sup>3</sup> Al þat lond fram Humber anon into Scotlond.  
<sup>4</sup> þo þat eygte hondred shipes into þys lond he brogte  
<sup>5</sup> Wol of Saracens yarmed, as he hym byfogte.  
 Gret poer of Prlond **M**odred hym <sup>6</sup> man al to  
 Of Bycars, and of ech maner men þer to,  
 þat he wuste þat no lone to þe kyng **A**rture bere.  
 So þat eygte score þousend of hors ywrye þer were  
 In <sup>7</sup> ys ost, þo hit were gadered in þys cas,  
 Wat of Crithyne, wat of payns, & al to muche þat was.  
 þo **A**rture myd ys poer arinede in þys londe,  
**M**odred bygan myd ys ost agen batte stonde.  
 Atte haene an batayle hit smyte myd gret mayn,  
 þer was aflawe <sup>8</sup> þen hende kyngt þe noble fyre **W**aweyn,  
 And **H**unsel þe kyng of Scotlond, and mony þousend also.  
 Ac lufet **M**odred atte laste, þo al þys was y do,  
 fleu myd al ys poer to **W**ynchestre batte,  
 So þat þe kyng **A**rture þe belid adde atte laste.  
 þo <sup>9</sup> **G**uanwaur, þe lufet quene, hurde of þys cas,  
 fram **E**uerwyk to **C**arleon heo fleu myd quye cas,

1. He som help hym broght, 4. ful of mysbilleued men, as  
 Ar. 2. By kynges Ar. 3. he Ar. 6. Gat also Ar.  
 And the lond toward Humber 7. This ost, whan hit Ar.  
 Ar. 4. So that bi. hun- 8. The curteys knyght **W**al-  
 dred shipes Ar. at *Galfredus* wayn, Ar. 9. Gonoure, Ar.  
*Mon. plane ut Codex Harleianus.*

And

And by com nonne þer, to lȳbbe in chaste lyue.  
 ' Som met þes was er adrad, ar þes hyede so bliue.  
 heo ne hyede nogt ægen yrs louerd, to welcome hym to londe.  
 ' gat yrs was beters nonne he, þan come bader ys honde.  
 þe kyng Arturs adde yþured ys folc þat ded was,  
 he sƿmed after þe traytor myð mel quȳc þas.  
 þe freme : garked ys oð, and ægen hym com,  
 And wȳpout Wȳnchestres anoper bataȳle he nom.  
 þer hit Dudes serme ȳnou, and flome to grounde baste,  
 Ac þe traytor was : dȳnse, and ðen atte laste  
 To Cornuayle með god eyr, he ne dorste no ner abyde.  
 þer he gadered hym nȳme oð, aboute in eche syde,  
 So þat he adde : under al, myð þat hym dȳlened er,  
 dȳrty þousend hoen : y wȳse, al to mucche was þer.  
 dȳn oð he : dȳgte suppe mel, al þou yt ðelde de,  
 And suor he wolde uaper deys, þan ener est to ðe.  
 Kyng Arturs was angȳfous : in ys companye,  
 þat þe luper traytor adde of scraped hym so tȳse.  
 he sƿmed hym myð ys folc to Cornuayle baste,  
 Wȳsyde þe mater of Camble hit mete : hem" atte laste.  
 þer hit smȳte an bataȳle deol uol y nou,  
 þat deol yt was so mucche folc in epper syde me flou.  
 Alor þer ne dȳlened in noper syde none heȳ mon duncpe,  
 Kyng, no duc, ne oþer, þat nas ydrot to depe.

1. I gat þes was to religi-  
 gion, er þes highed so bliue.  
 heo ne pade a penk hure lord,  
 2. Betor hure thoughte  
 nonne to be, than to come  
 3. Put ordeyned his oð,

4. Overcome, and slegh  
 5. Under hym, with that hym  
 lenede er, 6. Heled, also  
 7. Gan a raze faste, hugh  
 hit ðelde be, 8. And his  
 9. Deest

Ac

Ac Medred þe traytor adde more folc : of " ynou.  
 þo þe kyng Artur yſey, þat me ys folc ſo ſlon,  
 And þe kyng of Denemarch was aſſaue, & þe kyng alſo  
 Of Norþweye, & of ys oþer men mony þouſend þerto,  
 And he ſey, þat ys ſon ſhede enere agen beſte,  
 To þe luteſt folc þat he adde he ſper atte laſte.  
 " 2. Sulle, he ſeyde, " be lyf bere ar we be ded,  
 " 3. And ychelle ſulle myn dere ynoumanns þer nys oþer rell.  
 " Abbe ych ſlaue þe falſe ſnyke, þe inþer traytor,  
 " Hyt worþ me þanne worte deys gret ſoye & honour.  
 He droun Calþborne ys ſuerd, and in eyþer ſyde ſlon,  
 And worte he to þe traytor com, made hym wey gode ynou.  
 He hente of verſt ys helm, and ſapþe myd wylle god  
 Anne ſtroc he geſt hym, myd wel ſtourdȝ mad,  
 And þoun hanbert and ys coler, þat nere noþyng ſouþle,  
 He ſmot of ys hened as lygtlyche as yt were a lute ſtonple,  
 þat was ys laſte chyualerye, þa wayte ended ynou.  
 Wor þe folc ſo þyche com, þe wule he þer loured ſlon,  
 Aboute hym in ech alf, þat among ſo mony ſon  
 He aneng deþe's wounde, and wonder nas yt none.  
 Ac ouercome has he nogt, þey ys wounden dedlych were.  
 þo : he adde ys laſte chyualerye þus noblyche ydo þous,  
 He : geſt þe crowne of þys lond þe noble Conſtantyn,  
 (þe erl Cadore's ſont of " of " Cornwayle,) þat was ys coſyn,

1. Deest. 2. "Selle we," he ſeyde. 3. Myn ſhal be dere bought, ther is non o- ther red. 4. Sed & incli- tus ille Arturus rex lethaliter vulneratus eſt, qui illinc ad ſa- nanda vulnera ſua in inſula A-	vallonis aduectus, cognato ſuo Constantino, & filio Cadoris ducis Cornubiæ, diadema Bri- tanniæ conceſſit anno ab incar- natione Domini D. XLII. Gaſſ. Mon. 5. Deſunt hic bina ſolia in. in quibus, præter aſſa- ora-
--	--

And let hym lede in to an yle, vorto hele ys wounde,  
 And deȳde as þe beste kyngt, þat me wiste euere yfounde.  
 Ac naþeles þe Brutons and þe Cornwalysse of ys kande  
 Wenyþ þe be alyue gut, & abbeþ hym gut in mynde,  
 þat he be to comene gut, to wyinne agen þys lond.  
 And noȳt, þor þan at Glasŷynbury ys bones suppe me mounþ,  
 And þer touore þe heȳe wened, amȳdde þe quer ȳwȳs,  
 As ys bones lȳggeþ, ys tumber wel bayr ys.  
 In þȳf hondred ȳer of grace, and fourty and tuo,  
 In þys manere in Cornwale to deþe he was y do.

**C**onstantyn was þo kyng, after þe kyng Arture.  
 As þe Saxons sette agen hym, þe wule hȳ mȳȳte  
 Dure;

And Modrede's tueȳe soner, þe wule hȳ dorste abyde,  
 Ac Constantyn hem to drof, eyþer in ys syde,  
 þen anne in to Wȳncheŷtre, and þer wȳþ ſorwe ȳ nou,  
 In chyrcþe to bore þe heȳe wened Constantyn hym ſlou.  
 þe oper ſlen to Londone, and þoru Constantyn al ſe  
 þer by nore þe heȳe wened to deþe he was y do.  
 Conan hem ſlou ſuppe Constantyn in þe þȳrdde ȳere.  
 At Stonhengþe he was yburyd, as ys elderne were.

oratione ſoluta quzdam con-  
 cepta fuiſſe e fragmento 'quo-  
 dam plane colligo. 6. Dele.

1. The Saxones werred  
 faſte on hym, *Ar.* omiſſo as,  
 pro quo ac malim. 2. Aboute  
 hem drof ech on his ſide, And  
 wente to Wȳncheŷtre, *Ar.*

3. Exinde tertio anno interfe-  
 ctus eſt [Constantinus] a Co-  
 nano, & juxta Utherpendragon  
 infra lapidum ſtructuram ſepul-  
 tus fuit, quz haud longe a Sa-  
 lesbiria mira arte compoſita An-  
 glorum lingua Stanþeng nan-  
 cupatur *Galf. Mon.*

Seȳn

Sejn Dauyd deȳde þer bȳuore, bȳshop of Walȳs;  
 And þer he was bayre ȳburyd, in ȳs owe chȳrche ȳwȳs:  
 Constantȳne's neuene Aurely was kȳng þo,  
 And leneȳde in ȳs kenedom tuo ȳer and nanmo.

**A** Drȳȳpor was þo kȳng þour ȳere þunneþe.  
 þe Saxons he broȳte al bȳneþe, & monȳ on to Deþe.

**M** Alȳgo com þo after hȳm, þat þe bayroste kȳng was,  
 þat me wuſte euere in þȳs lond, & al so þer nas  
 Strengore mon non bȳ ȳs Daȳ. þor he wan ek to þȳs  
 londe

þe fyr ȳles þat beþ abonte, and heildȳs adde an honde,  
 As Godlonde, and Orcadas, and al so Erlonde,  
 Norþweȳe, and Denemarch, and al so Flonde.

**L** Trȳc was kȳng after hȳm, þat ſkalworde mon was,  
 Ac to prout he was & to fals, þat ſende þȳs londe  
 alas!

þor þe Saxons & þe Englyſſe men were euere in þȳs londe,  
 And adde agen þe Brutons euere worre an honde.  
 þo hit ſeȳe þe falſhede of þe kȳng Carrȳc,  
 Hit wende after 2 Godmond, þat was kȳng of Aſſrȳc,  
 To helpe hem wyne þȳs londe, & bȳ hete hȳm bayre ȳnou.  
 þe kȳng Godmond mȳd bayr oft hederward ſone drou,  
 And mȳd hondred þouſend men, & fyrty þouſend þer to,  
 þe come here mȳd þe Saxons þe worre þor to do.

1. *Katerik* *Ar.*  
*Monumetens* liquet.  
 Vol. I.

2. *Qui tunc in Hibernia erat, ut è Galfrido*

þe Saxons, and <sup>1</sup> þet grete folc, þat come is of Ælfric,  
 Ætyleð wæste þe Brutons, and her kyng Carryc.  
 Mōny bataile hit smyte, & slywyðe wpe hym wæste,  
 And fram tounne to tounne hym dryne, so þat atte laste .  
 Hit dryne hym to <sup>2</sup> Cyrencestre, & bysýged hym þer tūne.  
 þen tounne hit barnde wpen hym, ar hit mygte <sup>3</sup> hym wryne.  
 þer hit smyte an bataile. suppe hit dryne wrys  
 Carryc ouer Senerne Wæste in to Walsys.  
 Wor þe <sup>4</sup> kande men of þys londe recetted were þer  
 Cuere, manns of strangemen yworred hit were.  
 þet inþer þepene folc <sup>5</sup> barnde þe wæste,  
 And <sup>6</sup> destrude al þys londe, and tounnes adoun caste.  
 Wat myð sere, wat myð swerð, hit destrude al þat hit founde.  
 Hit ne sparede gress, ne chyrche, that hit ne brogte to grounde.  
 Hit, þat mygte of scapye, wæste flowe þers  
 To Walsys, and to Cornwayle, and hadde hem wor fere.  
 þe erche byssep of London, and of Euerwyk al so,  
 þe hit sepe, þat Cristendom to grounde was al ydo,  
 And chyrchen alle ycast ydown, þe relykes hit nome ywys,  
 þat hit adde of haly men, and þame in to Walsys.  
 þe relykes wolde hit nogt bylene, ac bere myþ hem wor fere.  
 Wor raper hit wolde ymartred be, þan hit <sup>7</sup> yperyled mane.  
 And into þe laste Brutayne men þows al so þyche,  
 So þat here nas nogt bylcned, wate þepene folc and wyche.

- |   |                                       |
|---|---------------------------------------|
| 1. This much folk, <i>Ar.</i>             | 5. Pro barnde. Nam brende in          |
| 2. Circetre <i>Ar.</i> cum 4. c. libris   | <i>Ar.</i> sed u pro h sepissime in   |
| gasterum supra lin. ab ead. ma-           | vett. libris. 6. Destruyde <i>Ar.</i> |
| an. 3. Hit <i>Ar.</i> 4. Kynde <i>Ar.</i> | 7. A peered <i>Ar.</i>                |

So þat fram þorþ into þe Souþ no Cristendom nas,  
 Ne fram Seuerne to þe Souþ see, ac pure þeponess was.  
 Alas! alas! þe god Arture, to<sup>1</sup> þer he was þe.  
 Þys þep brogte to þys lond muche forme and wo.

**S**Þrons & þe Englyshe, & her compaynye,  
 Hæde þe of þys londe al elene þe maystrye,  
 And made hem kynges of þys land, as hit adde  
 bynore,

Ac þe Brutons nadde so elene es neuere þer goet uerlore.  
 þe Saxons and þe Englyshe in þen halde þe  
 Ech kyng ys kynedom, þat hit hadde et in wo.  
 Syr kynges hit were some tyme, as of Kent, of Westsex,  
 Of Estangle, of Northomber, of þe Marche, of Essex.  
 In bygyrdyngs of þen boc me may rede, and nogt þis,  
 Hon muche lond ech of hem adde to ys partye.  
 þe berste kyng þat of Saxons was, was berst kyng of Kent  
 Hengyſt, þoru man þys lond berst now yſtad.  
 Hyt was 3 eygte & tysty ger after<sup>2</sup> Hengyſt's kynedom,  
 Ac eny kyng of Saxons in Westsex com.  
 For Hengyſt was kyng tousty ger, & in þe eygte gers  
 After ys þep at gernemouþe arnyed þer were  
 Myt kypnel of Saxons, yarmed wel y non,  
 Certyk het her cheuenteyn, þat to þys lond hem drou.  
 Wel ſene ger þer after, a Dac, (þat wyde was conþ,)  
 P clupes þort, myd ys off 4 atte hanene of þortefmop,

1. for *Ar.* 2. The Saxons *Ar.* 3. ribitt. yer after *Ar.*  
 4. Arnyed at the hanene *Ar.*



Had after þat, þat was ȝs name, þe haue me claped so.  
 So þat her poer euere war, þe Brutons flame to be,  
 Had monȝ a bataȝle hit smyte. So þat atten ende  
 þe Saxons woune of ȝs lond al þe þonȝ ende  
 Euere by Souþe Temese fram Est into West.  
 Certȝ hit made þer kȝng, þor he was þerto best.  
 Westȝ hit clapede ȝs kȝnedom, as ȝe abbyȝ rhurd ȝlome.  
 ȝs was a lute byuore ar kȝng Artur come.  
 þe berke kȝng of Norþomber in þe ȝer of grace byȝan  
 Wȝf hondred & seuene and fourty, <sup>1</sup> as me telle can.  
 After kȝng Artur ȝt was, and þo was Kȝnric  
 Noble kȝng of Westȝ, after ȝs ladyȝ Certȝ.  
 Alor þo þe Englyȝhe men adde in ȝs londe poer,  
 Hit worrede Norþward, and woune þer and ner.  
 So þat hit woune Nemberlond, & a noble bachȝler,  
 þat het Ede, hit made kȝng, þer nas naȝt þo ȝs per.  
 He come of Woden þe olde louerd, as <sup>2</sup> in teȝe kne,  
 þat þe <sup>3</sup> Saracens weneȝ, þat he a gret God be.  
 Alor þulke Woden, <sup>4</sup> þe grete louerd, sones adde þro,  
 Weldeg, and Wyȝtleg, and Weldeg þat was so fre.  
 Of Weldeg come þe kȝng of Kent, & þe kȝng of þe March of  
 þe oþer.  
 þe kȝng of Westȝ & of Nember of þe þrydde, þat was her  
 broþer.  
 þulke Woden adde a wȝf, þat ȝclaped was Dame fryȝe,  
<sup>1</sup> A Latȝn Dame Venus, as ȝchabbe ȝseyȝ non tȝȝe.

1. As þe wel telle can. 2. God he hadde be. This Woden. 3. In the teȝe ȝȝe, 4. In Latȝn. 5. Wȝsbiȝened poeple wende, a

1 her more þe Englyſſe clepede, after Woden, Wodnesday,  
 þat ys day in þe wonke, and, after frye, fryday.  
 Wor þe þeþene Englyſſe men, þat mys bylened were þo,  
 Bylenede, þat in þenene Godes hit were be,  
 And þat to tnepe ſterren, þat me ſuch plome  
 Venus and Mercurys, hit weneþ þat hit bycome.  
 þe Saxons and þe Englyſſe come in to þys londe,  
 As we ſeyþ, at otyne, as ych under ſtonde.  
 2 Her londes ſupþe, þo hit myȝte, hit delde as hit couþe,  
 þe Englyſſe þe Northhal, þe Saxons by Souþe,  
 As Eſſex and Wyddesſex, and Souþ ward al Souþſex,  
 And al Weſt by 3 North Cemeſe, al clene Weſtſex.  
 þe Englyſſe Northſholc & Souþſholc adde al in her hond,  
 And al Weſt by North Cemeſe, & al North Humberlond.  
 And þe kynges of Weſtſex lengoſt gonne dure,  
 And alle þe oþere wonne to hem, as ge ſolle her after yhere.  
 þe Brutons, as ychabbe ytold, in Weſt Walys were,  
 And worrede euere, as hit dorſte, fram gere to gere.  
 Wor by þe kynges daye Chenlyng, þat was Kenryke's ſone,  
 Hit dade hem berrore in þys londe, 4 þat hit were in wone,  
 And wonne þe myddel of þys lond to Bedeford anon,  
 And ſtrengþede caſteles and aſtoryde monyon.

---

1. The olde Saxones, after Woden, cleped Wodenesday, And, after dame frye, his wiſſ, me clepede the fryday  
 Ar. 2. Hure lond ſutthe by twixt hem hit delde as hit couthe, The Engliſſh in the Northhal, & the Saxones by

Southe. And nempned the contreys after hem, & leſte the names olde. As of Eſſaxones Eſſex, of Eſtenglifh Eſtangle, that is pit holde. The Brutons, as y haue told,  
 Ar. 3. F. Souþe. 4. Than hit was hure wone, Ar.

So

So þat at Bedesforde come þe Saxons,  
 And smyte an batayle, and to dryue þe Britons,  
 And nome þro of þer gode castles, þat stronge were also,  
 Eynesham, and Banbury, and Nilesbur þerte.  
 So þat Cristyndon was al cleue þer lore,  
 And hepeneth <sup>1</sup> in to al þys lond, as ych seyde bynere,  
 And yt laste aboute an fourty yer, forþe Seynt Austyn com,  
 And þoru Seyn Gregory þe pope brogte Cristendom.

**S**eynt Austyn wip þs felawes to Engelond com  
 þoru þe pope Seyn Gregory to prechy Cristendom.  
 Marrye was þo emperour, & þer adde ybe bynere  
 Nyfty emperours at Rome, <sup>2</sup> sayþe God was ybere.  
 In þe byf hundred yer of Graes Seynt Austyn hyder com  
 And four score yer and twe, to prechy Cristendom.  
 And aboute an hundred yer yt was, and fyfty al so,  
 After þat Saxons & Englyshe berst come þys lond to.  
 And after kyng Arture's deþe aboute an fourty yer  
 þat so noble kyng was of þys lond, as we abbeþ ytold er.  
 þo Seynt Austyn & þs felawes þus come to þys lond,  
<sup>3</sup> Wyppre was kyng of þe March, & <sup>4</sup> Adelstred of Hambers  
 lond;

Celryc was kyng of Westsax, & of Kent kyng <sup>5</sup> Hylbrygt.  
 And of Essex ys syfter son, þat us chapeþe kyng <sup>6</sup> Seborgt.  
 Wel an fourty holy men, and monkes <sup>7</sup> echone,  
 Seynt Austyn adde wip hym, & þo nas he nogt <sup>8</sup> one.

1. In to al this lond by-  
 gan to catche more, *Ar.*  
 2. In God *Ar.* 3. With *Ar.*  
 4. Deest in *Ar.* 5. Ethelbert

[1. Ethelbert] *Ar.* 6. Se-  
 bert *Ar.* 7. Each echone, *Ar.*  
 8. Al one *Ar.*

þo

þo hit come in to þys lond, to kyng ⁊ Hyldbrȳt of Kent,  
 In was lond hit arguede, hit sende her mandement,  
 þat hit mere fram þame ȝcome, in þey message ȝwys,  
 þat to gret sope holde turne, to hym and alle þys,  
 And to sope wythouten ende, ȝif þe hem under flode.  
 "Suche byheskes," quath þe kyng, "me þencheþ þeþ gods,  
 "Lateþ hem bynde mete ynou, ⁊ þat hit abbeþ neþe to,  
 "Forþe ȝchabbe wyþ hem ȝspeke, ⁊ wȝt wat hit woldeþ do.  
 For þe kyng wel vnderstod of þe Cristyndom,  
 þat by nore hem was in þys lond, ⁊ þoru hem to grounde com.  
 So þat atte lasse, (wat haik ȝt to telle longe ⁊)  
 þe kyng bygan and ȝs folc Cristendom anongs.  
 And of Seynte Peter ⁊ Seyn Paul an chyrtche þe lete rere  
 ⁊ In Est ende of Kanterbury, þat þe ⁊ cheþ chyrtche more.  
 Erchebyþop of Kanterbury Seynt Austyn was þer  
 þe verþ þat ener was, þor at London þe se was er.  
 þo com Mertyne's word to sope atte ende,  
 ⁊ þat þe bygne se to Kanterbury of London holde woude.  
 At Worcester, þat ȝs ⁊ toune in Kent of grette same,  
 Seynt Austyn made a byþop, Seyn Juste was ȝs name,  
 þat was a monch ȝs felawe. So þat atte ȝyn  
 ⁊ Syn Juste was þe borste byþop, after Seynt Austyn.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 1. Ethelbert <i>Ar.</i> 2. To<br>wite <i>Ar.</i> 3. In the Est <i>Ar.</i><br>4. Hed churches were <i>Ar.</i><br>sed alibi in eod. Codice (in quo<br>sane males, minus necessaria,<br>repetitiones) hed church were.<br>5. That the se of London to | Canterbury holde woude <i>Ar.</i><br>sed alibi the dignyte pro the<br>se. 6. A toune <i>Ar.</i> 7. Seynt<br>Juste was Erchebyþop made<br>after Seynt Austyne. Seynt<br>Mertyn <i>Ar.</i> |
|--|--|

Seyn

**S**eyn Wellyt þe holy mon in to Eßsex wende  
 To prechþ þer Crisþydom, as Seynt Austyn hym  
 sende.

Non departeþ : enere " Temese Eßsex fram Kent.

Sebrygt þe bond þer kyng, þe he was þader ywent.

He turnde hym to Crisþydom, and þe contreje al so.

Sebrygt and þe kyng of Kent, þe al þys was y do,

At Londone of Seyn Þoul an hened chyrche gonne rene,

þat gut ys, and Seyn Wellyt : bysþop made þere.

þus come, lo! Crisþendom agen in to þys lende

Among þe þeþene Saxons, as ych under stonde.

Ac among þe Britons in Walys was enere Crisþendom

Gupþe yt verþ þoru þe kyng Lucie hyder come.

And þat was þynore þulke tyme four hundred ȝer,

In aboute an four & twenty, as we abbeþ ymryte er.

þe pope Cleuþery, þat sende verþ hyder Crisþendom,

Was þe : pretteþe pope, þat after Seynte Peter com.

þe decyþles, þat he hyder sende, Crisþendom to brynge,

: Wyleneþe in a wyldernesle, after her prechynge,

þat me clepuþ nou Glasþynbury, þat desert was þe.

And þer hit bycome monkes, and nome to hem mo,

And þer myd her owe honde hit rerde hem verþ : anchpreþe

Of herbles, and of ȝerden, as hit couþe wurche.

- |                                    |                       |  |
|------------------------------------|-----------------------|--|
| 1. Deest <i>W.</i>                 | 2. Seburt <i>W.</i>   | tiquario pererudito contexto, &) non ita pridem à nobis edito, cui tit. <i>The History and Antiquities of Glasþonbury</i> , vide sis. 7. <i>Perdes</i> , <i>W.</i> |
| 3. Hit made bisþop there <i>W.</i> |                       |  |
| 4. xiii. <i>W.</i>                 | 5. By leste <i>W.</i> |  |
| 6. Cujus figuram cum alibi, tum    |                       |  |
| etiam in libro præclaro (ab An-    |                       |  |

And

And þat was þe verste churche, þat in Engelond come,  
 And þe aldest hous al so, as in lawe of Cristendom.  
 þerfore me yt aþ enere yclaped, þe olde chyrche, ywys.  
 Mony ys þe <sup>1</sup> holy halwe, þat þer y bured ys,  
<sup>2</sup> Four so mony in Engelonde, to soþe ych segge þys.  
<sup>3</sup> And, as me aþ wule ysed, grettore aþ non nys,  
 þan by þe olde chyrche of Glasstynbury, wo so dep of nome."  
 For þer was chyrche four hondred ger, ar Seynt Austyn þys  
 der come,

And Seyn Patryc was þer monck, & abbeþ suppe þer,  
 7e ar Seynt Austyn come mo þan an hondred ger.  
 And in rygt alf of þe wened ybured he was þer al so.  
 Six score ger and on he was old, ar dep hym come to.  
<sup>4</sup> þus was at Glasstynbury verst yholde by Cristendom,  
 And suppe non, after þat þet folc of Engylis hyder come,  
 And þe Brutons were ydryue al in to West Walys,  
 Hit helde borþ þer Cristendom, and byslopes ywes.  
 So þat, þe Seynt " Austyn com among hem, he bound  
 Byslopes and monckes mony on in þe lond.  
 In þe cyty of Bangor a gret hous þer was,  
 þat were under sene cellen, and þer of non nas

<p>1. God seynt, Ar. 2. Ro-          whar Ar. 3. And, as me by          olde dage seide, gretter oth          was [i. nas] holde, Than by          the olde church of Glasstyn-          bury ho so swery wolde Ar.          4. Thus alther furst at Gla-          stynbury sprong by Cristen-          dom, That suthe that Eng-          glissh men to this londe com,          That hethens were, the Brus          Vol. I.</p>	<p>tous dryue in to West Walis,          And ther hit hulde hure Chris-          tendom, that furst they toke          ywis. So that whan Seynt          Ar. 5. bit. celles, &amp; ther of          non ther nas, That ecc.          monckes nere inne othar mo.          And alle lyuede by hure          swynch, loke whare they be          now so. Dinoc het Ar.          G g</p>
--	---

þat

þat þre hundred monches ⁊ were tene, oþer mo.  
 And alle leude by þer suenche, loke gif hem nas wo.  
 Dynok het her abbed, þat gret clerc was and god.  
 Seynt Austyn was wel y payd, þat her bylue was so god.  
 And naþeles he hem en poynede ⁊ bocloppede do  
 To þe herchebyllop of Kanterbury, ⁊ to Englyſhe men also,  
 ⁊ And among Englyſhe men boþ myd hym Crisendom to  
 amende,

And wende aboute and prechy, as þe pope hem sende.  
 þe byllop hym answered, and þe abbed Dynok,  
 Al myd grette reſons and wyȝt of her boc,  
 þat man hit adde hem fulne erchebyllop and kyng,  
 Hit ne ſelde to Englyſhe men abus ryȝt noþyng.  
 For þe ſele of Englyſh ⁊ Saxons ⁊ her lond hem bynome,  
 And her hunde crytage, myd trayſon ⁊ luyke dome.  
 War boþ hit nolde for non man nanmore to hem wende,  
 þan to ſo many houndes, boþe yt were hem to ſende.  
 "Gif ge nolle," quap Seyn Austyn, "wyȝt goure breþeren in  
 peys be,

"þat beþ, as ge wyȝteþ wel, Cryſtyn as wel as ge;  
 "And gif ge nolle Englyſhe men Gode's laws teche,  
 "And boþ myd me among hem Crisendom preche,  
 "Goure ſon ſelle her poer ⁊ amoryȝ gon wyde reche,  
 "And byȝng gon to deþe manyon, ⁊ þat ſal be goure wreche.

1. Malin, nere, ut in 2. Obedience to do 3. And go with hym to Engliſh men, Crisendom to mende, And helpe hym preche amonges hem, as the pope hem ſende. The biſhopen hym	answered, 4. Hure lond hem hadde bynome With gile, and hure heritage with falſneſſe and treſone. Wherfor hit wolde 5. Among
---	---

After

After Seynt Austyne's daye to soþe com al þys,  
 Ac þe wile he was alȳus nogt, as ge mowe yhere ymȳs.

**K**ȳng ' Nylbrygt gret despyt adde in ys þogt,  
 þat þe Brutons wolde Seynt Austyn adue nogt.  
 ' Edelfred, þat was kȳng of Norþomberlond,  
 He entȳced and oþer kȳnges here of þys lond,  
 þat hit wende to Walys, and þe Brutons sende.  
 þe kȳnges, þo hit presse mere, myd goer þader wende.  
 At þe cȳty of Cayrleon þe Brutons oft þer was.  
 þe Englyshe anon þaderward drome myd god pas.  
 A gret bataȳle hit smȳte þer in a lute stounde.  
 Ac Brocmaȳl, duc of Brutons, was þer ybroght to grounde.  
 Her þe fien and býlenede ys folc, þo þe nuffe oþer wen,  
 Somme aflawe and somme ymouned, and by neþe echon.  
 Þou were þer y come fram Bangor monches monȳen,  
 In bakȳng and in orȳsons, to ' bydde agen þer son.  
 And ermytes and monthes of oþer ' Andes býsyde  
 Bede God, þat þe Brutons þe maykrye moste býtyde.  
 þo such folc of þys holpmen kȳng Elfred ysleȳ,  
 Sȳtte and ' bydde vor þer folc, and crȳe ' on God an heȳ,  
 And me seþe hym, þat hit ' bede vor þe Brutons echon:  
 "Gyf yt so ys," quap þe kȳng, "þat hit ' byddȳþ vor þe son,  
 "þanne býgȳþ hit agen vs, as muche as ys þer myȳte,  
 "Wȳd her armes to God, þeȳ hit myd ' arme us sȳȳte.

1. Ethelbert	Ar.	2. Elfrid,	for hure Brutones	Ar.	8.
Ar.	3. Praye	Ar.	4. Housles	Prayeth for onre son	Ar.
bispe.	And prayed to God	9. Armes	Ar.	sed alibi wepne	
the Brutones	Ar.	5. Praye	in eod. Codice.		
Ar.	6. To	Ar.	7. Prayed		

G g 2

"Slep



" Slep hem <sup>1</sup> þatfeliche anon, an sure pure son.  
 þat sale was <sup>2</sup> prest þer to, & to grounde slowe anon.  
 So þat twelf hundred holymen hit martrede þere,  
 And aboute an byty of scapede alyne vor fere.  
 þe was yt to hem ycome, þat Segut Buthyn hem leyde,  
 And next vor þan God dade wreche <sup>3</sup> of þe inþer dede.  
 For þe kyng Edelsted wende toward Bangor þe,  
 Werto destrue þe Brutons <sup>4</sup> wat þe founde ma.  
 þe <sup>5</sup> lamerbyngen, þat þer were, garhed hem anon,  
 And ordeynede þer oft, to segte agen þer son.  
 Ac Bledder dus of Cornwyle, and Cadwan of Walys,  
 And Margad anoþer duc, and þer poer al ymys,  
 And oþer Brutons þat þer were, smyte hem out anon,  
 And a batayle strong ynou smyte myd þer son.  
 So þat mo þan ten þousend were of Englysh ybrought to deþe,  
 And þe kyng <sup>6</sup> Edelsted was wounded, þat of scapede alyne  
     bunneþe.  
 Ac Bledder, duc of Cornwyle, aflawe was þe,  
 And mony of þe Brutons, <sup>7</sup> & of þe Englysh meþ ma.  
 And þe Englysh slowe ouer Humber vasse.  
 A parlement þe Brutons made <sup>8</sup> þe atte laste,  
 To chese hem anywe kyng, & chose þe duc Cadwan,  
 þat was among hem alle þe stalwordoste man.

---

1. Baldely a non, *Ar.* of the Brutones raide hem  
 2. Rede *Ar.* 3. Of thulke lu- anon, *Ar.* sed alibi garhede  
 ther dede. Forth went kyng pro raide in eod.Cod. 6. El-  
 Elfrid of Northumberlande frid *Ar.* 7. Ac of *Ar.* 8. Att  
 þho To Bangor, to destruye Chestre atte laste, *Ar.*  
*Ar.* 4. That *Ar.* 5. Lordes

þo þys kyng ycrownd was, hit <sup>1</sup> gacked hem anon,  
 And into Humberlond symede <sup>2</sup> by her son.  
 þe kyng <sup>3</sup> Edelstred & ys alf myð þe poer of ys londe  
 And of oþer londes <sup>4</sup> gare was, agen hem vorte stonde.  
 þe hit were to þys batayle gress in eyþer syde,  
 Some <sup>5</sup> frend hym byhogte bet, & bytneus hem goune ryde,  
 And made acord bytneus hem, þat þe kyng <sup>6</sup> adde al þat lond  
<sup>7</sup> Edelstred bygonde Humber, alclene in ys hond,  
 And kyng Cadwan by Souþe Humber, & ys owe lond Walys.  
 þoru hard of & god ofage yconfermed was al þys.  
 Bytneus þys ture kynges anon so gret lous þer was,  
 þat her noþer hadde no þyng, þat to oþere's wylle nas.  
 Bytneus þe kyng <sup>8</sup> Edelstred, and þe quene ys wyf,  
 þer after, þoru <sup>9</sup> inþer wylle, wax a gret stryf,  
 þat þe kyng hyre draf away, myð chyldre as heo was,  
 And nam hym an oþer wyf, and þat was a Delmol cas.  
 To þe kyng Cadwan þe quene wende þe,  
 And cryde on hym, þat he <sup>10</sup> scolde helpe hyre in yr wo.  
 þe kyng Cadwan was þe aboute, bytneus hyre & <sup>11</sup> kyng  
 To make acord by ys poer, and ne mygte þer noþyng.  
 So þat he hulde vorth þe quene in ys owe house,  
 Myð chyldre helples as heo was, myð þe quene ys owe spouse,  
 þat myð chyldre was as wel as heo, and of one tyme ney.  
 And þe þe chyldren were ybore, þat of <sup>12</sup> kunne were so heȝ,

---

1. Kassed hem *Mr.* 2. Up-  
 pon *Mr.* 3. Elfrid in his lode  
 with power of *Mr.* 4. Redy  
*Mr.* 5. Men *Mr.* 6. Shold  
 haue *Mr.* 7. Elfrid *Mr.* 8. El-  
 frid, *Mr.* 9. Puel will, *Mr.*  
 10. Wolde *Mr.* 11. The kyngs  
*Mr.* 12. Kyne *Mr.*

Hit clepede Edwyne þe kyng's sone of Northumberland,  
 And Cadwal þe kynges sone here of þyn Souþland.  
 þyn chyldren were wel gouge yland to Salomon, þe kyng  
 Of þe londe Brutayne, to gode noryfynge.  
 þe kyng hem noryfde wel, & myt hym grune ynou,  
 And þo hit to elde come, to armes hem drou.  
 So þat Salward : kyntes boþe hit bycome,  
 : And wel yfoudeb in armes, & in batailes y lome.

**E**lfryt kyng of Kent, þat þoru Seynt Andryu nom,  
 As we abbyþ ytel bynere, berst Cristendom,  
 Deyde as in þe ger of grace fyr hundred & fyrtyne,  
 And he was fyre and byttry ger kyng, as ych mene.  
 ys sone was kyng after hym, Edbald was ys name,  
 þat spoufde : saþþe ys fader wif, hym to grette name,  
 And ne tolde nort of ys Cristendom. And þe kyng Sebrigt  
 alle,

Crykyne kyng of Glou, þo he was of kyne yde,  
 Hys þre sonen he bylonede eys of ys kyndom,  
 þat were panys alle þre, and agen Cristkyndom.  
 So þat hit come at one tyme, in þer laþer rede,  
 To seynt Spellyt, bysop of þo land, & at ys masse hym leyde,  
 "Syre bysop, : we ne gyftt us of þyne wete brede,  
 "þat þou est þe hulf at þy masse, in þyne bayre wede,

1. Knightes *Ar.* 2. And a  
 laied in armes ofte were and  
 lome. Ethelbert kyng of Kent,  
 3. His owene fader wif,

4. Whi nelt þou yue us  
 of thulke white brede, That  
 thou cryst ech day in thyne  
 white wede, *Ar.*

"þat

"þat þou gene our : fader wyle, & gut gyft þat folc al for  
 "gyf ge : wolde," quap þe byſſop, "as : goure fader dade, do,  
 "And be ynolled in holy water, & myd Criftenom mongs,  
 "ge mome ſanſlyche þet holy þyng, as þe dade, anonge.  
 "We nollep nogt," quap þys oþer, "þer þou vs bade,  
 "Wyþynne þulke water come, for we nabbeþ non neþe,  
 "Ac in alle manere we wollep ete of þulke drede.  
 þe byſſop yt nolde grante, ac : outlych yt wyþ ſeyde  
 To gyue hym þulke holy þyng, bote hit y nolled.  
 Hyt ſnore anon in wrapþe, gyf þe enſentan nere,  
 To gyue hem ſo lute þyng, & bote þe yt hem gene,  
 þat þe ne ſholde in þer lond in non manere bylent,  
 Hyt dryue hym out of þer lond, & ys men echon.  
 þys holy man, ſeyn Wellyt, to þent wende anon,  
 To ſpeke wyþ þe erchebyſſop Laurence, and al to  
 Wyþ ynke, byſſop of Roucheſtre, wat were beſt to do.  
 Seynt Austyn non al by ys dape to erchybyſſop nom  
 Laurence, & made after hym to ſuſeyne Criftenom."  
 þys þre byſſopen bytweyne hem nom hem þus to rede,  
 þat hit mygte in þer owe lond holȳet ȳf lede,  
 And wyþoute : geryl ſykerere, þan to bylene þere  
 Among myn bylyuede men, bote þer enȳ bote were.  
 So þat ſeynt Auste & ſeynt Wellyt to France þe wende,  
 And lete þe luþer men : ymorþþe vorte God yt wolde amende.

1. faderes, & yt pines þe  
 And wepe alfor. 2. Wol-  
 leth, . 3. Oþer haneth, do,  
 We ſulled with colde water,  
 and the ſey a longe, Then  
 mome ye party of that bred  
 take oþer amongs. 4. Ote

terly. Vide ſupra, pag. 66.  
 5. Bina hac metra omittit.  
 6. Sterile ſtherer to be there  
 Than a mong heþene men,  
 ſort hit a mended were.  
 7. Worthy.

He

1 He nas nogt long þer after, aþ God wreche of þem nome,  
 þat, after her fader deþe, worrede Cristendom.  
 For agen þat folc of Weſſex hit nome an batayle,  
 And þere hit were ybrogt to grounde, & 2 yllend myþoute ſayle.  
 For her folc was muche aſlame, and ybrogt to deþe,  
 And hit, vor 3 her inþerþede, of ſcapede alyne vnnæpe.  
 Laurence, þe erchebiſſop, al preſt hym made alſo,  
 Herte woude out of þyn leud, as yn ſelawes adde ydo.  
 þe nygt, þat he 4 adde in mud bort abbe ywend amsorwe,  
 He laȝ muchedel of þe nygt in wo and in ſorwe,  
 To 5 hydde God vor haly chyrche and vor Cristendom.  
 So þat allep atte laſte vor werynyſſe hym nome.  
 Hejnt Peter to hym come, as þe ſlep hym toke,  
 And tormented hym ſore ynou, þat 6 hech lyne hym oke.  
 And 7 eþte of hym, wȝ he adde ſo byllyche yn ſlep vorſake,  
 Wyþoute warde, among þe wolnes, þat in warde hym werts  
 bytake 8

And wȝ of God, ne of hym, enſample he ne nom,  
 þat deȝde hope 9 in rode, to ſuſteynȝ Cristendom &  
 þyn erchebiſſop was adrad wellſore, þo he awok:  
 10 He hyede to þe kyng, vor ech lyne hym ok,  
 And ſlewed hym al þat cas, and yn wounden ſome,  
 And bed hym yn lyt amende, oþer bp hym ſaſt yt ſolde come.

1. But ſone ſel hit after  
 ward, that God wreche nom.  
 For they after here faderes  
 dethes werrede Cristendom  
 Ar. 2. Ghent Ar. 3. Here  
 latherneſſe, ſhapede Ar. 4.

Hadde mette to woude his  
 meȝ a morwe, Ar. 5. Þange  
 Ar. 6. Every lyne Ar.  
 7. Frede Ar. 8. On rode, to  
 ſane Ar. 9. And byne he  
 byed Ar.

þo

1 þe kyng anon for drede ys falle wif þor soke,  
 þat he huld in such hordom, and Cristendom toke.  
 And after Seyn Just & Seynt 2 Melliȝt þe tneȝe byschopes  
 sende,  
 So þat agen to þys lond þys gode men bope wende,  
 And hit of Rouchestre Seyn Just to her byslop 3 bayre toke,  
 Ac þe Londres Seyn Melliȝt 4 ac clauȝyche berloke,  
 5 Ac huld hem to her hebenesse, & in þys manere com  
 kyng Edbald, after ys fader, borth to Cristendom.  
 After Laurence's depe, as God gef þat cas,  
 Erchebyslop Seyn Melliȝt of Kanterbury was.  
 Erchebyslop he was byf ger, and after hym me nom  
 Seyn Just to erchebyslop, to lary Cristendom.

**C**adwal, 6 þe kynges sone, þat was of þys lond,  
 As ych seȝde er, & Edwyne of Northumberlond,  
 þat in Brutaȝne were, 7 hem hit goune wende,  
 After her 8 fader depe, 9 eyȝer in ys ende,  
 And anonge her crytage, and 10 louede hem wel bope  
 Witte bygynnynges wel ynou, & suppe somdel wrope."  
 For þe hit adde antwo ger ybe lourdes in her 11 londes,  
 Edwyne sende to Cadwal, þat hym wolde vnderstonde,

1. The kyng of Kent Edbald his false wif tho forsake, *r.* 2. Melliȝt in to France he sende, *r.* 3. Wyen toke, *r.* 4. *W. r.* Vide Bede Hist. Eccl. lib. II. cap. VI. 5. And *r.* 6. The kynges sone Cadwalan of this londe, And Edwyne kynges sone

Vol. I.

of Northumberlonde, *r.* 7. Homward goune *r.* 8. Londres *r.* 9. Wither to his ende *r.* & e regione, ab ead. manu, i. contre. 10. Louede to gedere & nogh, And after ward, as ye shal hurt, here lone clene a drogh *r.* 11. Londe *r.*  
 Hh And

And lefþe hym in yn ome land, þat he yronned were  
 As neruþ as he in yn, & as rygt was crowne bere.  
 ' King Cadwal now yn conseyd, & sende hym word so,  
 þat yn conseyd ne gef hym nogt, ne ensentede þerto,  
 þat in one kyngedom, þat of one crowne were,  
 þat yt were departed, & þat me tney's crowne bere.  
 Edwyne was wroþ þer þys, and swor ys more oþ,  
 To be yronned wyþoute hym, ' were hym no so loþ.  
 Cadwal swor yn oþ agen, gyt he crowne bere,  
 Herto smyte of ys heach vader ys crowne þere.  
 þus was stryf bytween þem, hit greeþed her heft vasse,  
 And by þorpe þomber ' mette hem atte laste.  
 Mony þousend þer were ybrought of Cadwal's men to Dose,  
 And he hym self wyþ þewe men of scapede alyne banneþe,  
 And slay hym dory in to þe see, al þer Scotland,  
 And so dory enere in to þe see, dorte he com to yrlond.  
 Edwyne wende þo anon out of ys ome land,  
 And destrude wyne aboute þat Cadwal addo an hende,  
 Alle ys stedes, þer and ner, and to grounde caste.  
 Cadwal in yrlonde ys oþ gathede vasse,  
 And dory towars þys land þe besyngonne.  
 He enere wanne he myd ys oþ to omy hawene com,

1. And when þat Cadwall-  
 hards þis, he send word þo  
 To Edwyne, þat he wolde ak-  
 sente þer to, And þat in on  
 londe, o kyngdom þat were,  
 Any parting so were mad,  
 þat me tmo crownes bere.  
 And seide, hit was a penyþ the

more of his faderes oþe.  
 For thi assente ther to, he  
 seide that he wolde. Edwyne  
 was tho wroth ynogh, and  
 swor his more oþ, *Ar.* 2.  
 Were hym neuere so loth. *Ar.*  
 3. They mette atte laste. *Ar.*

Edwýne was egen hym, and drof hym age.

So þat he ne myȝte arýne, ac huld hym in þe see.

Ac anchantour Edwýne adde of Spayne wif hym þo,

þat couþe hym segge of ys deden al þou yt sholde go

þoru ys chantagement, so þat Cadwal

þe duðe nahing, þat Edwýne þoru hym yt nuste al.

Cadwal nuste þo oþer rede, þate myð al ys mayne

shende to porchacy hym help to þe laste Brutaýne.

<sup>1</sup> Tempest hym drof in þe see here and þer baste,

So þat in þe yle of Berneseye hit arýned atte laste.

þo Cadwal com to reste, þer so gret deel he nome,

þat he adde so ys fele barlere, and ys kynedom,

þat he lay syke in ys bed þou deel and þer fore,

þat he ne ete non mete <sup>2</sup> þre dawns þer bore.

þe <sup>3</sup> verþe day to hanefon hym þegte ys herte deun,

Bryan, <sup>4</sup> ys owe þrine man, was þerof glad ynou.

þys home he nom, & segte a beß aboute mony a myle,

<sup>5</sup> And he ne myȝte, sholde he deye, wynde non in al þe yle.

Sery mas þys Bryan þo, <sup>6</sup> þat he non grace nadde,

for he hopede yt were yn lorde's hele, þou þe wylle þat he  
adde.

þe ne underþod of non oþer flesch, þat þe þing yknowe ne couþ  
þat yt nere non benefon, wanne yt were in ys monþe.

1. A tempest &c. 2. with  
&c. 3. b. &c. 4. That þrine  
with hym was, therof was  
glad ynogh &c. 5. But &c.  
6. For he no grace hadde.  
for he hopede his lorde's

hele, if he eny hadde. He þu-  
derþod of non other flesch,  
that he knowe couþe, That  
hit nere benefon, whan hit  
were in his monþe &c.



He byþogte hym of harde ynou, to abbe yn londer's lyl.  
 Al gret peca of ys owe þy he : herf out wyþ a knyf,  
 And helde þe : wounde, he mygte loke gyf he nas trome.  
 þe kyng he brogte yt wel yressed for benecoun neme.  
 þewe and beris yt was ynou, þe kyng ete þerof anon.  
 Hym þogte, þat so suete mete he ne ete neuere non,  
 þe so launery in ys mouþ, so þat he turnde to þele,  
 And hel was þe þrydde day, for þulke suete mele.  
 Hym longede after benecoun þer after longe fore,  
 Ac ner gade of þulke beste ne com in ys mouþ nanmore.  
 To þe lasse Brutayne wyþ ys seic þe he drou,  
 And of þe kyng Salomon was : ʒudernouge bayre ynou,  
 And bylenede wyþ hym alle wynter, borte after þe gere's  
 ende,  
 And grejþede þer poer hyder borte wende.

**Þ**ug Edmunde adde ywonne er alout the Brutons lond,  
 þore þan eny Englyſh kyng enere er adde an hond,  
 Al bygonde Seyn Dant, & al Walys al out.  
 By uore hym nas non Englyſh kyng so ryche ne so prout.  
 þepen man he was ywys, and to Cristendom  
 þoru archebyſſop of Euerwyk Seyn : þaulyn he com.

---

1. Kniff of *Ar.* 2. Wounde, | *Ar.* 3. Wudernom *Ar.* 4. And  
 whan he myghte loke wher | than homward a pen he cast  
 he nere trome. To the kyng | hym to wende *Ar.* 5. Sic.

Edwal

**C**adwal kyng þat ægte be of Brutons londe,  
 myð poer, þat kyng Salomon hym adde ytake an  
 hende,

(þat was ten þousend kynges,) & myð ys owe poer,

Wryneðe bysede Toteneys, and come sowlde ner.

In þe town of Eresire mony Brutons were,

And a luper kyng of þe Marche bysleged hem þer,

Penda, þat heþene was, under Edwýne þe kyng.

Cadwal, þo he wiste þys, ne made no taryng,

He smat to hym myð ys oð, & þer wýþouts sayle

At Eresire strong ynou hit smyts an batayle.

Penda þys heþene kyng was sone overcome,

And ys folc muche aflawe, & he hym sulf ynoue.

þo he in prisson was ydo, and oþer counþe ne yle,

He byhet Cadwal myð hym myð al ys poer be,

And þat he wolde bor hym þe bet kyng Edwýne overcome.

Of þys was sykernesse ydo, and oðages ynoue.

Penda garked ys poer, and Cadwal ek ys route

Of Brutons, þat bor defaute of help to sprad were wyde  
 aboute.

þo þys oð al gare was, borþward bakke hit drowe,

And in Norþhumberlond þat folc bakke hit slowe.

Kyng Edwýne adde al so in ys half gret poer

Agadered of Englyße kynges, & of ys owe ber & ner.

---

1. And other ne counþe by se, he by het Cadewalle with  
 hym for to be, And helpe that

Edwýne kyng wolde be oners  
 come Ar. 2. Made, Ar.

In to þe held of 1 Maducl ech of hem drow  
 Wyð her oð, & smyte þer an batayls strong y nou.  
 Kyng Gwynne was þer aflame, and 1 Ostryð ys soue aile,  
 And Godbold kyng of Orcadas, & her sole ney þerto.  
 And Cadwal was al adone, þe mule yt welde ylaste.  
 þe Englysh and þe Saxons þe slon þe wel bakke.  
 He ne sparede adde ne gong, ne 1 woman, ne chyld,  
 þat he ne slon, 4 manns þe bound. þe was noþing myld.  
 Wooper batayls slappe þe smet 1 agen Ostryð strong y nou,  
 þat kyng was after Gwynne, & þer 4 he hym slon,  
 And ys trespere nouens, þat after hym kynges folde be,  
 And Cadan kyng of Scotland, yllawe hit were alle þer.  
 1 Eufryð, Gwynne's wooper, þe he 1 þys we aboute,  
 To Cadwal he mende, & mercy cryde vor dente.  
 Cadwal hym, & twelf þousand þat myld hym com, slon.  
 þys ger was among hem of feble grace y nou.  
 And þat was of hem into harm. vor after þer Cristendom  
 And to þeþenelle hit munde agen. & þus such wreche hem  
 noue.  
 Kyng Cadwal and þe Westons þer wyde adde aile,  
 And stured hem among her son, þat hem adde er flane ydo.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| <p>1. Bedefeld <i>Ar.</i> 2. Ostryð<br/> <i>Ar.</i> 3. Wommen with childe,<br/> <i>Ar.</i> 4. When he hem soude,<br/> &amp; was no þyng mylde <i>Ar.</i><br/> 5. With <i>Ar.</i> 6. He tho hym<br/> <i>Ar.</i> 7. Confrid <i>Ar.</i> &amp; in ora<br/> Codicis, &amp; regione huius carmi-<br/> nis, Confrid kyng of Were-<br/> wylens, idque equidem ab ea-<br/> dem manu. Infra autem in hoc</p> | <p>Codice Eufryde scribitur.<br/> 8. This wogh, forto haue<br/> mercy to Cadwal he drogh.<br/> And he of hym no mercy haue<br/> wolde tho. But hym xii. þou-<br/> send men he let to dethe so.<br/> Mytel force hit was of hem.<br/> for after hure Cristendom To<br/> hethenelle hit tournde a ye.<br/> for thy God wrech nom <i>Ar.</i><br/> Seyn</p> |
|--|---|

**S**eyn Oswald, Centrys broþer, kyng was ymað þu  
Of al Norþemberlond, among al þys me,  
þat helþen was a god, þe butere ys grace was.

And kyng Cadwal to hym to sturne bort was.

þys was in þe ȝer of grace fyr hundred ȝer ymys.

And aboute an foure a þrytty, þat ydo was al þys.

**S**eyn Þyrn þe bysop at holy man was,  
þat in to þys lond þoru þe pope Honorý ylend was.  
To turne kyng of Wesseles kyngþis to Cristendom,  
And þat lond of Wesseles, in to þys lond he com.

Seyn Þyrn hym to Cristendom twende þoru Gode's grace,

And, as God wolde, Seyn Oswald was in þatke place;

And of holy bantison þys grette kyng nome,

And ys godfader was in ys Cristendom.

Seyn Oswald and þys oþer kyng, þoru be Louerde's grace,

Þorneȝde Seyn Þyrn to ys wylle an place,

þat Dorchester ys yclapad, þat bysops Orenford ys,

Is in þe Est Souþ, an fene myle y wys.

þer Seyn Þyrn bysop was, þe werke þat was ymys.

Uor þe sce was þer of bysop þe, þat at Lyncolne non ys:

þer he deȝde, a þer he lay vorte in þe þerafter long

þat he was to Wynchestre ylad, an 2 ys ȝut beyre among.

1. That Dorchester me cle-  
path by the Orenford, That  
is Southward by the water  
of Themsle bi. myle thenne  
y was. Seynt Beryn bisshop  
there was the furke that there  
come, And after oþer bis-  
shopen hure se at Lyncoln  
noms. Berin deȝde at Dore-  
chestre, a lay ther til longe.  
To Wynchestre were his  
bones lad suthe, a fure a  
longe. 2. Id est, being ho-  
nourably receyved in that  
place

place where he is yet. At de Birino, pariter atque de Dorcestria, lectu dignissima sunt hæc quæ sequuntur, è Ranulphi Higdeni Polychronico (à Joanne Trevisa Anglice verso) Londini edito A.D. M.D.XXVII. à nobis exscripta. Sic nimirum illic, l.v. c. XIII. **Saynte Byrnnus the confessor was sent of Honorius the pope for to preche to Englyshemen. And whyle Byrnnus layled in the see of Brytaine | he bethoughte on his restellis** [pullulam intelligit (sibi à papa Honorio donatam) super quam corpus Christi consecrabat, corpusque Dominicam in eadem involutum, quod collo suspensum semper secum portabat, inter sacrandum super sanctum altare ponere consueverat, ut ait Joannes Bromton, chron. col. 755.] **that he had foryete in the haven | and yede upon the see & sette his restellis.** ¶ *Beda libro sexto: capitulo sexto.* **This Byrnnus converted Kyngilfus kyng of Westsaxons | and crystened hym at cyte Dortyk | that is Dorchester. There was kyng Oswalde present and was Kyngilfus godfader | and wedded his doughter afterwarde. And bothe the kynges gaue that cyte for to ordeyne there a bysshops see. And there Byrnnus deyed after the. xliii. yere. of his**

Annograciz 636.  
Heraclii imp. 26.

bysshoprych and was beried there. But at last by Bedde bysshop of Wyndchester Byrnnus was translated to Wyndchester in to the chyrche of saynt Peter and Paul. ¶ R. But the chanons of Dorchester saye naye | and saye that it was another body than saynt Byrnnus body that was so translated. Therefore a byer of a wonder werke is yet seen [scripsit A. D. M.CCC.XLII. Edwardi tertii XVI.] at Dorchester aboue the place of his fyrst graue. That Cyte Dortyk or Dortinga that now is called Dorchester is vii. myle bi south Orenforde sette bytwene two ryuers of Tame and of Temse. Also it is founde in cronycles that kyng Kyngilfus assigned all the land seven myle for to make a bysshops see in Wyndchester | and for the sustenance of the mynysters. And for the kyng was lette by his dethe enyl that he myght not fulfyll it. He swore that his sone Kenwalens shoulde fulfyll it afterwarde. ¶ Wilhelmus de pon. libro secundo. The Cytee Dorchester longed to the bisshops of Mercia fra that tyme unto the comynge of the Normans. But in William conquerours tyme the bysshops see was chaunged unto Exceolne.

Cadwal

Cadwal kyng of Brutons worrede euere baste  
 And Penda by Seyn Oswald, vorte suppe atte laste  
 þat at þe toun of Wernefeld by Norþe bape hit come  
 Seyn Oswald and þe duc Penda, and batayle nome.  
 Penda þer þe inþer duc in batayle slou  
 And martrede Seyn Oswald, & al þs body to droun :  
 And mony þousend of þs men aflawe ek þer were.  
 þys was of þe ȝer of grace in ȝy hundred ȝere  
 And four hundred. þor Seyn Oswald : in þe ȝer kyng was,  
 And of eyȝte & þrytty ȝer old, þo hym bel þys cas.



Swy, Seynt<sup>2</sup> Oswald broþer, kyng y mad was þo.

He byþogte hym of pes, to lȳbbe wyþout wo.

He acordeþe wyþ kyng Cadwal, & trefour hym ȝet  
 ynou,

Alto be ys pryue frend, wyþout worre and won.

þe fourme of pes was baste ymad by tuene hem there,  
 þat ne myȝte nogt wel ybroke be, bote treuþe ylore were.

Ac Penda : heþen duc adde euere god wyle

To worre hym, & do hym flame, & þogte in ys herte skille.

Ac he ne dorste þor Cadwal, : ac napeles atten ende

To þe kyng at ys parlement to London he gan wende,

And alle dukes of Bruteyne, & þe Englyſe kynges echone

Acome were to þys parlement, bote kyng Oswy one.

1. Lege ex *Ar.* 1r. ȝer pro  
 in þe ȝer. 2. Oswalde's *Ar.*  
 3. The hethene *Ar.* 4. If he  
 hit myȝhte fulfille *Ar.* 5. But  
 so fel atten ende, That Cade-

wal to his Parlement to Lons  
 don gan wende, And all the  
 dukes *Ar.* 6. Sane the kyng  
 Oswy of Northumberland  
 al one *Ar.*

Vol. I.

I i

Penda

Þenda aþhede þe kȳng anon, mȳ kȳng Oſwȳ nere þer ⁊  
 þe kȳng ſeyde, he vnderſtoð, þat he ſyk were.  
 "Syr," quap þe oþer, "to ſoþe, yt nȳs noþȳng ſo,  
 "Ac þe gadereþ baþe ys poer, vs ſlame to do,  
 "And þe aþ yſend biȳgonde ſee after Saxons mo,  
 "And wole awreke ys broþer deþ, he ſuerþ, on vs tuo.  
 "þernore ȝyf me mȳð poer leue þader wende,  
 "And bryng hȳm to ſlame ⁊ byneþe, er þan þe vs ſlende.  
 To breke ys trewe couenant, þe kȳng was loþ þerto,  
 And napeles ys conſeyl hȳm ȝef, þat he moſte yt nede do.  
 þo þenda ys leue adde, he nome poer y nou,  
 And toward ys kȳng Oſwȳ ouer Humber drou,  
 And barnde baþe and robbede, and to grounde ſlou.  
 þe kȳng Oſwȳ hȳm let eſſe, mȳ he dunde hȳm ſo wou,  
 And bed hȳm, þor Gode's loue, hadde of hȳm reuþe,  
 And of ys lond, ⁊ þenche bet on borewarde ⁊ on treuþe.  
 þo þenda nolde oþer, þe oþer aȝen hȳm ſette,  
 And dunde hȳm al in Gode's grace, ⁊ mȳð ys oſt hȳm mette,  
 And an batayle ſmyte ſtrong ynou, ⁊ þoru Gode's grace  
 ⁊ kȳng Oſwȳ ⁊ þe Criſtȳn men bylenede þe place.  
 For þenda, þe heþene Duc, aſlawe was þere  
 And þryttȳ oþer dukus, þat mȳð hȳm alſo were.

1. For thy let me haue leue place to king Oſwȳ, niſi for-  
 thader forto wende, And lette than and the Criſtȳn men  
 hȳm of his purpoſ. er he vs malis ex *m.* ut bylenede pas-  
 alle a ſlende *m.* 2. Kȳng ſive ſumatur, ſc. to king Oſwȳ  
 Oſwȳ and his Criſtȳn men and the Chriſtian men the  
 that day hadde the place *m.* place was left. Poſſem & alia  
 3. F. þe heþen men, ut ſenſus notare, ſed non eſt tanti.  
 ſit, the heathen men left the

Syr

Syr hondred yer of grace yt was, & in þe 1 bytyþe gere,  
 þer 2 byget þenda late Cristynmen vorto asere.  
 þo Cadwal, kyng of Brutons, noblyche adde ynou  
 ybe kyng eygte and fourty ger, and to elde drou,  
 þe deyde after Martynmasse 3 rygt þen syxte day.  
 þe Brutons made deol y nou, þo þe ded laȝ,  
 4 And made kynges fourme of bras al hoin wrytune,  
 Wpe an hors ryde of bras, & þat body dode þerynne,  
 And wpe 5 þe West gate of Londone sette hyt 6 wel heȝe  
 In sygne of ys nobleye, þat men wel wryde yseȝe.  
 An þe syxte þer of þe Saxons aferde.  
 An chyrche of Seyn Martyn þer by neþe hit rerde,"  
 War ynne me wolde Gode's seruyse do,  
 And syngre wor ys soule, and wor alle Cristyne al so.

6 **C**adwallad ys sone was 7 þerafter ymad kyng,  
 Jong 8 bacheler and stalward atte 9 by gynnyng,  
 And þoru out wel muste ys lond, & sauede þe Brutons  
 Dryflyche 10 al an tuelf ger agen 11 Saxons.  
 Ac þo bel þe in syknefs and sorwe wpen oþer,  
 þe Brutons sogte her and þer ech agen oþer,

<p>1. xv. yere, <i>Ar.</i> 2. Wy gate  <i>Ar.</i> 3. Cuene the sixte day  <i>Ar.</i> 4. Hit made a kynges  fourme, and hym al hol with  ynne Upon a hors rydyng of  bras putte al with gynne,  And wpon <i>Ar.</i> 5. ful hegh  In tokne of his noblesse, that  me hit fer segh. And that the  sight ther of the Saxones</p>	<p>holde a fere, A church of  Seynt Martyn þe neþe hit  lete rere, <i>Ar.</i> 6. Cadwalla-  dre <i>Ar.</i> &amp; sic infra. 7. After  hym mad <i>Ar.</i> 8. Staleworth  bacheler &amp; noble in alle thyng,  And &amp;c. <i>Ar.</i> 9. L. by gynnyng.  10. fully xii. <i>Ar.</i> 11. The  Saxones <i>Ar.</i></p>
--	--



And lere, as we seyn, grace of God, & þat he gaf hem sarme.  
 For he sende hem so muche hunger & luper geres arowe,  
 ' þat þyn folc was ney metelen, bote wo so couþe myð gynnne,  
 Oþer myð bote and armen, eny wylde best mynne.  
 So gret qualm com ek among men, þat hit, þat were alyne,  
 He mygte noght al burye þat folc, þat deyde so ryne.  
 Hol of sykneke, and of qualm, and forme þyn lond was þe,  
 Of hunger, and of vaele geres, þou mygte be more we &  
 ' þet folc gret compayne & oþer myð wep & sorwe y nou,  
 Wanne hit mygte sleppen abbe, in to oþer londes drou.  
 þe kyng ' hym " let ek in forme and in sykneke lede  
 Toward þe laste Brutayne, & þyn desuol playnte seyde :  
 " ' Wey ! wey ! we synuol men, alas ! oure wrecchede,  
 " þat we abbyþ þus God agult myð many synuol dede  
 " We and oure elderne ek, þe wreche ych vnderstonde  
 " þat þus wrecchedlyche nou þus dryfþ out of oure hande  
 londe,  
 " þat Romeyns " ne mygte myð batayle neuere do,  
 " He Scottes, ne ' þycars, ne þe Saxons þerto.  
 " Nou we beþ, þoru wreche of God, bot oure synuol dede,  
 " Dryue out al clene, wyþ out hope, wyþ forme & ' wreche.

1. That the peple hadde no mete, but they with any gynnne Wilde bestes, or fowell, or fish myght wyne. Such pe-  
 silence cam also, that hit, that were alyne, The dede myghte bannethe burpe, they deide so plyne Ar. 2. The folc with grete compayne in care and forme y nou, Ar. 3. Hym self Ar. 4. Alas ! he seyde, and

welaway ! whi couthe we noght blyne, While that we tyme hadde, oure lyf to lede in synne, Thurgh which we shal nogh al clene be dryue out of londe, And al hit is þorgh wreche of Gode's owne honde & That the Ro-  
 maynes Ar. 5. Wines, Ar. 6. L. wrecchede.

1. Wey

"1. **W**or dægt we abbeþ so ofte by þem ýwonne þat lond,  
 "2. **W**anne God nel nogt, þat ýt do lengore in oure hond.  
 "3. **W**or þe soþuast God, þo he ýle, þat we wolde, wor noþþng,  
 "4. **F**ram oure synne vs wýþ drawe, ne þat non prince, 2 ne,  
 "5. **H**e mygte brýnge vs out of þe lond, he, þat mygtuel ýs,  
 "6. **D**eþe after oure deserte, and 4 pulte vs out ýwýs.  
 "7. **C**omeþ nou agen ge Romeýns, and ge Scottes al so,  
 "8. **P**ýcars, and Saxons, and Englýs þer to,"  
 "þat so muche abbeþ despyred 6 þat lond, ge mowe yt fynde  
 nouþe  
 "9. **W**i bar wýþ out defense, býnorþe and eke býlonþe,  
 "10. **A**nd al þat þoru wreche of God, 8 nogt goure poer nogt ý do,  
 "11. **(W**or al þe poer, þat ge alle adde, ne mygte yt bringe þerto,)  
 "12. **A**c þoru þe mygte of Ihesu Críft we beþ ýbrogt to grounde,  
 "þat we wrapped enere mo, and nou we abbeþ ýfounde.  
 "13. **W**as! þat by myne daye lach wreche wolde come,  
 "þat ý nadde ýbe ded bore, bote God adde þe soule ý nome.  
 þe Deol ne may non tonge telle, þat þe kýng to hym nome,  
 So þat to þe lasse Brutayne myd þýs sorwe he com,  
 To, þe kýnge's neuen Salomon, Aleyn, þat kýng was þo,  
 And bayre of hym was underbonge in ýs muchele wo."

1. In ydel we haue so ofte  
 recovered of hem oure lond,  
 When God nele, that we len-  
 gor haue hit in our hond. 2.  
 Adde kýng cum. 3. Doth  
 4. Putteth. 5. Pites,  
 and Englysh, and Danes al-  
 so, 6. This. 7. And  
 when ye haue hit, seye ye  
 ne may, ye haue it vs out pylit

Thurch your strengthe, but  
 hit is thurgh oure owene gylt.  
 Deol he made gret y nogh,  
 so that his wey he nom To-  
 ward the lasse Brutayne, and  
 thuder sone he com To kýng  
 Salomons sone Aleyn, that  
 tho was, And saire of hym  
 was underfonge, as sei in  
 this cas.

þo

þo þe Brutons þerafter were al as out of munde,  
 After ſoþe þe Saxons ſende of her künde,  
 To come & wonye in þys lond, þat noman agen hem nas,  
 And þat þet lond to her wyll al bar agen hem mas.  
 þo þys ſtrangemen hurde þys, ynou of ſoþe hit name,  
 Of men and of wýmmen ek, and to þys lond come.  
 Thon from Cornwyle to Northamberlond,  
 ' Wote yt were of gernal, al bar hit ſounde þat lond.  
 þe gernal ouer Seuerne ſen þat þer was þo,  
 And byleneþe boþ in Walys in ſorwe and in wo.  
 ' We longe her afterwarþ þo yt com to amendement,  
 And bote of þonger & of qualm be Louerd adde yſand,  
 Som help of þe kyng Aleyn kyng Cadwallad byſogte,  
 And þat he in to ys künde lond þoru ys help hym brogte."  
 þe kyng hym grantede anon, and as hit were aboute,  
 Gyþer in ys half, to gadery gret oft and gret route,  
 To kyng Cadwallad an angel ' anyſpon brogte  
 fram heuene, and bad hym wyþdrawe of þat he þogte.  
 For yt nas Gode's wýlle, þat of þe Brutons ' kunne  
 Regneþe more in Engeland, and al uor her ſunne.  
 And namelyche ar þulke tyme þat ys in prophete  
 Merlyn ſeyde to Arture, þat nolde noþyng lye.

- 
1. L. bote. Nam bute in *as*.  
 2. Afterwardes whan hit ſei, as God gaf the grace, That alle theſe meſchenes gonne ouerpace, And the peple in Walys ſtrengthed ſumwhat were, Cadewaldre hym by thought in this ilke manere, That the ſpune of his peple

waſh was clen. To Aleyn kyng of Brutayne he gaf his mone mene, And in alle manere wiſe his help hym by ſoght, That thurgh hym in to his Reaume he myght be broght *as*. 3. Tydyng *as*. 4. Wynne *as*.

For

Ther he seyde, þat þe Brutens me sholde gyt yley  
 Wyne her rygte kyndom, ac yt sholde arif long be.  
 Wanne þe relyphes of halemen yfounde were & yhad,  
 þat þor drede of Saxons wyde were yhad.  
 To Hergý þe pope, þat þo was, to Rome he bed hym wende,  
 And so þer ys penance, þat God hym wolde sende,  
 And bylene al erþlych þogt, þen denel borto sende,  
 And he sholde among holymen ' to heuene " atten ende.  
 þe kyng þys answon, þat þe angel hym seyde,  
 þe oþer tolde princelyche, hym þerof to rede.  
 þe kyng Aleyn let þo anon in ys bokes aspye,  
 Boþe of Sybyle þe sage, and of Merlyne's prophecye;  
 Were hit to ys answyon acorded in ech þyng;  
 And so he bound, þat bytuene hem nas non dyscordyng.  
 He radde þe kyng Cadwallad, to þenche nanmore  
 Of ' Engelond, ac so al out þe angele's lore,  
 And wende to Rome, ' holy lys to lede.  
 þe kyng Cadwallad vnde al out, þat þe angel he hym bede,  
 And at Rome was of þe pope bayre ' vnder vonge,  
 And in penance and holy lys lyeuende þere longe,  
 ' And in etteþe day of Queryl out of þys worl he wende  
 To þe soye of Heuene, as God after hym sende.  
 ' Wyt was sene hundred ger bote on ger lasse vnnepþe,  
 After þat God anerþe com, þat þys kyng com þus to deþe.

1. Be nombred A. 2. Brutens  
 tapne, but so after the A.  
 3. Ther holy A. 4. A songe,  
 A. 5. The xix. day of A.  
 pril A. 6. Six hundred yer

and foure skor, and ther to  
 eyghhtene, Wit was þat our  
 Lord bore was y wene. The  
 English A.

þe

þe Englyſſe" and þe Saxons, þat alouȝ þo were,  
 Grete townes and caſtles bygounne bulde and rere,  
 þat hit hadde er ycaſt aboun, & leuerdes were al þo,  
 And þe Brutons cleue al out myȝd ſorme & myȝd wo,  
 And lere þo boþe al cleue, name and eke lond.  
 For þat was Britayne ycluped er, me claped nou Engelond.  
 þo þeme were of þem byleued, as in Cornwale & Walys.  
 Brutons nere nanmore ycluped, ac Waleys ymȝs.  
 After Walon, þat was þer a Duc, hit hadde vorst þe name,  
 And ne myȝte neuer efter þys lond keuere, at lyþeþ myȝd alle  
 flame,

a Bote hit þas myȝd ſcolkyng be þe Englyſſe wende,  
 And doþ enȝ ſhec ſeþle gnon, and abbeþ þe worſe ende.  
 Ac, (as þe angel ſeyde er, and Merlyn ek by note,)  
 Hit ſolleþ honory muche lond, þat hit abbeþ ylore;  
 Al Walys and al þe March, and al myȝdel lond ymȝs,  
 þat ys, al þat bytuene Temele and Pomber ys,  
 Al Ek toward Londone, & þat me ſhal gut yſey.  
 At þe Gode's wylle yt ys, manne yt ſhal be.  
 Here we Englyſſe men mowe yſe ſone,  
 Myȝd muche rygȝte we beþ to þys londe ycome.  
 Ac þe wrecche Englyſſe men beþ of þe olde a more;  
 In muche manere, ge abbeþ y hard, þou hit yt abbeþ y lere.  
 Ac þe ſeþle ys euere byneþe. þor hit, þat abbeþ myȝte,  
 Myȝd ſtrengȝe bryngȝe ofte þat wowe to þe rygȝte.

1. Gwalo, *Ar.* 2. Prince, tek and ſtriȝ, and hadde the  
*Ar.* 3. And ofte tyme in worſe ende *Ar.* 4. Subintellig, Brittain.  
 they wende, And made cons

**P** In Britayne was þus yfere, and þe lande's name  
 To þe name of Engeland yturnd, to gret fame,  
 Sene kynges hit adde longe, as þe kyng of Wester,  
 Of Kent, of Humberland, of Wit Angia, of Souþer,  
 Of þe March, of Wester, & of alle þen echen  
 While þen were kynges, þat nouþ ys bete ene.  
 For ech hygan to werry by oþer, and oþeren landes byneme,  
 And hit of Denemarch among hem, werte alle to ens come.  
 þe kynges of Wester adde þe ener bond,  
 So þat attelaste hit wouns alle þe oþeren lond.  
 Ac Souþer ne last noȝt longe, ne Wester : naþe mo.  
 þe kyng of Wester tene þow man, bete wyne þer nove þe :  
 þe kyndom of þe March ylaste long and wol ynow,  
 Forþe þe kunds kyng seyn Kenelm in martredom me slog.  
 Kyng Kenelm ys fader godman was, þat þe þeng of Wyrtches  
 cunbe  
 Herde boð, and þer lyy hym sunk in a tombe.  
 þe theyn Kenelm ymartred was, ys quile : *Geornlic*  
 Kyng was after hym ymakod, þe kynges broþer ðornulf.  
 He nas kyng bete ou ȝar, ar an ðornulf com,  
 And þow strengþ hym caks out of ys þendom.

**E** Gbrygt & was kyng y mad, as oþer þenore hym werc,  
 Of Wester in þe ȝer of grace eyȝte hundred ȝer.

1. Alle thes echen *Whille* | *Ar. oratione solata concepta.*  
 were of kynges, *Ar.* 2. *He* | In quo tamen Codice desunt  
 the mo *Ar.* 3. *Sive, Cæolulph.* | cuncta metra usque ad Edwardi,  
 4. *Perplura hinc occurrunt in Cod.* | Ælfredi Magni filii, regnum.

By þis daye Seyn Keneles to Depe ybrygt was,  
 þe kynedom was þerafter late, þor wrecche of þat cas.  
 Hor Bernulf, of þan we tolde, nogt þre ger kyng nas  
 Be Egbrygt, kyng of Westsex, made hym seke pas.  
 Hor an batayle at Glendone hit smyte myð her oft,  
 þe kyng Bernulf was þere byneþe, & bynome al þis boht,  
 And þis folc muche aflawe, & he slen wip muche wo.  
 In kyng Egbrygt's poer þis kynedom was þe.  
 Eygte hundred ger & tenty, & fyrte þer to,  
 As in þe ger of grace þis batayle was ydo.  
 þe kyng of Westsex her after adde al þe kynedom  
 Of þe March, oþer eche ger truage of hem nom.  
 In Egbrygt's kynedom four and tenty þe ger  
 Hyt was, ar þis batayle at Glendone were.  
 Bernulf suppe in Est Angles þoru men of lond,  
 And þoru Egbrygt's poer, was aflawe, ych vnderfonde.  
 And þat folc of Est Angles vnderuðnge þere  
 Kyng Egbrygt to þer soueryn, & seruage hym bere.  
 Kyng Egbrygt was þo prout þor þis segnorye.  
 Fulwolf, þis sone, he sende myð bayre bachelerse  
 To wyne Kent, & Estsex, & Soþereye, myð maystrye.  
 To þe lond of Kent hit wende borst myð her chynalerse.  
 Kent hit wende tymelyche, and Balred þe kyng  
 Slen ouer Comels, and byleneþe þis owe þyng.  
 Estsex and Souþsex, and Soþereye al so  
 Hit wenne, ar hit come agen; & þo al þis was ydo,  
 Egbrygt, kyng of Westsex, al þis to hym nom,  
 Hi to be vnder hym, and vnder þis kynedom.

- Al þat lond bysounþe clene he adde al so  
 Under hym, oþer in ys hond. wýnne he þoghte mo.  
 Aȝen hem of Norþhumberlond myþ oft he com at Deyre,  
 Ht̃ dūde hym a non her manþede, & ne conteked namore.  
 Þe kȳng Egbrygt adde ybe kȳng þre and þryttȳ ger,  
 Þet ſolc of Denemarch hyder com, as yt adde y do er.  
 Slepeþe ht̃ robbede vorſt, and ſuppe oþer mo.  
 Ac þe kȳng Egbrygt hem drof aȝen, at ht̃ dūde to manche mo.  
 Þo kȳng Egbrygt adde kȳng ybe ſenene & þryttȳ ger,  
 He deýde as a noble man, at ys londes he deýde er.  
 Welwolf, ys eldeſte ſone, he gef þo al Weſſex,  
 þat was as ys erytage. and ſuppe al Souþſex  
 Hys ſongore ſone Þelſton he gef, and þe kȳnedom  
 Of Kent and of Eſſex, þat of ys porchas com.  
 Hȳt was eygte hondred ger, and nyne þryttȳ þerte,  
 As in þe ger of grace, þat he deýde ſo.

1. Meminerunt etiam Annales Saxonici, sub anno DCCCXXVII. And se Ecgbryht læbbe fýrþe to Dope wíð Norðan- hýmbre. 7 hý hým þær eaþ- mebo budon. 7 ȝ-þwærre. Ejuſdem quoque mentionem habemus apud Florentium Wigornienſem. Id quod item monuit doctiſſimus Gibſon, qui porro innuit, locum hunc in agro fuiſſe Eboracenſi, licet plane incertum ſit quonam hodieſo vocetur nomine. Quidni autem quis cenſeat, ipſum fuiſſe Dura- ham? Quo minus ita putemus, nihil quidem obſtat in Annali-

bus Saxoniciſ, è quibus diſciſmus, Ecgbryhtum primùm ſubjugaffe Merciorum regnum, & totum quod fuit ab Auſtrali parte Hum- bri, deinde moviſſe ultra Hum- bri flumen, in ipſum, ut videtur, Deirorum agrum. Et tamen fa- teor, hanc ſententiam minime convenire cum Florentio, locum longe minoris notæ quam Du- nelmum fuiſſe aperte indicante, ſuoque itidem tempore Dora nomine veniſſe ſignificante. Quomodocunque ſit, in partibus ultra Humbrum fuiſſe ſane ex- iſtimarim.

K k a

Of



**I**f þe batailles of Denemarch, þat hit dade in þis land  
 þat moost werte of this oþer, we most adde an honde.  
 Wost hit were, we oþer wode samenne ȝe,  
 As Romeyns & Saxons, & hel wode þat lond þere.  
 Ac hit us kepte yt holde noght, bote robbery, and deade,  
 And destrue, & berne, & hit, & ne tene adde non end.  
 And bote into yt was worþ, þe y hit were durtoute yland.  
 Alor myd tȝepes and gett poer us prest effons hit cōde.  
 Kyng Doctwyl of þis land kyng was tucaty ger.  
 þe Deney's come by hym rywor þan hit dade er.  
 Alor in þe al out wost gett of ys kynedom  
 Myd þre & þerity tȝepes men her prince hyder cōde,  
 And at Souþhamton arȝede, an hanene by Souþe.  
 Anoper gett eft þurh tȝere arȝede at Wottenshampe.  
 þe kyng nuste weper kepe, ut wile ys eft amo.  
 þe Denes adde þe maystre. þo al was yde,  
 And by Changle & Lyndeseye hit wende borp atte liff,  
 And so hamward al by Kent, & slowe & barnde baste.  
 Aȝen wynter hit wende hem. anoper ger eft hit come,  
 And destrude Kent al out, and Londone neme.  
 þus al an ten ger þat lond hit broȝte þer doune,  
 So þat in þe tepe ger of þe kynges croone,  
 Al bylonþe hit come alond, and þet folc of Somersete  
 þoru þe bysop Alston and þet folc of Dorsete  
 Byt come & smyte an bataille, & þere, þoru Gode's grace,  
 þe Deney's were al byneþe, & þe lond folc adde þe place,  
 And more promelle dade þe, þan þe kyng myȝte byntre,  
 þerwore gode lond men ne beþ noght al betore.

þe kyng was þe deddest þe, & agun þen þe most doun,  
 And ys fourte godes sounn mozt welle y nou,  
 Edelbold and Edelmyght, Cedric and Elic.  
 þys was a schawerke toke, & of gret wysdom & roþ,  
 And kynges were al doun, & deddeste wel þys leud,  
 In Deney's dade stant þen, þat me deddest bond.  
 In fyrste gret of þe kyng's kynedom  
 Is eldeste soun Edelbold gret bi to þys nome,  
 And ys fader alle god, and oþer þys are al so,  
 And wende agun þys Deney's, þat muche we adde y do.  
 For agun his hundred þys & an aft at Crutche moun þi  
 come,

And London, and Muncerbary, and oþer townes nome,  
 And so woz in to Muncerbary, & floure & barade welle,  
 þere þe kyng and þe soun þen sette alle laste.  
 þere was batayle strong þen þen in an þen.  
 þe godes kyngdom lete adoun as þen, men moun þen.  
 Beneden, (þat were of þen,) & oþer þen alle,  
 flete in blode al fram þe grounde, ar þe batayle were ydo.  
 Wanne þat biðed to be adoun, was þer gret me y nou.  
 þen þe woz þen hure, þat me to be hure  
 Ac oþer þen hure alle laste þen in þen grace,  
 And sende þe Crutche Englysh men þe maylrye in þe place,  
 And þe þen men of Denemarch þen were eþon.  
 þen was þer gret in Denemarch Crutche men:  
 þe kyng þen sette to be chryche þen hure þe more doun,  
 And teþegede wel & al þen leud, as þi agun, wel y nou.  
 Seyn Smythyn at Wynchestre byslop þe was,  
 And Alston at Syrebourne, þat amendeþe muche þys cas.

þe

þe kyng was wel þo betere man þoru her bejre red,  
 Twenty wynter he was kyng, as he were ded.  
 At Wynchestre he was ybured, as he gut lijf þere.  
 Hys tureþe sones he gaf ys lond, as he dygt ham ore.  
 Adelbold, þe eldare, þe kyndom of Ester,  
 And suppe Adelbrygt, Kent and Westsex.  
 Eygte hondred ger yt was and senene and fyrty al so,  
 After þat God anerþe com, þat þys dede was ydo.  
 Soþe hit wiste by þer tyme wel her kyndom,  
 At þe vifte ger Adelbold out of þys lene nome.  
 At Sfyrebourne he was ybured, e ys broþer Adelbrygt  
 Hys kyndom adde after hym, as laws was and rygt.  
 By ys dage þe werde com of þe heþene men wel prout,  
 And Hamteslyre and destrude Wynchestre al out.  
 And þat lond folc of Hamteslyre her red þo nome  
 And of Barcelyre, and sogte and þe Grewen ouercome.  
 Adelbrygt was kyng of Kent geras folle tens,  
 And of Westsex hoto byns, þo he bejde ych mene.

**A** Delred was after hym kyng y mad in þe place,  
 Eygte hondred e senene e fyrty as in þe ger of grace.  
 þe vorste ger of ys kyndom þe Deneys þyche com,  
 And robbede and destrude, and cytes baste nome.  
 Maystres hit adde of her ost, as yt were dukes, tureys,  
 Hynguar and Hubba, þat Grewen were beje.  
 In Est Angle hit byluede, to reste hem as yt were,  
 Wyð her ost al þe wynter, of þe vorst gere.

1. F, an five on; nisi mox malis, and Wynchestre destrude &c.

þe oþer ger hit dade hem borþ, & ouer Humber come,  
 And slowe to grounde & barade, & Euerwyk nome.  
 þer was batayle strong y nou, þer yllawe was þere  
 Oþre kyng of Humberlond, & monye þat with hym were.  
 þo Humberlond was þus yllend, hit wende & tonnes nome.  
 So þat atte laste to Estangle agen hym come.  
 þer hit barade & robbede, & þat folc to grounde slowe,  
 And, as wolues among sheep, renlych hem to drowe.  
 Seynt Edmond was þo her kyng, & þo he sey þat deluel cas  
 þat me morþrede so þat folc, & non amendement nas,  
 He ches leuere to deye hymself, þat such forme to ysey.  
 He dade hym borþ among ys son, nolde he <sup>1</sup> noþyng fle.  
 Hit nome hym & scourged hym, & suppe naked hym bounde  
 To a tre, & to hym kote, & made hym mony a wounde,  
 þat þe arewe were on hym þo þyce, þat no stede nas bylouede.  
 Atte laste hit martred hym, & smyte of ys heued.  
 þe fyrte ger of þe crownement of Aldered þe kyng  
 A nywe ost com into þys lond, grêt þoru alle þyng,  
 And anon to Redyngge robbede and slowe.  
 þe kyng and Alfred ys broþer nome men ynowe,  
 Mette hem, and a batayle smyte by Alsedoune.  
 þer was mony moder chyld, þat sone lay þer doune.  
 þe batayle ylaste vorte nygt, and þer were aflowe  
 Wyf dukas of Denemarch, ar hit wolde wpp drawe,  
 And mony þousend of oþer men, & þo gonne hit to fle;  
 Ac hit adde alle ybe assend, <sup>2</sup> gyf þe nygt nadde y be.  
 Eueþe batayles her after in þe sulf gere  
 Hit smyte, and at bope þe heþene maystres were.

---

 1. L. noþyng. 2. Sic.

þe kyng Alured son þe þu may of þeþ nome,  
 As yt tel, þe hysty ger of ys kyndom.  
 Et Alured þe was ymued, as God gaf þat cas,  
 þe gode Alured, yn baptes, after hym kyng mas.

**A**lfred, þyn nobis man, as in þe ger of grace he non  
 Gyfte hondred & sixty & twelue þe kyndom.

And he adde at Rome ybe, & her yn grete wyðom,  
 þe pope Leon hym blesede, þe he þader com,  
 And þe kyng's crowne of þyn lond, þat in þyn lond gut ys:  
 And he led hym to be kyng, as he kyng were ymyn.  
 An he was kyng of Engeland, of alle þat þer come,  
 þat wold þus : ylad was of þe pope of Rome,  
 And sette oþer after hym of þe archebyschopes echon.  
 So þat bynet hym þere kyng nas þer non.  
 In þe Souþ syde of Temese nyne batayles he nome  
 Egen þe Donoyne þe wold ger of ys kyndom.  
 Aye ger he was þus in þyn lond in batayle & in wo,  
 An ofte syde aboute was, and byneþe after me ;  
 So longe, þat hym nere by leuede bote þre styren in ys hond,  
 Hamtesyre, and Wyntesyre, and Somersete, of al ys lond.  
 A day as he wery was, and alueddrynge hym nome  
 And ys men were ywend anyleþ, Bopa Cutbert to hym com.  
 "Ich : am," he seþe, "Cutbert, to þe ycham ywend  
 "To drynge þe gode tytýnges. fram God ycham ysend.

1. Id est, heled live consecrated, vel anointed. Vide notas nostras ad Vitam Alfreði Magni Spelmannianam, p. 17.  
 2. Pro spied, live anointed. Nisi

forſitan tam hic, quam & jam supra, idem quod Anglo-Saxonicum gehalgod esse existimes.  
 3. Vide Willielmi Malmesburde gestis regum Angl. lib. II. c. IV.

"Cut

" Alor þat folc of þys lond to synne her wylle al gene,  
 " And gyt wolle herto her synnes bylene  
 " þoru me & oþer halemen, þat in þys lond were ybore;  
 " þan wor gon byððeþ God, wanne we beþ hym bynore,  
 " þour Lound myð ys eyen of wilce on þe lokeþ þernore;  
 " And þy poer þe wole gyue agen, þat þou ast ney berlore.  
 " And þat þou þer of soþ yle, þou skalt abbe tokynyng.  
 " Alor i hym men, þat beþ ago to day anykynge,  
 " In lepes & in coules so muche byls hit skolde hym drynge;  
 " þat ech man wondry skil of so gret cacchyng.  
 " And þe mor wor þe harde worke, þat þe water yfrore hym,  
 " þat þe more agen þe kunde of bysfyng yt ys.  
 " Of serue yt wel agen God, and yleþ me ys messager,  
 " And þou skil þy wylle abyde, as ycham ytold her.  
 As þys kyng herof awor, and of þys sygte þogte,  
 þys byskares come to hym, & so gret won of fyis hym brogte,  
 þat wonder yt was, & namelyche wor þe weder was so colde.  
 þo lynede þe god man wel, þat Seyn Cuthbert adde ytold.  
 In Denenysyre þer after þer arýuede of Deneys  
 þre and twenty kypuel men, al agen þe þeys,  
 þe kyng's broþer of Denemarch duc of ost was.  
 Dure kyng's men of Engelond mette hem by cas,  
 And smyte þer an batayle, and her gret duc slowe,  
 And eygte hundred & fourty men, & her caronyes to drowe.  
 þo kyng Alfreð harde þys, ys herte gladeþe þe,  
 þat lond folc to hym come so þyche so yt mygte go,  
 Of Somersete, of Wylytesyre, of Hamtesyre herto,  
 Enere as þe mende, and of ys owe folc al so.

1. Pro, þyn.

Vol. I:

L 1

50

þe kyng Alured leue þe þeu may of þeþ nome,  
 As yt hal, þe wylly ger of ys kyndom.  
 Et Aluredourne he was ymoch, as God gaf þat cas,  
 þe gode Alured, ys beþer, after hym kyng mas.

**A**lfred, þyn nobis man, as in þe ger of grace he non  
 Gyfte hundred & tynt & twelme þe kyndom.

And he abbe at Rome ybe, & þer ys grete myddom,  
 þe pope Leon hym blefde, þe he þader com,  
 And þe kynges crowne of þyn lond, þat in þyn lond gut ys:  
 And he led hym to be kyng, as he kyng were ywys.  
 An he mas kyng of Engeland, of alle þat þer come,  
 þat woth þus: ylad was of þe pope of Rome,  
 And þupþe oþer after hym of þe ercheþylopes echon.  
 So þat byner hym þere kyng nas þer non.

In þe Souþ syde of Temese nyne batayles he nome  
 Egen þe Donsyn þe woth ger of ys kyndom.  
 Aye ger he was þus in þyn lond in batayle & in wo,  
 An ofte syþe aboue was, and byneþe efter mo;  
 So longe, þat hym nere by leude bote þre styren in ys hond,  
 Hamteslyre, and Wynteslyre, and Somersete, of al ys lond.  
 A day as he wery was, and asueddrynge hym nome  
 And ys men were ywend anyfleþ, Soþn Catbert to hym com.  
 "Ich: am," he seþde, "Catbert, to þe ycham ywend  
 "To drynge þe gode tytýnges. fram God ycham yfend.

1. Id est, heled live consecrated, vel anointed. Vide notas nostras ad Vitam Alfreði Magni Spelmannianam, p. 17.  
 2. Pro oyled, live anointed. Nisi

forſitan tam hie, quam & jam ſupra, idem quod Anglo-Saxoſum gehalgod eſſe exiſtmes.  
 3. Vide Willielmi Malmeſburde geſhis regum Angl. lib. II. c. IV.  
 "Not

"Mor þat folc of þys lond to synne her wylle al gene,  
 "And gat wille herte her synnes hylene  
 "þoru me & oþer halemen, þat in þys lond were fþore;  
 "þan wor þou byððeþ God, wanne we beþ hym bynore,  
 "þour Lonerd myð ys eyen of wilce on þe lokeþ þernore,  
 "And þy peer þe wole gýne agen, þat þou ast ney berlore.  
 "And þat þou þer of sop yle, þou skalt abbe tokynyngs.  
 "Mor þym men, þat beþ ago to Day anykynge,  
 "In lepes & in coules so muche byls hit skolde hym bynge,  
 "þat ech man wondry skil of so gret cacchynge.  
 "And þe mor wor þe harde worke, þat þe water fþore þys,  
 "þat þe more agen þe kunde of bykynge yt ys.  
 "Of serue yt wel agen God, and yleþ me ys messager,  
 "And þou skil þy wylle abyde, as ycham ytold her.  
 As þys kyng herof awoc, and of þys fyrte þogte,  
 þys bykares come to hym, & so gret won of fýls hym brogte,  
 þat wonder yt was, & namelyche wor þe weder was so colde.  
 þo lynede þe god man wel, þat Seyn Eutbert adde ytold.  
 In Denenýðyre þer after þer arýuede of Deneýs  
 þre and tenty fþyuel men, al agen þe þeýs,  
 þe kyng's broþer of Denemarch duc of ost was.  
 Dure kyng's men of Engeloud mette hem by cas,  
 And smyte þer an batayle, and her gret duc slowe,  
 And eygte hundred & fourty men, & her caronyes to browe.  
 þo kyng Alfred harde þys, ys herte gladede þo,  
 þat lond folc to hym come so þýke so yt mygte go,  
 Of Somersete, of Wyltesyre, of Hamtesyre þerto,  
 Euere as þe wende, and of ys owe folc al so.



So þat þe adde poer ynou, and atte laste hit come,  
 And a batayle at Edendone agen þe Deneys name,  
 And slowe to grounde, & wonne þe maystre of þe belde.  
 þe kȳng & ys grete duke bygonne hem to helde  
 To þe kȳng Alfred to ys wȳlle, and ostages toke,  
 Herto wende out of ys lond, gȳf he yt wolde loke;  
 And gut perto, bor ys lone, to anonge Cristendom.  
 Kȳng Gurmund, þe herte kȳng, borst þer to come.  
 Kȳng Alfred ys godfader was. & ybaptysed ek þer were  
 pretty of her herte dukes. and muche of þat folc þere  
 Kȳng Alfred hem huld wȳþ hym tuelf dawes as he hende,  
 And suppe he gef hem large gȳstes, and let hym wende.  
 Hit, þat nolde Cristyn be, of lond slowe þo,  
 And bygonde see in france dade wel muche wo.  
 gut þe stremes come agen, and muche wo here wrohte.  
 Ac þe kȳng Alfred atte laste to flame hem euere brohte.  
 Kȳng Alfred was þe wȳlost kȳng, þat long was byuore.  
 Hor þey me segge þe lawes bep in worre tȳme borlore,  
 Ras yt nogt so hitis dȳge. bor þey he in worre were,  
 Lawes he made rȳgtuollere, and strengore þan er were.  
 Clerc he was god ynou, and gut, as me telleþ me,  
 He was more þan ten ger old, ar he couþe ys adere.  
 Ac ys gode moder ofte smale gȳstes hym tok,  
 Hor to bylene oþer ple, and lohȳ on ys boke.  
 So þat by þer clergȳs ys rȳgt lawes he wonde,  
 þat nenere er nere y mad, to gouernȳ ys lond.  
 And bor þe worre was so muche of þe lufte Deneys,  
 þe men of þȳs salue lond were of þe worse peȳs.

And

And robbede and slowe opere, þerfor he bynnde,  
 þat þer were hondredes in eche contreye of ȝs lond,  
 And in ech toune of þe hondred a tephunge were also,  
 And þat ech man wppoute gret lond in tephunge were ȝdo,  
 And þat ech man knewe oper þat in tephunge were,  
 And wuste somdel of her stat, ȝyf me <sup>1</sup> þu bp hem bere.  
 So streyt he was, þat þey me ledde amyddre weyes heye  
 Seluer, þat non man ne dorste ȝt nyme, þey he ȝt seye.  
 Abbeys he rerde mony on, and mony stundes ȝwys.  
 Ac Wynchestre he rerde on, þat nywe munstre ȝclaped ȝs.  
 Hys lyf eygte and twenty ȝer in ȝs kynedom ȝlaste.  
 After ȝs deþ he was ȝbured at Wynchestre atte laste.

<sup>2</sup> **E**dward, ȝs gode sone, kyng was ȝmad þe  
 In þe ȝer of grace nyne hondred ȝer & on & nanme.  
<sup>3</sup> Foure & twenty ȝer he was kyng, & to more poer  
 come  
 þan euere ȝs fader dude, ac bogt to so gret wysdom.  
 He wan" þe kynedom of þe March myd ȝs dedes bolde,  
 So þat of hym ȝt was afterward ȝholde.  
 And þat lond of Estangle, and Norphomberlond,  
 And Walys he wan þoru batayle, al vnder ȝs hond.  
 And he nas neuere in batayle byneþe in þys lond.  
 He bynond vorst an queintȝle agen þe Deneys to anstond.

1. Sic, cum spatio, in Codice  
 nostro *Harleyano*. At þesþe (i. e.  
 ðeofðe five theft) in Codice  
*Cottoniano*, sicut me docuit ami-  
 cus. Adso ut þusþe in Codice  
 nostro *Harleyano* sit legendum.

2. Edward the bell, his sone,  
 Ar. 3. Logher was he þenne  
 his fader of clergie and wis-  
 dom, But more glorious  
 thenne he in power that hym  
 come. He wanne Ar.

L 1 2

Uor

For þe heȝe tonnes in þe land and þe castles þerte  
 Myȝ gode kyngten he let astory, & myȝ sustynance þerte.  
 So þat were þe kyng were, and þer come her son,  
 In eche contreye prest hit were myȝ þe land welc anon,  
 And smyte mony batayle, þat þe kyng yt nuste,  
 So þat myȝ strengþe of heȝe tonnes ech contreye hym last  
 wuste.

Hys soster he let spously, þat yȝote was Elled,  
 To þe kyng, þat hald þe spurch of hym, þat yȝote was E-  
 peired.

1 So þat heo myȝ chyldre was, and þegte hyre so for,  
 Ac þat chyld were ybore, þat heo ne wyllede yt nanmor.  
 Com more to þulke stoupe bor me us myȝte yre bringe,  
 þat heo wolde ener est in manne's bedde come bor non þyng,  
 Ac enere seȝde, manne heo was of suche þynges bysogt,  
 "þat kynges' dogter, as he was, yt bycom nægt,  
 "Such fol delȝt borto do, ne such dede næpema,  
 "þat were encheleson afterward of such pyne and wo.  
 "Ac gyt þe 2 bygynnyge were gut as strong, as ys þe ende,  
 "Ich wene gut mony womman þulke weȝ wolde wende.  
 þe luter Edmolf was þe kynges' broþer Edward,  
 And, bor þur hate agen ys broþer, held as afterward.

1. Tho that heo with childe was, and hadde hit i bore,  
 And hadde i felte the wo ther of, she saide therefore, That  
 come wolde thes neuere in manne's bedde more, for heo  
 hadde had so myche sorow & fore; And seide, thes nolde  
 neuer esse such dede do,

That shuld be encheleson of such sorow and wo. On Ethelwolde, Eme's son of this  
 kyng Edward, for hate ganne to werry hym as a  
 thetwarde. The Danes &c. Ethelwoldum etiam filium pa-  
 trui regis appellat Will. Malmesb.  
 f. 25. b. 2. Sic.

þe

þe Deneys<sup>1</sup> were in Humberlond, to hem he gan draue.  
 Hit anonge hym daye ynow, & were myȝt hym wel vame,  
 And made hym her kyng anon, ys drogher vorto stende.  
 Sone hit greyþed her oft þo, Souþward vorto wende,  
 And asayle Eſſex, and nome þat lond anon.  
 Wor þe mayſtres of þe lond golde to hem echon.  
 þo wende hit in to þe March, & muche ſorwe made,  
 And robbede and deſtrude baſte anon to ' Creſkelade.  
 So hit paſſede Temſe, and dade wo y nou.  
 Kyng Edward ſone myȝt ys oft after hem drou,  
 And drof hem in to Humberlond myȝt wel quye paſ.  
 Ac kyng Edwolf þer after ſone aſlawe waſ.  
 Wor þo kyng Edward & ys men hamward pwend were,  
<sup>2</sup> þat ſolt of Kent, agen ys wylle, <sup>3</sup> byleuede by hynde þere.  
 þo Edwolf and þe Deneys muſte hem ſo bylene,  
<sup>4</sup> To hem hit ſmyte anon, and batayle hem gene.  
 þe Kent ers ſtode baſte agen, & þe kyng Edwolf ſlowe.  
 Heys & lowe þer were aſlawe, in eyþer all ynowe.  
 Kyng Edward þe nyþe ger of ys kyndedom  
 þe caſtel made of Hereforde, and to gode ende com.  
 þe ger þerafter þe Deneys ' wende fram Leyceſtre to North  
 hamtone  
 Toward Openford laſte, and at ' Hogenorte

---

1. Vulgo, Crekelade. Male  
 autem Brekelade in *A.*  
 2. The folke *A.* 3. Be hynde  
 laſte there *A.* 4. Towarde  
 hem they turned a ge, and ba-  
 taille them gebe. The men  
 of Kente ſtode a ye, and this  
 Edwolf ſlowe *A.* 5. Wente  
 fro Northampton Toward  
*A.* 6. Lege, Hogenortone,  
 (ſive, ut in *A.*) Hogenora  
 tonne.

Slowe

Gloume muche folc <sup>1</sup> y non, and" in þe contreye aboute.

Atte laste þe contreye folc com myð gret route,

And to dryue hem al to nogte, & her preye hem bynom.

<sup>2</sup> Suppe, in þe endleste ger of þe kyng's kyndom,

þe Deneys come and robbede ðerþ Walys vasse.

So þat to ȳrchenefeld hit come atte laste.

<sup>3</sup> Out of castel of Hereforde þat folc vasse þe com,

And of þe contreye al aboute, & batayle wȳþ hem nom,

And slon of hem her herte duc, & oþere men monȳ on.

Hit, þat myȝte of scapȳe alȳue, of londe sloume echon.

<sup>4</sup> Billed, quene of þe March, strong <sup>5</sup> womman was and

<sup>6</sup> quenȳte

<sup>7</sup> In batayle, and yholde as quene in eche poynte.

1. Defunt *Mr.* 2. Sithen in the. xi. yere *Mr.* 3. Oute of Hereford the folke a yensl heme lone com, *Mr.* 4. Elledde, *Mr.* 5. Pro, womman sive woman. 6. L. queynte, cum *Mr.* uti etiam mox infra poynte. 7. And in bataille as a kyng i holde in eche poynte. Al Wales heo ouercome, and Þorke was hure also. Atte Camelworthe heo deyde lethe, and buried atte Gloucestre thoo *Mr.* Deinde desiderantur reliqua metra, ad Eadwardum hunc spectantia, multaque eorundem loco oratione soluta inferuntur, in quibus & indicatur, eum Wigorniz, non Ferenduni (nunc Faringdon, in agro Bercheriensis) obiisse. Nam sic auctor: This Edward beil

deyde atte Worcester, and buried was at Wynchestre, by side his fader. (minus recte. Nam & alii Ferenduni hoc contigisse asserunt.) qui & hzc retulit de morte atque sepultura Ælfledz, Elsfledz, sive Ethelsledz: Ethelsledde, lady of Werches neriche, a bone laide deiðe to fore hure brother Edward beil. v. yere, and was buried in Sepnt Petre's church atte Gloucestre, whiche heo, with hure husbonde [Ethelred] with grete diligence had i maked, be cause they hadde translated Sepnt Oswaldes bonus fram Bardenay thoder, but þat by Danes destroyed, a nother abbey now in . . . . . by Eldre ercbischop of Þorb.

**A**l Walys heo ouercom, and þe March þerto.  
 Stafford heo wan, and Leycestre, and Warewîk þerto,  
 And Bruges & Euerwîk, & þe contreye : & al so  
 Of Euerwîk to hyre com, hyre wylle borto do.  
 At Camewur þe heo deýde suppe, & ýbured he was ýwýs  
 In Seynt Petre's porche at Gloucestre, as þe abbey gat ýs.  
 þe kynedom þo of þe March kýng Edward to hym nome,  
 As in þe fyre and tuentye ger of ýs kynedom.  
 Kýng Edward adde þre sonas : þe eldoste þelston,  
 And Edmond and Eldred, þat kýnges were echon.  
 And suppe þe deýde at farndone, as God gef þat cas,  
 And in mustre at Wýnchestre bý ýs fader ýbured was.

**A**þelston was þo kýng, þat was Edward's sone,  
 And þorn þe heýe men of þe lond ýcrouned at kýnges  
 stene.

Þýne hondred ger of grace & foure & tuenty ýcrouned he was,  
 : And aboute an fourtyne ger kýng þer after he was.  
 Hely chýrche he louede wel, and rerde moný on.  
 þe borste ger of ýs kynedom ýbore was Seyn Dunstons.  
 Þýne abbeyes he made : þaste þýs gode þelston,  
 And þer nas of olde house in þe lond non,  
 þat he ne amendede mýd som lond, oþer mýd býldýnge,  
 Oþer mýd boc, oþer rýche cloþ, oþer oþer rýche þýnge.

---

1. Abesse malim. 2. And but londe, That he ne amended  
 an xvi. yere after kýng he with summe lond, other with  
 nas . 3. Many ich vnder- summe buildýng, Other with  
 stande, þe olde Abbey was bokes other clothe, or summe  
 ther none thourgh oute al his rýche thýng .

Roþs

Northumberland he was, and Walys and Scotland,  
 And þe kynges & her land held al in ys hond.  
 hym þeȝte yt was more noblesye, þo he adde an hond al þys,  
 Clerte make kynges, þan to be kyng y mys.  
 Wyȝen he made kynges, þat kynges er were,  
 Bote þat hit were under hym, and truage hym bere.  
 þe hit adde her land agen, þe kyng of Scotland  
 Constantyn, and Ruafal hym of Humberlond,  
 Up þys kyng þeȝlston gadereðe mon y nowte,  
 And here byfenge Humber myð her oft drowe.  
 Ruafal was gode i kyngt, & skaward & queynte.  
 Speneſtral he mas gode ynou, & harpore in eche weynte.  
 To þeȝlston panylon myð ys harpe he wende,  
 And so wel wyþoute harpede, þat me after hym sende.  
 þer he harpede so wel, þat he payde al þe ronte,  
 Ac enere were ys eyen in eche hurne aboute.  
 After mete, þo hit wolde nanmore of ys pley,  
 i hit gene hym seluer þor ys gle, & let hym go ys wey.  
 i Of þe seluer he adde þaker, þor he ne com þader þor mon,  
 Ac ys wyȝle he adde þo he sey þe stat of ys fon.  
 On, þat adde y he wyþ hym, þe kyng tolde þere.  
 þe kyng hym blamede þo, þat he hadde ytold hym er.  
 "Þyre," he leyde, "ych was yfuore to hym ar to þe,  
 "And gyf ych adde hym i beſnyke, þe wost þou most i lone me.

---

1. Kynght *Ar.* 2. We yaf | me. Ac remewe to a nother  
 hym yfres for *Ar.* 3. Of his | stede thynne tenten Ich the  
 yfres he tolde scorne, *Ar.* | rede, *Ar.*  
 4. We trayed, *Ar.* 5. Truste to

Ac

" Ac remewe in to anoper stude þy panylon bi myn rede,  
 " Oþer þou mygt gut to nygt of som treson drede.  
 ' þe panylon was remened þo, and þe kyng and alle ys,  
 Ac a byslop and ys men þer usop com ýwys,  
 And pygte þer her panylon, & býlenede al nygt þers.  
 And þys lufur men com anygt, & wende þe kyng yt were,  
 And slon þe byslop and alle ys men, þat gult nadde non.  
 And lufþe hit wende vorþore mo, and sogte þþalskon.  
 Of hem nas he noht <sup>2</sup> ýwar <sup>3</sup> at þo atte lasse.  
 Ac sone he and ys men armede hem wel basse,  
 And Edmond ys broþer myd hym, <sup>4</sup> & þo hit prestre were eþen,  
 And wende to þys batayle, and mette myd her son,  
 þe kyng to ys swerde drou, and þo ne bond he non.  
 Hyt was myd treson hym bynome, hard cas was þat on.  
 On God " almygtý & Seyn Aldelm þe kyng cride bafts þo,  
 And hit sende hym bi þayr myracle bote in ys wo.  
 To þys scanbert he pulte ys hond, al prestre aluerd he bond  
 þer inne, þoru God ý soun, no betere in loun.

1. Thenne to a nother stede  
 the kyng remew gan. To  
 that place the same nyght [a  
 bisshop] cam than, And  
 wende to haue founde the  
 kyng ther, so that he logged  
 ther, But the Enmys cam a  
 nyght, and wende the kyng  
 hit were, Ar. 2. Tum ultra  
 progrediens [Analaus] regem  
 ipsum imparatum offendit, quip-  
 pe qui nihil tale hostem ausu-  
 rum timens, largæ quieti indul-

serat Will. Malmsh. fol. 26. b.  
 3. fort atte Ar. 4. And dighte  
 hem echerchou faste to the  
 bataille, to mete with hure  
 sone. The kyng trawe wolde  
 his swerde, when he tyme A  
 seye, And thenne sounde he  
 there non. for hit was a way  
 þer aunter bi fallýng a way,  
 or bi summe other cas. The  
 kyng was ther of sore abassh-  
 ed, as no wonder was. On  
 God Ar.



In þe kyng trefles þat shew : ymest ys,  
 As þer : noble knyght, gat to þys daye ymest.  
 : Egged yt ys in an alk, and in þe oþer nyst.  
 þere ne myȝte þenere gold no seluer þerou be ybrest.  
 þys noble kyng Athelstan, þe þys gode swerd hym com,  
 Athelstan & ned he fyst, & to god ornest to hym com.  
 þat shew þat þe fenne ston, berte þy: dert wryt man,  
 þe batayle yfste, and neuere wery he nas.  
 What þeru ys shewethede, wat þeru Gode's grace,  
 shouy was : gode body, þat he shew in þe place.  
 þe batayle man at : Brunnesbury, & þere were of Denys,  
 An of Spottes aslame, and also of Jutys,  
 Gylt gonge : kynges, prout þeru at þyng,  
 And prout Godesmy, þat of Scotland was kyng.  
 And of oþere, þat were aslame, no ne myȝte non endre yf.  
 Yll, þat of Repede alme, bypame haste to se.  
 þus : þe kyng Athelstan agast þe ys fene.  
 : Hor hit ne shewe in þys lond albe : roccet non,  
 : þe castel of Euermyth to grounde he let caste.  
 (Hos ys son were ofte þer lene, þe wile : þe flate)

1. ynt i kepte is, *Ar.* 2. A noble *Ar.* 3. Egged in the on half, *Ar.* 4. The strong body, *Ar.* 5. Brunnesbury *Ar.* Vide d. Gibsoni nominum locorum Explicationem in Chronico Sax. uti etiam Additiones ad ejusd. Gibsoni Camdeni Britanniae Versionem Anglicam, p. 273. in comitatu Northumbr. 6. Knighthes *Ar.* non adeo

recte. 7. This *Ar.* 8. And for *Ar.* 9. Kelseyte *Ar.* 10. A castell *Ar.* Inde certe & in additionibus oratione soluta in eodem codice scriptum legimus, In the meyn wyle Athelstan lette throw downe, York an olde Castell at Ebrayneth, that the Danes by olde tyme hadde i maken, and that hit

þat þai hadde non recett, worte gretly þu land.  
 ⁊ Al so of ech maner purchas, þat com in þu bond,  
 Oþer þat gyt eny of þu as in purchas nome,  
 He verded, þat neuere non among þu spent no count,  
 Ac to hous of relygyon þat me yt al clene bere,  
 And to pouctemen adonte, ⁊ þat melleys were.  
 Alle þe kynges of Walys he drogte wel to lare  
 To Hereford al under hya, to þu ⁊ welle dawe,  
 þat twenty pound of golde ech of hem hym bere,  
 In ⁊ pretty pound of seluer fram gys to gys,  
 And ⁊ twenty þousand ⁊ oþer ek to þu golde,  
 In haunches and hondes, as mety as þe melle.  
 To certeyn monyngs he hem bragte boþe lare ⁊ boþe,  
 So þat ⁊ her wouyngs were al by welle wyde,  
 And noþyng in þe ek all. So þat wyde y wys  
 Gut to þu ⁊ dawe to dely Engeland and Wales,  
 And þoru kyng Schelton þat was boþe ywe.  
 Wen ⁊ of Cornwalle he drogte to certeyn shude alle.

shulde he no more refute to  
 Enys, and myche good,  
 ther inne I fonde, he worted  
 a monge his men. *Ar. Sed vi-*  
*delis Will. Malmesb. fol. 27. b.*  
 11. Hit dade i laste) *Ar.*  
 1. Also of eche purchas,  
 that he gat to his honde, ⁊  
 that any of his men that  
 any purchas nome, he for  
 dawe that neuere no a mong  
 his purchas come, *Ar. 2.*  
 That seke and mysalised were  
 3. Wille wel fawe, *Ar.*

4. Trecentas Will. Malmesbur.  
 5. 25. millia Will. M. 6. Oþen  
 a yere to this golde, *Ar. 7.*  
 The Waleishmen he putte be  
 yonde Weigh, *Ar. 8.* Way be-  
 leth *Ar. 9.* Inde digressus in  
 Occidentales Brittones se con-  
 vertit, qui Cornewallenses vo-  
 cantur, quod in Occidente Brit-  
 tannie siti, cornu Gallie ex ob-  
 liquo respiciunt. Illos quoque  
 impigre adorsus, ab Excestria,  
 quam ad id temporis aquo cum  
 Anglis jure inhabitabant, cedere  
 com-

M m 2

Met bygeade þe water of Tamar þe adde hem alle þer to  
 To monye þer, as in þer ane, and a þys alf nycht.  
 Met hit monede þer by more anon to Excestre-castel.  
 And ðeisse were in Engeland borte: þe yt adde ðygge.  
 Kyng ðeilston leneðe muche ðalmesbury y wye.  
 He gef hem of þe holy croys sam, þat þere gut ys.  
 And he was at ys ende: þay tayne ythured þere.  
 Kyng þe adde arif yþe aboute an bytens ger.

**E**dmund, ðeilstone's bræter, after him was kyng,  
 Gode man & douteðe God þoru alle þyng.  
 In þe ger of grace nyne hondred yt was & twenty ger,  
 þat he was kyng y mad, and ald he was ex  
 Cyrtene ger, and he was kyng syx ger and day.  
 Foure & tventy ger he was old, þo he aflame lay.  
 Saracens þer were, þe gut byleneðe in Engeland,  
 In Lyncolne & in Leycestre, & in Derby ych understunde,  
 In Staßford & in Rotheingham. he draf hem al to nycht,  
 And Crischnemen aboute in þer stude brogt.  
 þet hous of Glascynbury he leneðe wel ynou,  
 And made Seyn Dunstan abbed þere, & to ys conseyl hym dron,  
 And þoru ys conseyl cherehyn wyde he let rere,  
 And abbeys and priories aboute here and þere.  
 In to hous of Glascynbury gret þyng he gef þo,  
 And grete franchyses hem grantede, þat lasteþ enermore.

compulit, terminum provincie  
 sue citra Tambram fluvium sta-  
 tuens, sicut Aquilonaribus Brit-  
 tannis amnem Waiam limitem  
 posuerat *Will. Malmsh.* f. 27. b.

1. ðheilstone þat right  
 2. St Gloucester þe ðeyle  
 in marg. 3. Sic. 4. And ðe  
 monethes in yr.

þat

þat þe wode þat franchyse as betwix as þe kyng,  
 And myd gode charyte, þat gūt ys þer, made confermyng.  
 Edmyne ys sone was þat laper was ynou,  
 And Edgar þe yonger þat to alle godnesse drou.  
 Kyng Edmond ahte laste myd laper depe's wonde  
 Pytolyche was allawe, alas! þulke sounde!  
 Wor a traytor of ys lond, Leof was ys name,  
 ysilon was out of Engeland myd wretchede & flame."  
 Suppe aday as þe kyng sat at ys mete  
 At Dokesherche bysede Wyke, & lombel adde ygete,  
 Leof, þys laper traytor, myd ys cloþes ychanged þere,  
 Com in, & bynede hym et, anoper man as yt were.  
 A Seyn Austyne's day yt was, as yt baly in May,  
 þe kyng byhuld aboute, and þys traytor y lay,  
 And anyled hym saye wel, wat man yt were.  
 And þo he sey þat þys Leof, þys traytor sat þere,  
 þe hupen hym up fram þe bord, in gret wraþpe ynou,  
 And hente þys Leof by þe top, & fram þe borde hym drou,  
 An defouled hym bader hym myd honde & myd fote.  
 þe þef, þat lay bynede hym, þogte on laper dote,  
 And smot þe kyng myþ a knyf in þe breste depe ynou,  
 And, to gret harm to al þys lond, þe gode kyng þe slou.

1. So that hit habbeth  
 franchyse as hit were a  
 kyng. As afterwarð me may  
 I see, though his confermyng.  
 Edmyne his furste sone  
 lithere was i nome, But Edgar  
 the yonger to all gode-

nesse drowe *Ar.* 2. This  
 londe, Leof *Ar.* in quo & Leof  
 etiam infra. 3. I lemed was  
 oute of Engeland, where of  
 cam ther grame *Ar.* 4. And  
 a doune hym drowe, *Ar.*

þet

þet folk to þese þen tynpter and þine peccours  
 þe kyng bygan. þy al þu luf þu godes and myne wille,  
 And þe toun of þekelchyrche, and eke þat þu wende  
 þe get in to Glassebury, & los þyn burys þere.  
 And þere he liff gut to þis day, ac þe not þen þe muche  
 þe toun suppe of þekelchyrche from Glassebury com.  
 Seyn Dunstan was at Glassebury þe þe kyng þe wende

And þe gut þen seye of. Donel he made of þat cast.  
 Eke þe Donel com þe nere hym, & heppede & lon,  
 And sayde and playde, and made seye þe non.  
 þyn holy man wiste anon, we þu seye mas.  
 And þat þer þen methemes of þe kyng he made, so glot þat.  
 Toward þekelchyrche he wende hestliche and þyn.  
 An me tolde hym by þe way, þat he was out of lye.

**E** Dred was þe kyng anon after. Edward þe kyng  
 Eke þu tynge þese is gonge mare, þat me me myght  
 abbe non eke.

God man Edward was þe non, & to godme þese anon.  
 And muche londe holy chyrche, & þe godman þe  
 Of þe þe þe þe were eke þyn wille,  
 And of Scotland also, ac þe poer late yaste.

1. All by his luf his gode a  
 bonte dele. It þe kechyrche  
 was þe this dede, for þy to  
 Glassebury þe hit yaf, and  
 bade me þulde at Glassebu-  
 ry him bury. Ar. 2. What  
 3. yut in the same flounde  
 he wiste of this cas. Ar. 4.

Danneyng and lough. And  
 as hit were pleyng made  
 game i nogh. Ar. 5. Such  
 solas. Dunston toward þe  
 kechyrche dight him self  
 blis. So that me tolde him  
 by the way, the kyng was  
 out of tye. Ar.

Her

That wat myþ leas, wat myþ eye, he brægt to hem al to þyngelle,  
 And her elde forwage ande þen helde al stille.  
 "Housteu geer þe was kyng, and at ys ende day,  
 Of þe tolde Seyn Dunston : here," þat he sylk say.  
 To hym he wende þatleiche, and by þe myþ myþ  
 He þurde angles synge en þy by the : ȝif þe þyng :  
 "þe kyng Edred non alype to oure honowryn.  
 þe tolde Seyn Dunston, þat he was ywond to þenowen lye.  
 "Suche gode kynges me seide : non bynde among,  
 þat angeles of her endynges myþe made long.

**E**dwyne, Edmonde's sone, after Edred kyng was  
 felle & laþer, þer non woold in ys hande nam.  
 He a nywe Herodes in such þeer he com,  
 "And by ys þeer beþende and aþeynde Cristendom.  
 A fol womman in spensbroche he hald vnder ys myt.  
 Seyn Dunston hym seide wel, þat yt was a laþer tye.  
 And, as Seyn Jon Baptyst, halangede her mys dede.  
 Edwyne him þe kyng and ys þere, þat he her folde : myþ,

The Latyn scilp 17. pere  
 and a half in. in margine.  
 2. Deest. 3. Idem quod An-  
 gl. Sax. lurt five desiderium vel  
 ferre. Sed hic loci hithertum  
 non habet. perinde ac si dicas, he  
 angels sing on high  
 with mirth this five thus.  
 inde in Cod. And as he  
 before to him warde, beharve  
 by the way a mery song of

angeles thus seggyng þeye  
 &c. 4. Suche dede. hyngon  
 now scwe þens he amonge,  
 That angelus atte þure ende  
 yng maketh of eny fonge.  
 5. Potius, non, si e. san, ut ex  
 constat, nisi cum eod. Cod.  
 ten adjicias, retento non. 6.  
 And with his vnell linyng  
 aþeyred Cristendom. 7. F.  
 myþ seve.

And

And þe woman sendede, hym to þeþe bryng.  
 So þat Seyn Dunston was, þoru hyre and þe kyng.  
 I flew out of Engeland, and to Flaundres wende.  
 1 þe gode man ne toc neuere gome, þat me hym so soule sende.  
 Abbeys þys inþer man broȝte ek in alle mo.  
 And þat hous of Spalmebury, þat an old hous was þu,  
 2 Of tuo hundred ȝer and seuenty ȝerþ þe bȝnere,  
 He made yt stable to ȝs hors, as yt were alle berlore.  
 So inþer man was þe kyng, þat þe heȝmen of þe lande  
 Bygonne, as hit nebe moſte, agen hym baſte at ſtonde,  
 And bȝnome hym muche of ȝs lond, 3 & bȝtoke Edgar ȝs  
 broþer.

For þe drou to alle godeneſſe, and 4 betere was þan oþer.  
 þys Edwyne was þus kyng þre ȝer, and ſomdel more,  
 And þat lond þor ȝs deþe ne wex noȝt ouerſore.  
 And ȝut þor al ȝs ſtremede, as yt ȝwryte ȝs,  
 þoru byddȝngs of Seyn Dunſton, ȝs ſoule com to blys.

**E**dgar Edwyne's broþer, & Edmonde's ſone þe kyng,  
 Kyng was after Edwyne, gode man þoru alle þȝng.  
 Non lȝchore ȝs broþer hym nas, þan an wolſ ȝs a lombe,  
 Of manere ne of dede, þey hit were in one wombe.  
 For þulke tȝme þat Edgar of ȝs moder was ybore,  
 Seyn Dunſton was at Glaſhynbury, & þerafter & bȝnere,  
 þe harde þe þulke tȝme angles lȝnge ȝwȝs  
 Up in þe luſte a murye ſong, & þat ſong was þys:

1. The gode man was wel	take hit Edgar his brother
a paide of þat God hym ſende	4. Weigher
2. Deest	3. And

"To holy chyrche & to þe lond peys ys ybore and blys

"By þulke chylde's tyme, þat non ybore ys.

1 Suppe þo Seyn Dunston wuste, þat þe chylde was ybore  
rygt þo,

He wuste, þat al Engeland he sholde brynge of mo.

And so he dade. þor þo he was, after ys broþer, kyng

He brogte al þat lond in pes, þat er was in stryung.

He bndude alle luper lawes, þat me huld bynere,

And gode lawes brogte borþ, þat er were as norlore.

Scotlond and Norþhumberlond and Walys al so

3 Wyþ out heste to hym come, ys wyllle vorto do.

þe erþe geild bet, & þe weder was 2 mergore by ys daye,

And lasse tempest in þe see þan me er ylaye.

He tolde hym of Seyn Dunston, þat ys broþer drof of londe.

After hym he sende anon, & he com þoru ys londe,

And ys abbeye anon in pes, fram wan he was so longe,

And was þe kynges conseiler, & bayre was vnder bouge.

Erchebyscop of Kanterbury þoru þys gode kynges

Syen Dunston was suppe ymad, þe more godnesse to bræge.

3 þys kyng al so at Glascynbury, as he þer uorþ com,

4 Seynt Ethelwold, þat was þer monck, out of ys hous he nome,

And gef hym 4 an place in Warclyre, þat mucche ys in mone,

Wyf myle by Souþe Orenford, þat me claueþ Abendons.

þys holy man Seyn Ethelwold bulde þere vasse,

And a nayre abbey þer bygan, 5 þat enereft ap ylaste.

1. There by knewe Seynt  
Dunston, that he, that bore  
was the, shulde hepe Enges-  
lond in his tyme fro war.

2. Merer. 3. This kyng  
also fro Glascynbury as he

therforth come Seynt Ethels-  
wold, that was the monck,  
oute of the house nome, &  
4. & 5. That hider to  
doth last &.

Nn

Worth



• Werst abbod he was þere hymself, & monches to hym nome,  
In þys manere Abendone werst to abbeje com.

• It byelle, þat he byshop of Wycheſter was ded,  
he kyng hym made byshop þere, þoru Seyn Dunstons rede,  
• Attē heye chyrche of Wycheſter, þer ys le was ydo,  
þat me clapede chyrche cathedra, & gat me deſ aſſe.

Canons þer were Seculers, þo he werst þader roue,  
ferte men and geout, þat muche were in herdom.

he kyng and Seyn Helwold æȝen hem sette walle,

• And out of þe hous & of her venten ech after oþer caſte,  
And made an hous of monches, to holde her ordre bet.

he monches out of Abendone werst were þader fuet.

• Of Seyn Smyþyn þat hous was, as yt ys gat aſſe,

• So þat out of Abendone yt was werst ydo.

In secunde ger þat he werst byshop was

þys gode kyng and he darde þys gode can,

And ek in þe byſte ger of þe kynges kynedom

Seyn Helwold werst byshop was, & he byſſopryche nome.

þys gode kyng Edgar : & he Seyn Smyþyn atte tyns,

þat longe adde under erþe yleȝe, werst broȝte into Arjue.

Arjued he was nyne hundred ger, & on & tenentȝe ger,

After þat our Louerd alyȝte in ys moder anreþe þere.

Kyng & Edgar & Seynt Helwold in Wycheſter wodeuſe

• An oþer hous of monches, þat gat woudep doþe tw.

1. The kyng made him byshop after thorgh Seynt Dunstons rede In the chyrche of Wycheſtre, & ther inthe he was dede. Ther were Chanons Seculers the he thuder

come, That lyued in pryncy and lyther iſt, and myche in herdom. 2. And of hure houses and hure venten erþe after caſte, 3. Defunt. 4. Reliqua pene omnia carmina,

ad

And gut þe þryðde hit verðe al ða þere of Seyns Marie  
 Of mynmen of religioun, and made a nonnerye.  
 þe priorye of hely, þere a byshopryche ys,  
 And þe abbey of Petresborn, hit wereð also ywys,  
 And þorney and Kameseye, and oþers mony on.  
 For eygte & fourty abbeyes hit verðe in þys land echon.  
 As þys kyng Edgar an hontep ywond was  
 Alane he coust fram ys men, as God gef þat cas,  
 So þat he alygte adoun, and aslepe lay.  
 þo þogte hym in ys slepe, þat an hey tre he say  
 Stonde þere byfyðes hym, as he byhald an hey.  
 Alpe þe herte þome tucye apples he sey,  
 And þe bowes of þe on appel smyte oþer vasse  
 So harde, þat he bel adoun in þe water atte laste.  
 A noys seyde, as hym þogte, þen wordes þen soune,  
 "Wel ys þe, wel ys þe," as he bel adoun.  
 þo he amok, hym þogte wonder of þys cas,  
 Hys gode moder Alfyte he tolde al þen yt was.  
 "Ge leue sone," quap moder, "þe toknyng herof ys,  
 "þe heye tre, þat þou yseye, bytokneþ þe ywys.  
 "þe tucye apples bytokneþ, gif þou yt molt ymyte.  
 "Tucye heys sonen of þe, þat þou salt bygyte,  
 "þat þe one's þome smyte þen oþer to grounde,  
 "þat ys, þat þe oþers's frende stolle þe oþer ðe myð mounde.  
 "þe boys, þat seyde, "wel ys þe," to tokny þat ys,  
 "þat hym worþ wel ynou, þor to heuene he wende ywys.

ad Edgarum spectantia, desiderantur in *A.* in quo tamen  
 plura, ad eundem pertinentia, oratione profaica concepta, habentur.

Nn 2

31

Al þys bynal afterward. þat sonen he adde treys,  
 Seyn Edward and Aeldred, þat kynges were þeys,  
 And one's hundrede þen oþer suppe flou,  
 • And he wende to þeueus, and was wel y nou.  
 He adde Edward by ys werke wyf, as ych abbe Ƴ sed,  
 And by Alkrede, ys oþer wyf, he adde Aeldred.  
 And Alkyfe, ys god moder, let cere ywys  
 Werke þat hous of Slafterbury, as Seyn Edward's body yw.  
 Kyng Edgar adde vader hym alle þe kynges hereabout.  
 Mor þer nas non ywys, þat nadde of hym 1 Dounte.  
 þeruer þe kyng of Walys, as in gret seynourye,  
 He þet, þat he hym sende eche ger by maystrye  
 þre 2 þousend of wolues, in name of truage.  
 þe Welyste kyng, by ys power, dude hym þe seruage,  
 And sende hym þys wolues fram gere to gere.  
 • þre þousend at certeyn termes þat lond deliuered were.  
 þre ger he huld ys rente, ac þe berþe was by hynde.  
 Mor he sende þe kyng word, þat he ne mygte nanmo yfynde,  
 And þat was lute wonder, þat to hale þer were by byne.  
 Mor al þat lond were þe wors, adde hit byleued alyne.  
 Woþe Walys and Engeland þe betere ys þeruer gat,  
 And þeruer þe gade man yt dude more þan þat prate.  
 þys gode kyng Edgar, þat so stalworde kyng was,  
 And wps Ƴ hardy þoru out al, bote lute of hody nas,  
 þeruer þe kyng of Scotland ennye adde þerto,  
 And 3 as he sat at mete, Ƴ mony oþer kyngt al so,

1. L. Doute. 2. Hundred by fel atte a fest, where many  
 alii. Et sic etiam scriptor pro- wordes communliche ben  
 saicus in Cod. Ar. 3. And so spoke, kynad, kyng of Scots  
 tes,

He seyde a wel heȝ word among ȝs hȝngtȝn echon,  
 þat he adde gret hoher, (ȝ wonder nas ȝt non)  
 Of a so lute halne man, as hȝng Edgar was,  
 þat þer nas lond ne prince non, þat of hȝm adrad nas.  
 Hȝs word com to þe hȝng Edgar, þerfor he þogte hȝm teche,  
 Wuch were þe halne man, ȝȝf he myȝte hȝm of reche.  
 He com and mette hȝm in a wode, and bed hȝm abyde,  
 And he adde vor þe nonen tueȝe ſuerbes bȝ ȝs lȝde.  
 He drou out boȝs tuo, and bed hȝm nȝme an honde,  
 And cheſe weȝer he wolde, and þen halne man bonde,  
 And loke wer þe halne man hȝm myȝte out at ſonde.  
 Wor dereȝnȝ hȝl wolde hem ſulne tuo, ȝ talke Gode's ſonde.  
 þe oȝer bel adoun ahne anon rȝgt vor drede,  
 And cryde hȝm mercy vor Gode's loue of þat he myȝt ſeyde.  
 Hȝng Edgar adde reuȝe of hȝm, ſo reuȝȝch he gan criȝ.  
 "ȝȝre hȝng," he ſeyde, "ech god man ȝt ȝs byleȝnȝe  
 "To be of bold word atte mete, ȝ coward in þe belde.  
 "Underſtonde þe bet eſſone, and hold me hȝn helde.  
 þe godenelle al of hȝng Edgar none tonge telle ne may.  
 Monȝ was þe god abbeȝ þat he rerde bȝ ȝs day.  
 Seynt Edward þe marter, as ȝch ſeyde er, was ȝs ſone  
 Bȝ ȝs raȝers myȝt, and Seynt : Eȝȝe of Wyȝtone.

tes, in his borde ſelde thus :  
 "He wondreth," quath he,  
 "that ſuche an halfe man as  
 "Edgar ſhalde wyne ſo ma-  
 "ny proninces Auȝor profai-  
 cus in Cod. Ar.

1. Atqui cave ſis, ne pro filia  
 legitima habeas. Spuria etenim

erat, ȝ Wlfritha ſive Wlfrida ab  
 Edgardo ſuſcepta. Inde *Will. Mal-*  
*meſb.* (f. 33. b.) "Nam de Egel-  
 "ſleda, cognomento candida  
 "filia Ordmeri ducis potentiſſimi  
 "Edwardum genuit, ȝ ſanctam  
 "Editham de Wlfritha, [al. Wlfritha]  
 "de] quam certum eſt non tunc  
 "ſancti-

"sanctimoniam fuisse, sed ti-  
 "more Regis puellam laicam se  
 "velavisse, moxque eandem ar-  
 "repto velo lecto imperiali sub-  
 "actam: Unde offensum bea-  
 "tum *Dunstanum*, quod illam  
 "concupisset, quæ vel umbratice  
 "sanctimonialis fuisset, vigorem  
 "Pontificalem in eam egisse."

Quæ verba & ipsum etiam au-  
 ctorem proficuum in Codice  
 ob oculos habuisse compertum  
 habeo, quamvis Sanctam Edi-  
 tham non nominet. Sic nempe  
 ille: *To this Cunsampl of*  
*crumelte* (jam antea locutus  
 fuerat de Ethelwoldo, ab Edgaro  
 occiso, eo quod minus honeste  
 sese gessisset in negotio ad filiam  
 ducis Devoniz, Venere quasi  
 ipsa formosior, pertinente)  
 er Dade, his *soos putte* a  
 nother, that is to saye, that  
*Wulfride* monachyn i sacred  
 he toke out of hure abbey, &  
 Delt with her *holoyng* his  
 lemman. Which *Poyn*t  
 whenne *Seynt Dunstons*  
*hurde*, he blamed and vnder-  
 name the kyng *hogeliche*, so  
 that he sette bi. yeris pe-  
 naunce vpon him, the which  
 he toke on hym, that is to say  
 of, and that bi. yere he bare  
 no crowne. But summe saith,  
 that this *Wulfride* was nat  
 vereliche a nonne, bote that  
 for drede of the kyng a Secu-  
 ler woman i deyled, and a  
 none the bette so i Deo a way,

& take to the kyng's bette  
 but nat for than *Dunstons*  
 Dade the lawe a yent the  
 kyng as for a nonne, saith that  
 the kyng wolde conceyte agi,  
 whether she were veryghe  
 bette or no. But hem is  
 ever then this [sic] thynges  
 were, certeyne hit is, that  
 fro the xbi. yere of his age,  
 which yere he was ordeyned  
 kyng, a non to the xxx. yere  
 him lakked his coronyng.  
 And thenne was he crowned  
 at the Bathe, and lynyed after  
 but iii. yere. Neque hac in re  
 magni æstimandam esse censeo  
 auctoritatem rotulæ cujusdam  
 membranæ, sermone Gallico,  
 penes Richardum Graveium,  
 amicum illum eruditissimum, de  
 Mickleton in agro Gloucesteri-  
 ensi, in qua rotula tanquam filia  
 legitima commemoratur Editha,  
 contra fidem scriptorum opti-  
 morum. Hæc enim verba ro-  
 tulæ: *Aceti Edgar auoit. ii.*  
*femmes, le vne apres lautre.*  
*De la primer il engendra*  
*Edward, he puis fu martyr,*  
*e Seint Edith. De la secunde*  
*Samun e Ethelred.* Quam ta-  
 men rotulam idcirco plurimi  
 faciendam esse duco, quod ple-  
 risque, quas vidi, sit antiquior,  
 picturasque regum ac principum  
 exhibeat, minus equidem ele-  
 gantes, sed quæ antiquariis mul-  
 tis in rebus usui esse possint. Sed  
 (quod dolendum) imperfecta  
 est

He deyde & mende to heuene nyn hundred & ych wene  
As in þe of grace, and fyrty and fyftene.

**S**eynt Edward þe martyr, ys eldere sone,  
After hym was hyng ymad, as lame was & moue.  
þe godnesse of þys gonge hyng ne may no tonge telle.  
Nor he was mek & mylde ynon, & byr of self & selle,  
Debonere to speke wyl, & wylþ pouere men mek.  
Chast and wys of counseyll, and pure þe soude lell.  
Wylde men ne louede he noght, þat rethylen were of þeght,  
Ac wysse men he dreu to hym, & after hem he wroghte.  
Ech gret dede þat he dide, þe mellibedel folde go.  
After þe archebyschop Doys Doucton, þat men þe.  
Gode pes þer was in Engeland, & lone & loye ynon,  
And rychele by ys daye, nor elles yt were wylþ men.  
To þe godnesse of þys halymon þe denel adde manye,  
And þe luper quene ys shepmoder, þat hel was of trecherie.  
Nor heo þegte nygt & day, ȝyf heo myȝte þoru eny þyng  
þat Seynt Edward were assawe, & þre lone ymad hyng.  
þe ȝer þat he ymadred was þe hepts men of þe lond  
In þe toum of Calne more, as ȝch vaderhoude.

est rotula, quippe quæ incipit  
ab Athelstano rege, desinitque  
cum Edwardo post conquestum  
primo, priori parte, pariter at-  
que posteriori, abscissa, & forsi-  
tan funditus deperdita, in cujus  
sanæ Athelstani regis pictura il-  
lud plane observatu dignissimum  
esse video, quod sceptrum sive  
insigne regium in manu teneat

sinistra, veterum ad amussim re-  
ferens *Saxonicus*. minime ab-  
surde, quum princeps esset bel-  
licosissimus, clayaque Herculeæ  
usum fuisse censerent hostes. cu-  
jusmodi tamen *Saxonicus* neuti-  
quam, quod sciam, videtur in  
nummis Athelstanianis.

i. Adde, ȝer.

35

He hit lete in an chambre an heȝ in counseyl of speche  
 þe her to brac under hem, as yt were vor wrecche,  
 And hit belle and debrufede somme anon to depe,  
 And somme ymayned, & somme yhurt, so þat enȝ vnschepe,  
 Wyþoute gret harm, of scapeþe, bote Seyn Dunston by cas,  
 þat hente hym by a dem, and ysaned was.  
 Wat by tokneþe þys, þat þe heyme men belle so,  
 Bote þat hit and al þat lond byneþe folde be ydo,  
 þoru folc of strange lond, and þat me folde yle,  
 Her hit soffreþe her kyng so byllȝche y morþred be.  
 Her a day as Seyn Edward an honter wende by cas  
 In an wode in Dorsete, þat bysyde Warham was,  
 þat bayr wode was þulke tyme, a gret wyllc hym com to,  
 Her to yle ys gonge broþer, (vor anon he þogte yt do.)  
 Her he was a lute þer bysyde, as ys shepmoder was,  
 In an tonn, þat me cluped Corf, þat bote þre myle þanne was.  
 A strong castel þer ys non, ac þo nas non þere.  
 Longe þogte Seynt Edward at ys broþer ar he were.  
 In bewen men myd hym he nom, & þader ward gan ryde.  
 Hys men pleyde by þe wey, & spradde aboute wyde.  
 So þat þys holy kyng alone was sene,  
 And alone wende vorþ, as he þogte to done.  
 þo hys lufur shepmoder alone yseȝ hym comt,  
 heo þogte do þre wyllc of hym, as heo adde yr red y nome.  
 þo þys holy man was neȝ ycome, þe quene agen hym eode  
 Wyþ noble mayne ynou, & gret loue hym gan bede.  
 þe sefte þat heo wyþ hym made non tonge telle ne may.  
 heo snor, þat he folde alȝhte, & bylene myd yre al day.

---

 1. Warham ar.

"Certes,

"Certes, madame," quap þys oþer, "so ne may yt aȝt be.  
 "Ac lat me speke myð my broþer, þer me longep hym to be.  
 "Thor ar ych hym abbe yleȝe, y ne worþe aȝt biþs ymþe,  
 "Wyn herte ys so mucþe on hym, & non wouder hit nys.  
 "A, fyre," quap þys lufþer quene, "wanne yt ne may oþer be,  
 "Thorst ych wolle to þe drynke, & þapþe þou shalt hym yde.  
 "As me hym drynke to, on was prest ynon,  
 "And þoru ys wombe smot a knyft, and ys gotten to dreg.  
 A long knyft yt was & smal y non, as me may þat yde  
 Atte chyrche of Manerham, as he aþ ȝare yde.  
 þys holyman sat by ryȝt, & yleȝe ys deþ's wounde.  
 He ne rod bote lute weȝ, ar he bel to greunde,  
 An let þer ys suete lȝt, and to heuene wende.  
 Thweȝ! lute wel þogte he, þe me ys wombe reude.  
 þo þys holy man ymartred was, hit, þat hym þer bragte to,  
 Wyþogte þou hit myȝte best myð þe holy body do.  
 Hit þorneȝde an derne stude, & þer inne yt casþe  
 Wyllȝe & Wyllȝe, & bured yt þer baþe.  
 þo þys dede was ydo, þe quene adde al hyre wyllȝe,  
 (Thor me <sup>1</sup> þal euere myð þe quȝke,) þe dede was sone kyllȝe.  
 Seynt Edward þe <sup>2</sup> byfþe ȝer of ys kynedom  
 Eȝen eue aday aflawe was in such martedom.

**A** Eldred, þe quene sone, þat kyng was ymad þe,  
 His bote of ten ȝer old, þo ys moder dode þys wo.  
 He of þys dede nuþte he nogt, bote as God ȝef þat cas.  
 An þe <sup>4</sup> lust he hurde anheȝ, as he alone was,

1. *Wolt* *W.* 2. *Wolt* *W.* mi- | hic, quam & in seqq. 4. *Wolke*  
*nus recte.* 3. *Ethelred* *W.* tam | he hurde *W.*  
 Vol. I. O O



Hys broþer, þat was affame, vȳtostlyche grede.  
 þet chyld cryde & sore wep, & ȳs moder þat cas seþe  
 Welle, þat hys laȳer quene anguyllous was þo.  
 1 þat chyld heo þente baſte anon, þat he ne moſte on bot go.  
 gerð ne bond heo preſt nou, þat chyld borto bete,  
 An hondful heo þente of 2 candlen longe and grete.  
 3 þat chyld heo bete 4 ſo ſtronge mȳð þe condlen long & towe,  
 Heo ne byleneðe noȳt ar he laȳ at hȳre bet yſwome.  
 5 Wærþorn hys chyld afterward, ſuch heȳ man as he was,  
 Was þe worſe man he ſey condlen bot hys cas.  
 Wat haſt yt to telle longer hys chyld me made kȳng,  
 Ac Seȳn Dunſton 6 wel" þunre wolde do þe ſacring.  
 7 Alor god man ſpek ek þerof wel longe bȳ uore,  
 þo he baptȳſed hys Aeldred, ſone ſo he was y bore.  
 Alor þe chyld ſuled in hys hond þe water & þe banſon,  
 Byuore byſkopes þat þer were, and heȳe men monȳ on,  
 And duðe hys kande fulþ hede. Seȳn Dunſton ſeyde anon,  
 þat he ſolde of ſunne encheſon be, & of wrecþþede monȳ on.  
 And þo he ſolde 8 kȳng be, hys god man Seȳn Dunſton  
 Wateðe muche to crounȳ hym, ȳf he yt mȳȳte ver gon.  
 9 Ac þo he moſte neðe yt do, þoru pur loude's lawe,  
 "Sȳre kȳng," he ſeyde, "bot þou art mȳð burȳȳt herts ȳs  
 drawe,

1. The childe	Ar.	2. Wex-	pheticd Dunſton long bȳ ſore,
chandellen	Ar.	3. The	Ar.
4. So ſore bette with	Ar.	Ar.	Tho that he chriſtened him
5. Wherfor euer afterward,	Ar.	Ar.	whenne he was bore
for this like cas,	Ar.	Ar.	Ar.
Whenne he	Ar.	Ar.	8. I crowned be, the godeman
ſuche candelen ſeiȳh,	Ar.	Ar.	Dunſton Wel loth he was to
the worſe him thought he was	Ar.	Ar.	croune
6. Deest	Ar.	Ar.	9. But whenne
7. Of him pro-	Ar.	Ar.	he moſt neðes hit do, by the
	Ar.	Ar.	loude's lawe,

"Up

"Up þy nome bened yt ſhal come þy moder in þer place  
 "þoru ſledþinge of þy brother blod, þat þus ys brogt of Dame.  
 "And þor Engliſſe men were wel ſpayd  
 "In ſledþinge of þy brother blod, þat ſo was bytrayd,  
 "þer þor her poer ſhal al clene hem be bynome,  
 "And þou al ſo. Wor ſtrange folc of ſtrange londe ſhal come,  
 "And þy lond þor þyn ſernage & to grounde ybrogt.  
 "And al þat ſhal come by þyne day, & by myne nogt.  
 "Alle laſte our Lonerd wolle of hem vnderſtonde.  
 And al þys word to ſoþe com ſupþe to Engeland.  
 gut Eſfred, þe in þer quene, þat Seynt Edward flou,  
 Of ȳre trepas, þynore ȳre deþ repentant was ynou,  
 And rerde tuo nonneries, Wormel þat one was,  
 And Ambresbury þet oþer, to bete ȳre treſpas,  
 An adde grace, ȳf God wolle, ȳre ſynne þor to bete,  
 And come to gode amendement, ar heo þat lyf lete.  
 þe þrydde ȳer, as yt wolde be, of Hyldrede's kyndom,  
 þe bygynnyng of þys ſorwe to Engeland þerſt come.  
 Wor of þe volc of Denemarch þer arinede þo,  
 Alle þanene of Souþ hamtone, ſene ſlyp vol & 2 nanmon,  
 An robbede þe toun baſte, at her poer noþyng nas.  
 þys was as a tokne þat to comyng was,  
 As by Seynt Dunſtone's day nanmore þer ne com.  
 Wor he deyde þe teþe ȳer of þe kyng's kyndom,

1. On the alſo ſtrange folke  
 of other londe ſhall come.  
 This londe worth is ſernage,  
 and be to grounde i brought  
 Ar. Igitur pro þor þyn repo-  
 nerem worþ yn, i.e. ſhall be to.

2. Romo, And gonne to robbe  
 faſte a bonte, but litte here  
 power nas. This was the  
 firſt tokene of woo to come  
 that was, But by Dun-  
 ſtone's.

002

And

And nine hundred yow & eyght & eyghtety after þat God was  
glare.

And þe byshop Seynt Ethelred was ded þer bynere,

And Seynt Ethelred þe byshop after þis god,

As in þe 1 þristene god þat þe kyng cronos her.

þat þataraþen yt was þer hem þe wule his were alyne.

þat after þer hys sone, þe sownes sprange byne.

1. xiii. gere. 2. The bet-  
ter. 3. But after her,  
dayes sone sownes sprang  
ryne. This kyng as he hadde  
a wyf, he gat ane sone bi a  
symple woman, that worthy  
euer in mane, that, for his  
strength, called was Edmund  
Trenside. for so ordeyned knyght  
me ne knewe wile. 4.  
minus quidem recte, & contra  
fidem eximii probique nostri hi-  
storici Roberti, qui plane docuit,  
Edmundi matrem uxorem re-  
vera fuisse Ethelredi. id quod  
etiam fecerunt alii optimæ notæ  
scriptores, (inter quos iure opti-  
mo censendus eruditissimus Bra-  
dius) secus atque illi, qui, parti-  
bus addicti, nothum Edmun-  
dum (e concubina nimirum ge-  
nitum) fuisse produnt, in quibus  
& ipse erat Jacobus Fyrtellus, qui  
tamen, paullo antequam satis  
concessisset, me monuit in Le-  
lando nostro, (Coll. Vol. VI. p.  
75.) senectutiam mutare, ut e  
nota quadam liquet in Biblio-  
theca Bodlejana ab ipso Jacobo

propria manu in Historia sua  
Angliæ generali scripta, quam  
simul atque commodum fuerit  
consulas velim. Ceterum & illud  
notandum est, per symple man  
man in Cod. 4. non aliud  
quam *ignobilium feminam* esse in-  
telligendum, de qua re nos et-  
iam breviter egimus in Lelando.  
id quod etiam viderat auctor  
poeticus in Cod. 4. ubi de  
Edmundo sic scribit: *This  
kynges [Ethelred] sone was  
not of Guntre quene, but of  
a nother woman unknown to  
the commune peple. Rather  
he was a faire, iolyf yong  
man, a strong man and hardy,  
and for thi of Englyshmen  
was he cleped Edmund  
Trenside. He muche a leide þe  
romanyke of his land, and  
þe loughnesse of his moder in  
him self thorgh his vertu no-  
blech.* Atque hæc chartis  
mandaveram priusquam rotulam  
(cujus supra, p. 286. mentionem  
fecit) Gravestanam vidissem, quæ  
tamen nec ipsa illis favet, qui  
Ed-

þe kyng ande by þys werke myf one schawende done,  
 þat, vor þys schawendhed, longe wote in mone.  
 Wor me ne wond non so gode knyght nare so þe wende wyde.  
 We cleped hym, vor þys strengþe, *Emund Jrensyde.*  
 þe formes, as ych chobbe ytold, spronge aboute ysame.  
 Wor þat folc of Denemarch done to londe come,

Edmundum nothum fuisse velint. Contra, picturæ tanquam primogenitum heredemque Ethelredi exhibent, verbaque ipsa filium ex uxore non è concubina fuisse innuunt. hæc nempe, pro interpunctione rotulæ. *Ætli Ethelred engendra Camun Jrensyde de tunc femme aliene he fu la soer au duc de Normandie. si engendra alured he fu frat par Gondeuyn count de bent. E Edward le confessor he gist a Westmoster.* E quibus verbis non est quod colligas, Edmundi matrem fuisse ducis Normannie sororem, quæ tamen (utpote Ethelredi uxor secunda) Aluredi atque Edwardi mater vera erat. Id quod satis erit manifestum, si hoc modo verba rotule distinguantur. *Ætli Ethelred engendra Camun Jrensyde. De uno femme aliene, he fu la soer au duc de Normandie, si engendra Alured, he frat par Gondeuyn count de bent, e Edward*

ward le Confessor, he gist a Westmoster. Hæc distinctio si probetur, id unigue liquet, rotulæ auctorem Edmundi matrem ignobilem itidem fuisse censuisse, nihilque perinde de eadem à seipso fuisse dicendum. Ceterum non diffiteor, alibi etiam de Edmundi Jrensyde matre locutum fuisse scriptorem profaicum in codice *Æ.* eamque pro concubina habuisse. *After the death (inquit ille) of Kent, Harold the elder de knut, kyng of Engelande, regned Seynt Edward the Confessor, Edmund Jrensyde's brother in his father's hall, that is to seye of Ethelred kyng, but nat in the moder. for this Edmund Jrensyde was gete of unlawfulle bedde, thonghe he were noble and stronge in batayle.* Atque hæc sub Henrico II. tradit, ubi de Henrico II. stemmate agit, verba dictæ interim innuens è Chronicis Gallicis se produxisse.

And

And anour all þyn land þe haueuen his adde yfeght.  
 So þat Morpomerleund was al to grounde ybreght.  
 Kent hit destrude also god, & þe Est contreye myde.  
 ' Grete hit barnde al adoun, & in þe West syde.  
 Al kyng worrede ofte agen, as he mygte do.  
 He wreche of yn broþer deþ wel harde hym com to.  
 Alor hym poer was lute worþ. þer he get hem atten ende  
 Four þousend pound of sterlynges, hem agen to wende.  
 So þat hym quene deyde, and of forme and sore  
 Hym com in eche half, enere þe leng þe more.  
 Alor þe Deneys come agen, and in eneryche ende  
 Hym worrede her & þer, þat he nuste wuder wende.  
 He byþoghte hym wel narwe, gyf þer mygte be eny red  
 þoru wyngunge, oþer þoru eny þyng, ' þer hym myf was ded.'  
 He baden God, þat Rycharð, Duc of Normandye,  
 Was man of gret poer, and of gret freghourte.  
 Alor Emme, hym ' gode doghter,' he sende ofte ys soude,  
 To spouse hyre and to make hyr quene of Engeland,

1. The West contre also  
 they wonne Denenshire, And  
 the Tonne of Exceſtre sette  
 thay a fyr. Our kyng wer-  
 red *Ar.* 2. Tam hic quam &  
 alibi mire omnia permutantur  
 in *Ar.* ita scilicet, ut hac verba  
 plane omittat, ne Edmundi *Ar.*  
 renſide matrem Ethelredi uxo-  
 rem fuiſſe agnoſceret. 3. God  
 ſuſter, *Ar.* Sed discrepantia  
 inde orta, quia Richardus &

Emma filii erant Richardi pri-  
 mi, ducis Normanniz. Hinc  
 certe ſcriptor proſaicus in eod.  
 Codice *Ar.* Ches [Emme]  
 was Richarde's doghter,  
 Duc of Normandie, which. *L.*  
 wynter after William his ſe-  
 der gouerned thulke Duchie,  
 which the xviii. yere this  
 kyng deyde. And after him  
 came Richarde the II. whas  
 ſuſter was thers Emme.

þat

þat he myȝte, þoru alyance, eny help vndergo,  
 To wyte hym fram hem of Denemarch, þat dade þys lond  
 to wo.

So þat þo hit were aton, þe sponſynge was ydo,  
 As in þe ger of grace a þouſend and tuo,  
 And of þe kynge's crounynge in four & twenty þe gere.  
 1 þe þogte þo kȳng, þat he adde of ys ſon þe laſte ſere.  
 2 And here ſprong, 1st þe worſke more as of hem of Normandye,  
 Ware þoru hit come in to þys lond, & 3 abbeþ þe mayſtre.  
 Wor þe kȳng adde by 4 þys. *M. tneye ſones jwys,*  
*Alfred, & Seynt Edward þat at Weſtmynſtre yſtryned ys.*  
 And of þulke blode ſupþe Wyllam baſtard com,  
 As ge ſolls her after yþure, and wan þys kȳnedom.  
 þat poer muche of Denemarch in þes wyntoute ſtryf  
 Was hem jwend to Denemarch, ar þe kȳng weddede wȳf.  
 þe kȳng, vor ys grette poer, as of ys 5 wȳnnynge,  
 Alle þe Deneys, þat were hȳlened, he let to deþe bringe  
 In a Seynt Breyce day, and in one day echon,  
 þat non nere of oþere jwar, ne þat þer ne of ſcapede non.  
 Swan, þe Duc of Denemarch, þo he hurde of þys cas,  
 Maðe hym wroþ & wodȳnon, & eche þat wȳþ hym was.  
 Hit greyþed hem myð gret poer, and to Engeland come  
 As in þe nyne & tȳentyþe ger of þe kȳnges kȳnedome,  
 6 Had in þe ger of grace a þouſend and þre.  
 Hit ſlome & ſorme dade pȳon, nomore ne myȝte be.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 1. <i>Thenne pro þo in</i> <i>Ar.</i><br>2. <i>Ther ſprong vȳpe tho the</i><br><i>ferſt more of hem of Nor-</i><br><i>mandye, Ar.</i> 3. <i>Hadde the</i><br><i>ſeignourie Ar.</i> 4. <i>This que.</i> | 11. <i>ſones Jwys Ar. rectius.</i><br><i>niſi forſitan M. pro Mſtreſs</i><br><i>vel Mſtreſs five domina ac-</i><br><i>cipias. 5. L. wȳnnynge. 6. L.</i><br><i>and cum Ar.</i> |
|--|---|

So

So þyche hit come, þat þe lond ouer al hit goume falle,  
 As þyche as ameten crepeþ in an amete hulle.  
 By þerþe and by Souþe, in þe Est and in þe West,  
 So þyche hit come, þat me nulle in much half kepe best.  
 Hit ne sparede prest ne clerc, þat hit ne slawe to grounde,  
 Ne men of celygion, were so hit eny founde.  
 Ne womanne, ne soukyng chyldre, ne doghter, ne sone.  
 Hit herbarude þermych, and þe town of Wyntone.  
 þat a realych lond was Engeland, & fol of forme ynou.  
 Hit mygte acorsly þe "sale" quene, þat Seynt Edward slea.  
 "Her Swan, þe lufes duc, adde enere ys yuere  
 þre selawes, þat next hym were, in echt manere  
 Bereynyngs and robberye, and queillyng atte laste.  
 þys were þys þre selawes, þat he hald enere bakke.  
 Whanne at an god manne's hous þe men were at tyme,  
 Hork hit wolde etc & drynke þat hit found þer tyme,  
 And suppe þe lord of þe hous quelle and alle þys,  
 And suppe breuue al ys hous, as þor þer scot ywys.  
 Suche were þo þe gytas þat hyder come þo.  
 Suche as Engeland ydrens forme and mo.  
 West we hit dade in Warchyre, and by Westdonne,  
 And so aboute Daychelmefley, and so in mony tounne.  
 Atte laste kyng Hyldred, þo he was to grounde ybrot,  
 And muche of þe lond esclawe and destruyd al to nort,

1. Deest 2. With this  
 Swan, the lufes duc, iii.  
 selawes were, Enere selawing  
 hym, of lufes manere, Rob-  
 bryng and breuwyng, & que-  
 llyng the last. These made

myche folke of him fore a gark.  
 Most sorow they dade in  
 Werke þere aboute West-  
 donne, And aboute Daychelmef-  
 ley they stroyed many a  
 tounne.

Swan,

Swan, þe duc of Denemarch, he gef atte nende  
 Fulle þryttý þousend pound, to Denemarch to wende,  
 And bylene þys lond in pes, so þat þys was ydo.  
 Ac lute-ýt was ar þer com wel more wo þerta.  
 Wor þe kýng Ælðred, ýsley ýs lond al bare  
 Of þe folc of Denemarch, he nolde nogt gut be ýwar,  
 Ac let gadery anewe host, þorn al Engeland wel myde,  
 Of heye men and of lowe eke, ýgadered by þe hyde,  
 þat euere eygte hyde lond an man hym sould fynde  
 Wyþ helm & haubert, & þe atyl, þat non nere byhynde;  
 And grepped hem slyppes in þe see, ac al nas worþ asyll.  
 1 Wor þo ýs coust was al ydo, he mygte let abbe ýbe sylle.  
 To Swan, duc of Denemarch, þe tytunge sone com.  
 Þys ost and þys poer wyþ hym sone þe nome.  
 And in þe þousend ger of grace, & þe teþe ger al so,  
 And of br kýnge's crounement þryttý ger and tuo,  
 In an holy þores day, to þys lond he come,  
 And þen toun of Gyþeswých myd strengþe sone nome,  
 And robbede aboute in þe lond, and tounes adoun caste.  
 Ac þe contreye of Granteburgge agen hem stod vaste,  
 And fogte al þe stalwarde men, þe wule her poer ýlaste,  
 Ac hit were, as hit nede moste, býneþs atte laste.  
 And þere was þe kýnge's suster sone ýslawe Æþelston,  
 And barons and knýgtes, and heye men monýon.  
 Aboute herneft 2 þys Deneys as roters arnde  
 By Chylterne to Orenford, and 3 þen toun barnde.

---

1. Tho all the cost was i	ther more wende Ar.	3.
made, hit myght as well a be	thane tounne brende Ar..	
stille Ar.	2. The Danes fur-	
Vol. I.	P p	þo



þo wende hit berf of Denemarch, & robbed al Ester,  
 And guto bruggesfyr & Estangle, & alle myddel fyr.  
 Bekynghamfyr & Drenfordfyr, & Wretfordfyr al so,  
 Bedenordfyr and haluendel Montjndouefyr þerto.  
 Northamtesfyr, and by Sonþe Temels Barrefyr,  
 And Seheres and Souþer, and Souþhamtesfyr.  
 An machel del of Wyntesfyr, and þo al þys was ydo,  
 Hit drome hem toward Canterbury, to robby þere al so.  
 In þe þousend ger of grace, and endlenene þerto,  
 þys tale com to Manterbury, robberye to do.  
 By tene houre leude day þe latere, & Wyelmasse day,  
 þys tale bysette Manterbury, and vasse bylay,  
 And gret raymoun of hem wyþtune ealle to be out of wo.  
 Ac þe archebyshop of þe toum, Seynt Alfe þat was þo,  
 Was vasse þer agen to gynne eny raymoun.  
 þe Deneys bor wraþþe þe aseyled vass þe toum,  
 And wounne hym, & vasse slowe, & þo hit wyþtune com,  
 Seyn men, þat þer inne were, and Seynt Alfe hit nome,  
 And monkes, & þe toum barnde & adoun caste.  
 þe archebyshop Seynt Alfe hit heolde & bounde vasse,  
 And ladde hym byfyde London to þe toum of Greneswyche,  
 And heilde hym þer in prisson, þat he nas nan man ylyche,  
 Half ger and somdel more, and suppe in þe ger of grace  
 A þousend and twelf ger, hit ladde hym in an place  
 Wyþoute þe toum Greneswyke, & stenede hym wyþ stones  
 As me stenede Seynt Stenene, & debrusede ys bones.

1. L. Grantebruggesfyr. 2. I. c. Siphage. 3. To a place  
 4. And all to bruyed his bones &.

Atte laste myd a denchar me smot hym to grounde  
 In þe heneode, þat he lay, and deyde in askoude.  
 1 þe Saterdag, in þe Ester wouke, þys hely man hit slowe.  
 Ac veme þat mere atte dede þe bouerage býlome.  
 Wor somme by come cancrefete, & somme býnde oþer wode,  
 And somme deyde berlych as hit vp rygt stode.  
 So þat þor dede of þys wrecche þe Deneys were agode,  
 And wyþþron hem of þer lufes hede þe wails yt wolde y laste,  
 2 And þer was þe betere þer ager, and dunsche.  
 Wor in þe ȝer of grace a þousend and þretteþe  
 Swan, þe Duc of Denemarch, by gan to turne ys hond.  
 And after þat he adde destrud þe Sonþ alf of þys lond,  
 He woude and robbede al þys lond al þe Norþ syde,  
 Norþomber and Lendeleys, and destrude wyde  
 Enere fram Wateþungefret, and so by Drenford.  
 Hit come and nome Wyneþestre, and so Walyngford.  
 Fram Walyngford hit woude, & þe tonn of Wape nome.  
 So þat Swan was þys yþelde, ware so he euer come.  
 Ac þe þys of Engeland, in such sor & mournynge,  
 Carede of ys ȝonge sonen mek of alle þynge,  
 Laste hit more defoulde egt. þor hit ne couþe of sytunge.  
 þer þor into Normandy he let hem sone bynne,

1. This was on the Ester  
 [i. Ester] wouke in the Sa-  
 terday, As more plenner in  
 his lyf is ther of me may.  
 Many, that was atte his  
 deth, by com býnde & wode,  
 And summe dede sodeynlich  
 vp ryght as they stode.

2. Defunt omnia metra sequen-  
 tia in Cod. A. usque ad hoc  
 signum marginale (H) in  
 historia Edmundi Prencelyde,  
 quorum tamen loco perquam  
 multa occurrunt, oratione so-  
 luta scripta.

P p 2

Bope

Boþe Alfreð & Seign Edward, & þe quene þer moder alsa,  
 Wyþ þe Duc Rycharð, þe quene broþer, borte lach we were yða.  
 Ac hys eldoste sone Edmond yrenedyde,  
 Wer þe was hardy, & gode knygt, atome þe let abyde.  
 þat in þer folc of Denemarch robbede and slowe bakke,  
 And chyrcþyn and abbeys barnde and adoun caste.  
 Men ley on bured to drawe, þat renþe yt was ynou.  
 þat feble folc to wylþerneck and to wodes bakke drou.  
 Ryldred kyng of Engeland, þo þe ley al þys wo,  
 Hou me destruyde ys lond, and ys folc slou,  
 To myðewynter þe wende anon, þo þe ne sey oþer red,  
 To Normandye, & hald hym þere borte þe Duc Swan was ded.  
 Swan deyde in þe ȝer of grace a þousend and fourteþe.  
 Hys folc made enere bakke worre ȝut after ys deþe,  
 And made hys sone kyng after hym, knout was hys name,  
 þat Dede, aswel as hys fader, Engeland gret flame.  
 In false knyghtes of Engeland halde myð hym bakke,  
 Ac hit, þat trewe & gode were, agen hym þer herte caste,  
 And sende after kyng Ryldred into Normandye shyke,  
 And þe come sone to Engeland, and wende abbe ys wylle.  
 Ac þe kyng knout yt vnder ȝet, þe was fol of rage.  
 He wende anon to Sandwyç, & men þere in oþage,

---

1. — but sodenlyche he turned his sayles to ward Sandewyche, and wente a londe. And puttyng a way bothe Godde's drede and mane's, the hostages, whiche he hadde faire children of gret noblete, he let take and

kutte of hure noses and eres, and somme a blende. And whenne he had so ȝ doo, he tolde hit as for a grette sope, and glorie, that he hadde so defouled the Englysh hostages inquit auctor proficius in Cod, *Ar.*

þat

þat were bytake hys fader, þor heye men of þe londe,  
 He nom and let hym knyghte of boþe bet and honde.  
 Non adde heye men of þe lond ytake þere bynore  
 Hys fader ostage god ynou, and dep of ysnore,  
 Wyþ hym to holde treweleche, and breke þo her of.  
 þernore þe kyng knout wyþ hem was þo so wod wroþ,  
 And þor wroþþe let bylyme her ostages þat were.  
 Sapþe he wende into Westsax, and robbede þere,  
 And in Dorsete dunde & Wyldeslyre & Somersete gret wo.  
 Kyng Ryldred lay lyk in þe tonn of Cosham þo,  
 In Westende of Wyldeslyre, þor he was feble and old,  
 And wyþ care and sorwe overcome, as me aþ ytold.  
 In fram Cosham to Londone he of scapede banþe,  
 Herto wyte hym fram ys son, þat hit ne brogte hym to Depe.  
 þere he huld hym in þe tonn myd muche sorwe and sore,  
 þat of al hys lond of Engeland he nadde an fot more.  
 þe gates he made bakke, and huske hym wyþ inne.  
 His son asaylede þen tonn wyþoute myd al þer gynne.  
 Atte laste þys kyng Ryldred, as in al þys stryng,  
 In an Seyn Gregorye's day, wende out of þys lyng,  
 As in þe ger of grace a þousend & fyrteþe.  
 Feblýche he lynede al hys lyng, & deyde in feble Depe.  
 In suche sorwe he was kyng senene & þrytty ger.  
 He adde mony an sorý day, & muchel angnylle er,  
 An, þor wreche of hys broþer Dep, al such sorwe to hym come,  
 þat late soþe he adde al ys lyf of ys kenedom.

Edmond

**E**dmund frenschye, kyng Wyllerde's sone,  
 So gode knyght of body was, pat longe more in mon.  
 He wold be gode in noue londe, an alle bygyrnynge,  
 After his fader depe, me ches him to kyng,  
 He heye men of þe lond, pat fals ne lufte were.  
 He monye halde myd kyng knout, pat fals an tryshours were.  
 Edmund, der ys wrege, was scheped frenschye.  
 Dreuel he was to ys son, pat hym durste deme abyde.  
 Debonere and mylde he was to alle pat gode were.  
 Quere & kytte hardy men, as man wyfente fore.  
 Worst he wende to Westex, and þere ech contreye  
 Aboute al to ys wille depe der lene and eye.  
 An leon hardy yuen he wende aboute wyde,  
 An man contreye and oþer aboute in ech syde.  
 Pat knout hadde þer non agen him der to stonde,  
 Gif falsse traytors hadde yde here of Englonde,  
 Pat halde myd þe kyng knout, traytors as hit were.  
 So pat noper of þis kynges abonynde to oþer were,  
 He cyþer gadetode gret oþ, and of oþers men stene.  
 Alle laste myd her oþ to gadere mard hit drene,  
 And mette þam after mydamer, þe falsse of Seyn Iow,  
 And a gret batayle smyte byhyde þe town of Salken,  
 And stowe to grounde muche folk, & þe al man yde  
 He kynges & muche of her folk alyue partode atme.  
 He wende kyng Edmund to London myd ys route,  
 And al þat folk of Denemarch destrude þer aboute,  
 And draf hem out of þis lond, & gut nolde he nogt bliue,  
 He wende in to Westex þulke contreye to wyne.

Digitized by Google

And anour all þyn land þe haueus hit abbe yfegt.  
 So þat Northomberland was al to grounde ybregt.  
 Kent hit destrude also god, & þe Est contreye myde.  
 1 Grete hit barnde al adoun, & in þe West syde.  
 Al kyng worrede ofte agen, as he mygte do.  
 He wreche of yn broþer deþ wel harde hym com to.  
 Alor hym poer was lute worþ. þer he get hem atten ende  
 Four þousend pound of sterlynges, hem agen to wende.  
 So þat hym quene deyde, and of sorwe and sore  
 Hym com in eche half, euere þe leng þe more.  
 Alor þe Deneys come agen, and in eueryche ende  
 Hym worrede her & þer, þat he nyste wnder wende.  
 He byþoghte hym wel narwe, gyf þer mygte be eny red  
 þoru mynyng, oþer þoru eny þyng, 2 þer hym myf was ded.  
 He vader God, þat Rycharð, Duc of Normandy,  
 Was man of gret poer, and of gret freghoury.  
 Alor Emme, hym 3 gode doghter, he sende ofte yn soude,  
 To spouse hyre and to make hyr quene of Engeland,

1. The West contre also  
 they wonne Deneshire, And  
 the Tonne of Exceſtre sette  
 thay a fyr. Our kyng wer-  
 red *Ar.* 2. Tam hic quam &  
 alibi mire omnia permutantur  
 in *Ar.* ita scilicet, ut hæc verba  
 plane omittat, ne Edmundi *Ar.*  
 renſide matrem Ethelredi uxo-  
 rem fuiſſe agnoſceret. 3. God  
 ſuſter, *Ar.* Sed discrepantia  
 inde orta, quia Richardus &

Emma filii erant Richardi pri-  
 mi, ducis Normanniæ. Hinc  
 certe ſcriptor profuſus in eod.  
 Codice *Ar.* Theſ [Emme]  
 was Richarde's doghter,  
 Duc of Normandle, which. *L.*  
 wynter after William has ſa-  
 der gouerned thulke Duchie,  
 which the xviii. yere this  
 kyng deyde. And after him  
 came Richarde the II. whas  
 ſuſter was theſ Emme.

þat

þat he myȝte, þoru alyance, eny help vndergo,  
 To myte hym fram hem of Denemarch, þat dade þys lond  
 to wo.

So þat þo hit were aton, þe spousynge was ydo,  
 As in þe ger of grace a þousend and tuo,  
 And of þe kynge's crounynge in four & tuentý þe gere.  
 1 þo þogte þo kȳng, þat he adde of ys son þe lasse sere.  
 2 And here sprong, lo! þe borste more as of hem of Normandye,  
 Ware þoru hit come in to þys lond, & 3 abbeþ þe maystre.  
 Wor þe kȳng adde by 4 þys. *M. tweye sones ymyns,*  
*Alfred, & Seynt Edward* þat at Westymastre ysryned ys.  
 And of pulke blode suppe Wyllam bastard com,  
 As ge stolls her after yhere, and wan þys kȳnedom.  
 þat poer muche of Denemarch in pes wptoute strýf  
 Was hem ywend to Denemarch, ar þe kȳng weddede wyf.  
 þe kȳng, þor ys grette poer, as of ys 1 wȳnnynge,  
 Alle þe Deneys, þat were býlened, he let to Deþe bringe  
 In a Seynt Bryce day, and in ons day echon,  
 þat non nere of sþere ywar, ne þat þer ne of scrapede non.  
 Swan, þe duc of Denemarch, þo he hurde of þys cas,  
 Made hym wroþ & wod ynou, & eche þat wyþ hym was.  
 Hit greýþed hem myd gret poer, and to Engeland come  
 As in þe nyue & tentyþe ger of þe kȳnge's kȳnedome,  
 6 And in þe ger of grace a þousend and þre.  
 Hit slowe & sorwe dade ynou, nomore ne myȝte be.

1. <i>Thenne pro þo in</i> <i>Ar.</i>	11. <i>sones I mȳs</i> <i>Ar. rectius.</i>
2. <i>Ther sprong vyþe tho the</i>	<i>nisi forsitan</i> <i>M. pro</i> <i>Wistrels</i>
<i>ferk more of hem of Nor-</i>	<i>vel</i> <i>Wistrels</i> <i>five domus ac-</i>
<i>mandye, Ar.</i>	<i>cipias. 5. L. wȳnnynge. 6. L.</i>
3. <i>Hadde the</i>	<i>and cum</i> <i>Ar.</i>
<i>seignourie Ar.</i>	
4. <i>This que.</i>	



So þyche hit come, þat þe lond ouer al hit goume falle,  
 As þyche as ameten cropeþ in an amete hulle.  
 By þeepe and by Souþe, in þe Est and in þe West,  
 So þyche hit come, þat us nahte in much half kepe bek.  
 Hit us sparede prest us clere, þat hit us slawe to grounde,  
 He men of relygyon, were so hit eny founde.  
 He womman, ne sonkyng chyld, ne doughter, ne sone.  
 Hit herbarude þermych, and þe town of Wylytoun.  
 þat a reulych lond was Engeland, & fol of forme ynon.  
 Hit mygte acorly þe 'fale' quene, þat Seynt Edward slou.  
 'Wor Swan, þe lufur dar, adde enere ys yuere  
 þre selawen, þat next hym were, in echt manere  
 Breywys and robberye, and quellyng atte laste.  
 þys were þyn þre selawen, þat he hald enere bak.  
 Wanne at an god manne's hous ys men were at inne,  
 Werst hit wolde etc & drynke þat hit found þer inne,  
 And suppe þe lound of þe hous quelle and alle þyn,  
 And suppe drewe al ys hous, as þor þer scot ywyn.  
 Suche were þo þe gyftes þat hyder come þo.  
 Spuche ap Engeland yderys forme and me.  
 West we hit dade in Warchyre, and to Melsdonne,  
 And so aboute Dnycheinesley, and so in many tounne.  
 Atte laste kyng Wyldred, þo he was to grounde ybrest,  
 And muche of þe lond aslame and destruyd al to next,

1. Deest 2. With this  
 Swan, the lufur dake, iii.  
 selawen were, Enere folwyng  
 hym, of lufur manere, Rob-  
 ert and brennyng, & quelly-  
 yng the last. These made

myche folke of him fore a gult.  
 Most sorow they dade in  
 Werke þere aboute Mels-  
 donne, And aboute Dnychei-  
 nes they stroyed many a  
 tounne.

Swan,

Suan, þe duc of Denemarch, he gef atte nende  
 folle þrytty þousend pound, to Denemarch to wende,  
 And byleue þys lond in pes, so þat þys was ydo.  
 Ac late yt was ar þer com wel more wo þerto.  
 Mor þe kyng Hyldred, yfey ys lond al bare  
 Of þe folc of Denemarch, he nolde next gut be ywar,  
 Ac let gadery anewe host, þoru al Engeland wel wyde,  
 Of heye men and of lowe eke, ygadered by þe hyde,  
 þat euere eygte hyde lond an man hym wolde fynde  
 Wyþ helm & hanbert, & þe atyl, þat non nere byhynde;  
 And grepped hem slyppes in þe see, ac al nas worþ asytle.  
 Mor þo ys coust was al ydo, he mygte let abbe ybe sylle.  
 To Suan, duc of Denemarch, þe tytynge sone com.  
 Hys ost and hys poer wyþ hym sone he nome.  
 And in þe þousend ger of grace, & þe tepe ger al so,  
 And of br kynges crownement þrytty ger and tuo,  
 In an holy þores day, to þys lond he come,  
 And þen toun of Gypeswych myd strengþe sone nome,  
 And robbede aboute in þe lond, and tonnes adoun caste.  
 Ac þe contreye of Grantbrugge agen hem stod vaste,  
 And fogte al þe stalwarde men, þe wule her poer ylaste,  
 Ac hit were, as hit nede mošte, byneþe atte laste.  
 And þere was þe kynges suster sone yflame Apelston,  
 And barons and knyghtes, and heye men monyon.  
 Aboute herneft <sup>2</sup> þys Deneys as roters arnde  
 By Chylterne to Orenford, and <sup>3</sup> þen toun barnde.

1. Tho all the cost was i ther more wende Ar. 3.  
 made, hit myght as well a be Chane tounne brende Ar..  
 stille Ar. 2. The Danes fur-  
 Vol. I. Pp þo

þo wende hit beþ of Denemarch, & robbed al Ester,  
 And 1 gnte bruggesfyr & Estangle, & aile Wyndel sex.  
 Bekynghamfyr & Orentedfyr, & Werthfordfyr al so,  
 Bedenordfyr and haluendel Pontyndounefyr þerto.  
 Northamtesfyr, and by Souþe Temele Warchfyr,  
 And Seperete and Souþer, and Souþhamtesfyr.  
 In machedel of Wyntesfyr, and þo al þys was ydo,  
 Hit drowe hem toward Canterbury, to robby þere al so.  
 In þe þousend ger of grace, and endienene þerto,  
 þys folk com to Kanterbury, robberye to do.  
 By tuene hour leuede day þe latere, & Wyntmasse day,  
 þys folk bysette Kanterbury, and wakke bylay,  
 And gret raymon of hem wyþinne caste to be out of we.  
 Ac þe archebyshop of þe toun, Seynt 2 Alfe þat was þo,  
 Was wakke þer agen to gýne eny raymon.  
 þe Deneys bot wraþþe þo asaylede wak þe toun,  
 And wounne hym, & wakke stowe, & þo hit wyþ inne com,  
 Weymen, þat þer inne were, and Seynt Alfe hit nome,  
 And monkes, & þe toun barnde & adoun caste.  
 þe archebyshop Seynt Alfe hit heolde & bounde wakke,  
 And ladde hym byfyde Londoff to þe toun of Grenewych,  
 And heilde hym þer in prison, þat he nas nan man ylyche,  
 Half ger and somdel more, and suppe in þe ger of grace  
 3 þousend and twelf ger, hit ladde hym 3 in an place  
 Wyþoute þe toun Grenewyke, & stenede hym wyþ stones  
 As me stenede Seynt Stenene, 4 & debrufede ys bones.

1. L. Grantebruggesfyr. 2. I. c. Elphege. 3. To a place  
 4. And all to bruyed his bones &c.

Atte laste myd a benchar me snat hym to grounde  
 In þe benede, þat he lay, and deyde in akounde.  
 1 þe Saterdag, in þe Ester wonke, þys haly man hit flowe.  
 Ac þeme þat were atte dede þe benerege býlome.  
 Wor somme by come cancrefete, & somme býnde oþer wode,  
 And somme deyde berlych as hit by rygt stode.  
 So þat þer dede of þys wrecche þe Denysn were agathe,  
 And wyþþron hem of her luper hede þe woude yt wolde y laste,  
 2 And þer was þe betere þen ager, and bruche.  
 Wor in þe ȝer of grace a þousend and þretteþe  
 Swan, þe duc of Denemarch, by gan to turne ys hound.  
 And after þat he adde destrud þe þowþ alf of þys lond,  
 He woude and robbede al þys lond al þe þowþ fyde,  
 Northomber and Lpudelys, and destrude wyde  
 Caers fram Walsingestret, and so by Orenford.  
 Hit come and nome Wynechestre, and so Walyntord.  
 Fram Walyntord hit wende, & þe town of Wape nome.  
 So þat Swan was þys yholde, ware so he euer come.  
 Ac þe þys of Engeland, in such sor & mournyng,  
 Carede of ys ȝonge sonen mest of alle þysge,  
 Laste hit more desoulde egt. wor hit ne coude of fyrteuge.  
 þer þer into Normandys þe let hem lone bynge,

1. This was on the Ester  
 [1. Ester] wonke in the Sa-  
 terday, As more plenner in  
 his lyf is ther of me may.  
 Many, that was atte his  
 beth, by com býnde & wode,  
 And summe dede sodeynlich  
 by ryght as they stode.

2. Defunt omnia metra sequen-  
 tia in Cod. *Ar.* usque ad hoc  
 signum marginale (B) in  
 historia Edmundi Breneslyde,  
 quorum tamen loco perquam  
 multa occurrunt, oratione so-  
 luta scripta.

Boþe Alfred & Seynt Edward, & þe quene þer moder also,  
 Wiþ þe duc Rychard, þe quene brother, vorte such wo were ydo.  
 Ac hys eldoste sone Edmond yrcelyde,  
 For he was hardy, & gode knygt, atome he let abyde.  
 þat iuþer folc of Denemarch robbede and slowe bakke,  
 And chyrchys and abbeys barnde and adoun caste.  
 Men ley bi bured to drawe, þat reuþe yt was ynou.  
 þat feble folc to wyldernesse and to wodes bakke drou.  
 Aylfred kyng of Engeland, þo he sey al þys wo,  
 Hou me destruyde ys lond, and ys folc slou,  
 To mydewynter he wende anon, þo he ne sey oþer red,  
 To Normandye, & huld hym þere vorte þe duc Swan was ded.  
 Swan deyde in þe ger of grace a þousend and fourteþe.  
 Hys folc made euere bakke worre gyt after ys deþe,  
 And made hys sone kyng after hym, Knout was hys name,  
 þat dude, aswel as hys fader, Engeland gret flame.  
 In false knyghtes of Engeland hulde myd hym bakke,  
 Ac hit, þat trewe & gode were, agen hym her herte caste,  
 And sende after kyng Aylfred into Normandye skille,  
 And he come sone to Engeland, and wende abbe ys wille.  
 Ac þe kyng Knout yt vnder get, he was fol of rage.  
 He wende anon to Sandwyche, & men þere in skage,

1. — but sodenlyche he  
 turned his sayles to ward  
 Sandewyche, and wente a  
 londe. And puttyng a way  
 bothe Godde's hrede and  
 mane's, the hostages, whiche  
 he hadde faire children of  
 gret noblete, he let take and

kutte of hure noses and eres,  
 and somme a blende. And  
 whenne he had so ȝ doo, he  
 tolde hit as for a grette soþe,  
 and glorie, that he hadde so  
 defouled the Englysh hosta-  
 ges inquit auctor profanus in  
 Cod. Ar.

þat

þat were bytake hys fader, þor heye men of þe londe,  
 He nom and let hym smyte of boþe bet and honde.  
 Non adde heye men of þe lond ytake þere bynore  
 Hys fader oftage god ynou, and dep of ysnore,  
 Wyþ hym to holde treweleche, and breke þo her of.  
 þernore þe kyng knout wyþ hem was þo so wod wroþ,  
 And þor worapþe let bylyme her oftages þat were.  
 Supþe he wende into Westlex, and robbede þere,  
 And in Dorsete dunde & Wylytekyre & Somersete gret wo.  
 Kyng Ryldred lay lyk in þe toun of Cosham þo,  
 In Westende of Wylytekyre, þor he was feble and old,  
 And wyþ care and sorwe ouercome, as me aþ ytold.  
 An fram Cosham to Londone he of scapeþe bunsþe,  
 Herto myte hym fram ys son, þat hit ne brogte hym to deþe.  
 þere he huld hym in þe toun myd mucþe sorwe and sore,  
 þat of al hys lond of Engeland he nadde an fot more.  
 þe gates he made waste, and waste hym wyþ inne.  
 His son asayleþe þen toun wyþoute myd al þer gynne.  
 Atte laste þys kyng Ryldred, as in al þys stryue,  
 In an Seyn Gregory's day, wende out of þys lyue,  
 As in þe ger of grace a þousend & fyrteþe.  
 Febleche he lyuede al hys lyue, & deyde in feble deþe.  
 In suche forme he was kyng senene & þrytty ger.  
 He adde mony an sorý day, & muchel anguyße er,  
 An, þor wreche of hys broþer deþ, al such forme to hym come,  
 þat inte soþe he adde al ys lyf of ys kenedom.

Edmond

And mine hundred gew & eygts & eygty after þat Gab was  
yborn.

And þe byſſop Seynt Ethelmeð was ded þer bynere,

And Seynt Ethelmeð þe byſſop after þis gew,

As in þe 1 þetteþe gew þat þe kyng croone ber.

þ þer baterygeþe yt mas þer hem þe wule hit were alyne.

þ Ac after þer dæge ſone, þe ſermon ſprange biþne.

1. xiii. gere *Ar.* 2. The bet-  
ter *Ar.* 3. But after þer  
dæge ſone ſermon ſprang  
ryne. This kyng, as he hadde  
a wyf, he gat aue ſone Wi a  
ſymple woman, that worth  
euer in mane, That, for his  
ſtrength, called was Edmunde  
Trenſde. for ſo orped knyght  
me ne knewe wiðe *Ar.*  
minus quidem recte, & contra  
fidem eximii probique noſtri hi-  
ſtorici Roberti, qui plane docuit,  
Edmundi matrem uxorem re-  
vera fuiſſe Ethelredi. id quod  
etiam fecerunt alii optimæ notæ  
ſcriptores, (inter quos iure opti-  
mo cenſendus eruditiffimus Bra-  
dus) ſecus atque illi, qui, parti-  
bus addiſti, nothum Edmun-  
dum (e concubina nimirum ge-  
nitum) fuiſſe produnt, in quibus  
& ipſe erat Jacobus Tyrrellus, qui  
tamen, paullo antequam ſatis  
conceſſiſſet, me monente in Le-  
lando noſtro, (Coll. Vol. VI. p.  
75.) ſenſentiam mutauit, ut e  
nota quadam liquet in Biblio-  
theca Bodlejiana ab ipſo Jacobo

propria manu in Hiſtoria ſua  
Angliæ generali ſcripta, quam  
ſemel atque commodum fuerit  
conſulas velim. Ceterum & illud  
notandum eſt, per ſymple wō-  
man in Cod. *Ar.* non aliud  
quam ignobilium feminam eſſe in-  
telligendum, de qua re nos et-  
iam breuiter egimus in Lelando.  
id quod etiam viderat auctor  
proſicus in Cod. *Ar.* ubi de  
Edmundo ſic ſcribit: This  
kyng's [Ethelred] ſone was  
not of ſumme quene, but of  
a nether woman unknown to  
the commune peple. Rather  
he was a faire, ſoþf yong  
man, a ſtrong man and hardy,  
and for thi of Engliſſemen  
was he cleyed Edmunde Tre-  
renſde. He muche a leiðe þe  
romantike of his ſadert, and  
þe toughneſſe of his moder in  
him ſem thorgh his vertu no-  
bletych. Atque hæc chartis  
mandaveram priuſquam rotulam  
(cujuſ ſupra, p. 286. mentionem  
fecit) Graueſianam vidiffem, quæ  
tamen nec ipſa illis ſauet, qui  
Ed-

þe kȳng aȝde bi þȳn becke myt one schawende done,  
 þat, þor þȳn schawend, longe wop in mone.  
 Alor me ne ȝeod non so gode knyȝt mave so þe wende myde.  
 Aȝe cleped hym, þor þȳn strengþe, Edmund ȝeoulyde.  
 þe sorwes, as ȝch chesbe ȝtold, spronge aboute ȝlewe.  
 Alor þat hile of Danemarche done to londe come,

Edmundum nothum fuisse velint. Contra, picturæ tanquam primogenitum heredemque Ethelredi exhibent, verbaque ipsa filium ex uxore non è concubina fuisse innuunt. hæc nempe, pro interpunctione rotulæ. *Ætli Ethelred engendra Camun ȝeoulyde de une femme aliene he fu la soer au duc de Normandye. si engendra alured he fu trait par Condeyn count de bent.* Edward le confessor he gyst a Westmoster. E quibus verbis non est quod colligas, Edmundi matrem fuisse ducis Normannie sororem, quæ tamen (utpote Ethelredi uxor secunda) Aluredi atque Edwardi mater ne vera erat. Id quod satis erit manifestum, si hoc modo verba rotule distinguantur. *Ætli Ethelred engendra Camun ȝeoulyde. De uno femme aliene, he fu la soer au duc de Normandye, si engendra Alured, he fu trait par Condeyn count de bent, e Edward*

le Confessor, he gyst a Westmoster. Hæc distinctio si probetur, id utique liquebit, rotulæ auctorem Edmundi matrem ignobilem itidem fuisse censuisse, nihilque proinde de eadem à seipso fuisse dicendum. Ceterum non dissiteor, alibi etiam de Edmundi ȝeoulyde matre locutum fuisse scriptorem profaicum in codice. *Ac camque pro concubina habuisse. After the deeth (inquit ille) of hant, Harold the hardkunt, kynges of Engelande, regned Seynt Edward the Confessor, Edmund the ȝeoulyde's brother in his father's hall, that is to seye of Ethelred kyng, but nat in the moder. for this Edmund the ȝeoulyde was gete of unlawfulle bedde, thonghe he were noble and stronge in batayle. Atque hæc sub Henrico II<sup>o</sup>. tradit, ubi de Henrico I<sup>di</sup>. stemmate agit, verba dicta interim innuens è Chronicis Gallicis se produxisse.*

And



And anour alf þys land þe haueuene hit adde yflogt.  
 So þat Norþomberland was al to grounde ybrogt.  
 Kent hit destrude also god, & þe Est contreye wyde.  
 'Exetre hit barude al adoun, & in þe West syde.  
 Alr kyng worrede ofte agen, as he mygte do.  
 Ac wreche of ȝm droghet þer wel harde hym com to.  
 Alor þys poer was lute worþ. þer he gaf hem atten ende  
 four þousend pound of sterlynges, hem agen to wende.  
 So þat þys quene deyde, and of serme and sore  
 Hym com in eche half, euere þe leng þe more.  
 Alor þe Deneys come agen, and in eueryche ende  
 Hym worrede þer & þer, þat he nuste wuder wende.  
 He byþoghte hym wel narme, gyt þer mygte be eny red  
 þoru wyuynge, oþer þoru eny þyng, 'þer þys myf was ded.'  
 He hader þed, þat Rycharð, Duc of Normandye,  
 Was man of gret poer, and of gret leygnorpe.  
 Alor Emme, þys 'gode doghter,' he sende ofte ȝm soude,  
 To spouse hyre and to make hyr quene of Engeland,

1. The West contre also  
 they woune Deneshire, And  
 the Coune of Excestre sette  
 thay a sup. Our kyng wer-  
 red *Ar.* 2. Tam hic quam &  
 alibi mire omnia permutantur  
 in *Ar.* ita scilicet, ut hæc verba  
 plane omittat, ne Edmundi ȝ-  
 rennde matrem Ethelredi ux-  
 orem fuisse agnosceret. 3: God  
 suster, *Ar.* Sed discrepantia  
 inde orta, quia Richardus &

Emma filii erant Richardi pri-  
 mi, ducis Normannie. Hinc  
 certe scriptor profanus in eod.  
 Codice *Ar.* Thes [Emme]  
 was Richarde's daughter,  
 Duc of Normandie, which. I.  
 wynter after William his fa-  
 der gouerned thulke Duchie,  
 which the xviii. yere this  
 kyng deyde. And after him  
 came Richarde the II. whas  
 suster was thees Emme.



þat

þat he myȝte, þoru alyance, eny help vndergo,  
 To wyte hym fram hem of Denemarch, þat dade þys lond  
 to wo.

So þat þo hit were aton, þe sponſynge was ydo,  
 As in þe ger of grace a þouſend and tuo,  
 And of þe kynge's crounynge in four & twenty þe gere.  
 1 þe poȝte þe kȳng, þat he adde of ys ſon þe laſte ſere.  
 2 And here ſprong, 1e! þe worke more as of hem of Normandie,  
 Ware þoru hit come in to þys lond, & 3 abbeþ þe mayſtre.  
 Wor þe kȳng adde by 4 þys. *M.* tweye ſones *ȳwys*,  
 Alfreð, & Seynt Edward þat at Weſtmynſtre ȳſtrued ys.  
 And of þulke blode ſuppe Wyllam baſtard com,  
 As ge ſolls her after ȳhure, and wan þys kȳnedom.  
 þat poer muche of Denemarch in þes wytoute kȳſt  
 Was hem ȳwend to Denemarch, ar þe kȳng weddede wyf.  
 þe kȳng, þor ys grette poer, as of ys 5 wyunnyge,  
 Alle þe Deneys, þat were hyleneð, he let to deþe bringe  
 In a Seynt Bryce day, and in one day echon,  
 þat non nere of oþere ȳwar, ne þat þer ne of ſcapede non.  
 Swan, þe duc of Denemarch, þo he hurde of þys cas,  
 Maðe hym wroþ & wod ȳnon, & eche þat wyþ hym was.  
 Hit greyþeð hem myð gret poer, and to Engeland come  
 As in þe nyue & tentyþe ger of þe kȳng's kȳnedome,  
 6 And in þe ger of grace a þouſend and þre.  
 Hit ſlowe & ſorwe dade ȳnou, nomore ne myȝte be.

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| 1. <i>Thenne</i> pro þo in <i>Ar.</i>     | 11. <i>ſones</i> <i>ȳwys</i> <i>Ar.</i> <i>rectius.</i>   |
| 2. <i>Ther</i> ſprong vppe tho the        | <i>nifi</i> forſitan <i>M.</i> pro <i>Witſrels</i>        |
| ferſt more of hem of Nor-                 | vel <i>Witſrels</i> 'ſive <i>domina</i> ac-               |
| mandye, <i>Ar.</i> 3. <i>Maðde</i> the    | <i>cipias.</i> 5. <i>L.</i> <i>wyunnyng.</i> 6. <i>L.</i> |
| ſeignourie <i>Ar.</i> 4. <i>This</i> que. | and cum <i>Ar.</i>  |

So þyche hit come, þat þe lond ouer al hit goume fülle,  
 As þyche as ameten cropes in an amete hulle.  
 By Horþe and by Souþe, in þe Est and in þe West,  
 So þyche hit come, þat me nuste in wuch half kepe best.  
 Hit ne sparede prest ne clerc, þat hit ne slawe to grounde,  
 Ne man of relygion, ware so hit eny founde.  
 Ne womanne, ne soukyng chyldre, ne doughter, ne sone.  
 Hit herbarude Hornoych, and þe town of Wylytane.  
 þat a reulych lond was Engeland, & fol of forme ymon.  
 Hit mygte acorsy þe "salle" quene, þat Seynt Edward slon.  
 "Wor Swan, þe luper duc, adde euere yn yuere  
 þre selawes, þat next hym were, in echt manere  
 Breyninge and robberye, and quellyng atte laste.  
 þys were þyn þre selawes, þat þe hald euere vaste.  
 Wanne at an god manne's hous ys men were at inne,  
 Wost hit wolde ete & drynke þat hit found þer inne,  
 And sappe þe lounde of þe hous quelle and alle þyn,  
 And sappe breune al ys hous, as þor þer scot ywyn.  
 Suche were þo þe gyftes þat hyder come þo.  
 Muche at Engeland yderys forme and mo.  
 Wost mo hit dade in Barchyre, and by Alledoune,  
 And so aboute Wychehelmesley, and so in many toune.  
 Atte laste kyng Hyldred, þo he was to grounde ybrogt,  
 And muche of þe lond aflame and destruyd al to next,

<p>1. Deest  2. With this          Swan, the luper duke, iii.          selawes were, Euere selawing          hym, of luther manere, Rob-          beryng and breuning, &amp; quel-          lyng the last. These made</p>	<p>myche folke of him fore a gaff.          Most sorow they dade in          Werke thre aboute Alledoune,          And a hunte. Outch-          mes they stroyed many a          toune .</p>
--	---

Swan,

Swan, þe duc of Denemarch, he gef atte nende  
 folle þryttý þousend pound, to Denemarch to wende,  
 And býlent þys lond in pes, so þat þys was ydo.  
 Ac interyt was at þer com wel more wo þerto.  
 Wor þe kýng Hýldred, ýley ýs lond al bare  
 Of þe folc of Denemarch, he nolde nogt gut be ýwar,  
 Ac let gadery anewe host, þoru al Engeland wel wyde,  
 Of heye men and of lowe eke, ýgadered bý þe hýde,  
 þat euere eygte hýde lond an man hem solde fynde  
 Wyþ helm & haubert, & þe atyl, þat non nere byhýnde;  
 And grepped hem slyppes in þe see, ac al nas worþ afylle.  
 1 Wor þo ýs coust was al ydo, he mygte let abbe ýbe sylle.  
 To Swan, duc of Denemarch, þe týtynge sone com.  
 Hys ost and hys poer wyþ hym sone þe nome.  
 And in þe þousend ger of grace, & þe teþe ger al so,  
 And of vr kýnge's crownement þryttý ger and tuo,  
 In an holy þores day, to þys lond he come,  
 And þen touu of Gýpelswyçh myd strengþe sone nome,  
 And robbede aboute in þe lond, and tonnes adoun caste.  
 Ac þe contreye of Grantebrugge agen hem stod baste,  
 And fogte al þe stalwarde men, þe wule þer poer ylaste,  
 Ac hit were, as hit nede mošte, býneþe atte laste.  
 And þere was þe kýnge's suster sone ýslawe þelstou,  
 And barons and knýgtes, and heye men monyon.  
 Aboute heruest 2 þys Deneys as roters arnde  
 By Chýlterne to Orenford, and 3 þen touu barnde.

---

1. Tho all the cost was i ther more wende Ar. 3.  
 made, hit myght as well a be Chane toune brende Ar..  
 stille Ar. 2. The Danes fur-  
 Vol. I. Pp þo

þe wende hit borþ of Denemarch, & robbed al Ester,  
 And <sup>1</sup> gnte bruggesþyre & Ekangle, & also Wyddel sex.  
 Bohynghamþyre & Orenfordþyre, & Westfordþyre al so,  
 Bedenordþyre and haluendel Montyndouneþyre þerto.  
 Northamteþyre, and by Souþe Temels Barreþyre,  
 And Soþereþe and Souþex, and Souþhamteþyre.  
 In machelvel of Wyllteþyre, and þo al þys was ydo,  
 Hit drowe hem toward Canterbury, to robby þere al so.  
 In þe þousend ger of grace, and endienene þerto,  
 þys folc com to Kanterbury, robberye to do.  
 By tuene hour leuede day þe latere, & Wyelmasse day,  
 þys folc byfette Kanterbury, and waste bylay,  
 And gret raynson of hem wyþinne caste to be out of wo.  
 Ac þe ercheþyscop of þe toun, Seynt <sup>2</sup> Alfe þat was þe,  
 Was wast þer agen to gýne eny raynson.  
 þe Deneys bot wraþþe þo asaylede wast þe toun,  
 And mounne hym, & waste slowe, & þo hit wyþ inne com,  
 þey men, þat þer inne were, and Seynt Alfe hit noma,  
 And monkes, & þe toun barnde & adoun caste.  
 þe ercheþyscop Seynt Alfe hit heolde & bounde wast,  
 And ladde hym byfýde London to þe toun of Grenewých,  
 And helde hym þer in prýson, þat he nas nan man ylýche,  
 Half ger and somdel more, and synþe in þe ger of grace  
 A þousend and tuelf ger, hit ladde hym <sup>3</sup> in an place  
 Wyþoute þe toun Grenewýke, & stenede hym wyþ stones  
 As me stenede Seynt Steuene, <sup>4</sup> & debruþede ys bones.

1. L. Grantebruggesþyre. 2. I. e. Elphege. 3. To a place  
 4. And all to brayfed his bones.

Atte laste myd a denchar me smot hym to grounde  
 In þe benede, þat he lay, and deyde in skounde.  
 1 þe Saterday, in þe Ester wonke, þyn hely man hit floue.  
 Ac þeme þat mere atte dede þe benerege bylone.  
 Wor somme by come cancrefete, & somme blinde oþer mode,  
 And somme deyde berlych as hit by rygt stode.  
 So þat þor drede of þyn wreche þe Deneyn mere agate,  
 And wyðron hem of her lufes bede þe wails yt wolde y laste,  
 2 And þer was þe betere penager, and dnæpe.  
 Wor in þe ȝer of grace a þousend and þrettepe  
 Swan, þe duc of Denemarch, by gan to turne yn hond.  
 And after þat he adde destrud þe Souþ alf of þyn lond,  
 He wende and robbede al þyn lond al þe Norþ syde,  
 Northomber and Lyncelſyre, and destrude wyde  
 Eneis fram Wadelyngſtret, and so by Oxenford.  
 Hit come and nome Wynecheſtre, and so Walyngford.  
 fram Walyngſtred hit wende, & þe town of Wape nome.  
 So þat Swan was hyng yholde, ware so he euer come.  
 Ac þe kyng of Engelond, in such sor & mournynge,  
 Carede of yn gonge ſones mek of alle þynge,  
 Laſte hit more deſoude ȝet. þor hit ne couþ of ſyngunge.  
 þer þor into Normandye he let hem ſone brynge,

1. This was the Ester  
 [1. Ester] wonke in the Sa-  
 terday, As more plenner in  
 his lyf is ther of me may.  
 Mary, that was atte his  
 deth, by com blinde & mode,  
 And somme dede ſodeynlich  
 by ryght as they stode.

2. Defunt omnia metra sequen-  
 tia in Cod. A. usque ad hoc  
 signum marginale (P) in  
 historia Edmundi Prencelyde,  
 quorum tamen loco perquam  
 multa occurrunt, oratione so-  
 luta scripta.

Boþe Alfred & Seynt Edward, & þe quene þer moder also,  
 Wyþ þe Duc Rycharð, þe quene broþer, vortz sach wo were ydo.  
 Ac hys eldoste sone Edmond yrenelyde,  
 Mer he was hardy, & gode knygt, atome he let abyde.  
 þat laþer folc of Denemarch robbede and slawe baſte,  
 And chyrchyn and abbeyz barade and adoun caſte.  
 Men ley þu bured to drawe, þat reuþe yt was ynou.  
 þat feble folc to wyldernesse and to wodes baſte dron.  
 Hyldred kyng of Engeland, þo he ley al hys wo,  
 Hou me deſtruyde ys lond, and ys folc ſlou,  
 To myðewynter he wende anon, þo he ne ſey oþer red,  
 To Normandye, & huld hym þere vorte þe Duc Swan was ded.  
 Swan deyde in þe ger of grace a þouſend and fourteþe.  
 Hys folc made euere baſte worre gut after ys deþe,  
 And made hys sone kyng after hym, Knout was hys name,  
 þat dude, aſwel as hys fader, Engeland gret ſlame.  
 In ſaſe knyghtes of Engeland hulde myð hym baſte,  
 Ac hit, þat trewe & gode were, agen hym her herte caſte,  
 And ſende after kyng Hyldred into Normandye ſtylle,  
 And he come ſone to Engeland, and wende abbe ys wyllle.  
 Ac þe kyng Knout yt vnder get, he was ſol of rage.  
 He wende anon to Sandwyçh, & men þere in oſtage,

1. — but ſodeyneliche he  
 turned his ſayles to ward  
 Sandewyche, and wente a  
 londe. And puttyng a way  
 bothe Godde's drede and  
 mane's, the hoſtages, whiche  
 he hadde faire children of  
 gret noblete, he let take and

kutte of hure noſes and eres,  
 and ſomme a blende. And  
 whenne he had ſo ȝ doo, he  
 tolde hit as for a grete joye,  
 and glorie, that he hadde ſo  
 defouled the Englyſh hoſta-  
 ges inquit auctor proſaius in  
 Cod. Ar.

þat

þat were bytake hys fader, vor heye men of þe londe,  
 He nom and let hym smyte of bope bet and honde.  
 Non adde heye men of þe lond ytake þere bynore  
 Hys fader ostage god ynou, and dep of ysore,  
 Wyþ hym to holde tremelyche, and breke þo her of.  
 þernore þe kyng knout wyþ hem was þo so wod wroþ,  
 And vor wraþþe let bylyme her ostages þat were.  
 Suppe he wende into Westser, and robbede þere,  
 And in Dorsete Dude & Wyldesfyre & Somersete gret wo.  
 Kyng Hyldred lay syk in þe toun of Colham þa,  
 In Westende of Wyldesfyre, vor he was feble and old,  
 And wyþ care and sorwe ouercome, as me aþ ytold.  
 In fram Colham to Londone he of scapede bunspe,  
 Worto myte hym fram ys son, þat hit ne brogte hym to depe.  
 þere he huld hym in þe toun myd mucche forme and fore,  
 þat of al hys lond of Engeland he nadde an fot more.  
 þe gates he made baste, and husse hym wyþ inne.  
 His son asaylede þen toun wyþoute myd al her gynne.  
 Atte laste þys kyng Hyldred, as in al þys stryue,  
 In an Seyn Gregorys day, wende out of þys lyne,  
 As in þe ger of grace a þousend & fyrteþe.  
 Feblyche he lynede al hys lyne, & deyde in feble depe.  
 In suche forme he was kyng senene & þrytty ger.  
 He adde mony an sory day, & muchel angnylle er,  
 An, vor wreche of hys broþer deþ, al such forme to hym come,  
 þat late sope he adde al ys lyf of ys kenedom,

Edmond



**E**dmond frenschyde, kyng Wyldrede's sone,  
 So gode knyght of body was, pat longe wory in mons.  
 He mette so gode in noue londe, an atte bygyngyng,  
 After hyz sader depe, me ches hym to kyngs,  
 he heys men of þe lond, pat fals ne luyt ners.  
 He monye halde myd kyng Knout, pat fals an tryshors wery.  
 Edmond, der ys dreng, was yclapped frenschyde.  
 Dredeful he was to ys son, pat hym durste seme abyde.  
 Debonere and myde he was to alle pat gode wery.  
 Anseyte & knyght hardy men, as man wyfente fore.  
 Worst he wende to Westsax, and þere ech contreye  
 Aboute al to ys wille depe der lene and eye.  
 He leow hardy ynow he wende aboute wyde,  
 In man contreye and oþer aboute in ech syde.  
 pat Knout hadde þere noue agen hym der to stonde,  
 gyf false traytors hadde yde here of Engelande,  
 pat hadde myd þe kyng Knout, traytors as hit wery.  
 So pat noper of þis kynges abownde to oþer ners,  
 He eyþer gadrede gret ost, and of oþers men flours.  
 Alle laste myd her ost to gadere ward hit dours,  
 And mette þam after myddomer, þe folk of Beys þer,  
 And a gret batayle smyt þis þe town of Merton,  
 And slowe to grounde muche folk, & þo al man yde  
 þe kynges & muche of her folk aþys partide atre.  
 þo wende kyng Edmond to Londone myd ys route,  
 And al þat folk of Denemarch destrude þer aboute,  
 And dref hem out of þis lond, & gut nolde he nogt bliuys,  
 He wende in to Westsax fulke contreye to wynnys.

þo he was fram by Ælfe ywend, þe Deneys myð al þere gynne  
 Byfegede London, ac hit ne mygte nogt come myðinne,  
 So wel he was myðrune ywast, þerū man þat þer were,  
 þe Deneys hem myð drome, þe hem ne spædde nogt þere,  
 And wende Edward in to Kent, & robbede þere baſte,  
 And her preyte at Medeweie in to Gyppes caſte.  
 Kyng Edmund hem ſymede, þo he hærde þys,  
 And paſſede Temels and Breynford ywys,  
 And ſlou aboute baſte ynou monye þat he bound,  
 And monye ſloue her and þere aboute in þe land.  
 Batayles hit ſmyte mony one, as we bygonne to telle er.  
 Mor eygte batayles hit dæde ney mat myðinne half ger.  
 As at Sferſton and elleſware, and þe ſynte batayle was  
 Uppe þe hulle of Weſdunne, ychylle telle þat can.  
 þys tneye noble kynges myð her goer hem mette,  
 And ſmyte þere a batayle, and baſte to gadere ſette.  
 fordeyned hit adde her oft wel in eyþer ſyde,  
 And Edmund ydygt þys ſtandard, were þe ſolde hym ſelf  
 abyde,  
 And þys dragon by yſet, and þys batayle yſmyte.  
 Hit ſloue to grounde in eyþer alf, þat deal it was to myte.  
 In ys ſtandard Edmund was, as rygt was bar to abyde.  
 He ſey, þat me ſlou ys ſolc aboute in eche ſyde.  
 þys herte hym nolde laſſry nogt abyde horte tyme mere,  
 Ac to þe batayle ſmot anon, as man wophoute fare,  
 And bylenede dragon & ſtandard, & ſhured baſte ys honde,  
 And ſlou to grounde, as noþyng hym ne ſolde at ſhonde.  
 Sone adde ys gode body yperced þe oft þoru out.  
 He made ys wey roums ynou, horte he come to kyng knout.  
þere

þere were dantes arȝt ysmȝte bȝtneue hem tueȝe  
 Of þe helmes, þat fur sprong out, vor hit were strong beȝe.  
 And þat was myd kȝng Edmond, Eðrȝc was ȝs name,  
 þat was trayter and lounerð suȝke, our Lounerð ȝȝue hȝm  
 Name.

Her he fondeðe hȝm bȝtraȝe, vor kȝng Knoute's lone,  
 þo he dradde þat Edmond was, as he seȝ, al aboue,  
 And kȝng Knout neȝ ouercome, vp an hul an heȝ  
 He wende wȝþ ȝs fuerde adrawe, þat þet folc hȝm al yseȝ.  
 He adrou ȝs blodȝ fuerd, and londe bȝgan to grede:  
 "Englyſſe men, Englyſſe men, fleþ anon, ȝch rede.

"Her Edmond, bre kȝng, to deþe he ȝs ydo.

Hȝm sulſt he gan vorst to fle, vor spere ſolde al ſo.  
 Englyſſe men hȝm leuede wel, & ſlowe after blyue,  
 And al yt was to bȝtraȝe ȝs lounerð, þat was alyue.  
 þo kȝng Edmond þȝs ȝseȝ, þat ȝs folc vnder ſtod,  
 þat he was to deþe ybroȝt, and þeruor ſlowe vor mod,  
 He arnde vp a lute hul, and gradde in þe place  
 Hȝs folc, and vnde of ȝs helm, and ſlewede hȝs face,  
 And seȝde, "turneþ baſte agen, ȝcham alyue ȝwȝs.  
 Hȝs folc turnede anon agen, þo hit hurde þȝs,  
 And ſmȝte vorþ þȝs bataȝle, gretter ne myȝte non be,  
 And ſogte vorte yt was nȝgt, þat hit myȝte noleng ȝſe.  
 Ac þe Englyſſe adde ȝbe aboue, ȝȝf yt nadde ȝbe vor nȝgt.  
 Ac hit departede, as hit nede moſte, vor deſaite of ſȝgte.  
 Hit greȝhed hem þerafter, anoper bataȝle to do,  
 And ef ſone come to gadere vp Alſedoune al ſo,  
 And bataȝle ſmȝte ſtrong ȝnou, ac Knoute's poer baſte  
 Werȝȝe was, þat he wan þe mayſtrie atte laſte.

Sorȝ



Sory was Edmond þo, to Gloucestrye he wende,  
 To poruſeþe hym more help, Gyf God hym grace ſende.  
 1 Kyng knout ſywed after myd an long tayle.  
 So þat aboute Gloucestrye þe eygteþe batayle  
 2 Up Seuerne hit ſmyte, & aſtede, & ſo baſte me ſlow  
 þe gode bodyes in eyther aſt, þat yt was deol ynou.  
 Myd blod þe erþe was yheled, þat pyte yt was to wyte.  
 Ac noþer partye ne mygte þe maſtrye.  
 Ac hit ne mygte yſe vor þe nygte þe batayle to do non ende.  
 Hit departede myd ſorm ynou amorne agen to wende.  
 And kyng Edmond ouer Seuerne was in Weſt ſyde,  
 And kyng knout bygan myd ys oſt in Eſtalf abyde.  
 And Seuerne was bytuene hem, & knoute's poer  
 Of ſolc of bygonde ſee wax enere ber & ner.  
 As Edmond ſat myd ys oſt angyt in 3 ſuch ſolas,  
 As ſolc mygte, þat ber wounded & ſor & wery was,  
 And ſpeke of þys batayle, hou yt mygte be god :  
 An old kyngt þer ros vp, & byuore þys ſolc ſode.  
 "Icham," he ſeyde, "meſt ſol. þernore, as ſoles wolle,  
 "My ſole red, gyf ge wolle yþure, vorſt ſewe ichyille."

1. Knut ſayd ener after hym  
 ener atte talle *A.* 2. Up-  
 on Seuerne in a place they  
 ſmyte ſtronge i now. Many  
 was the gode body in eyther  
 half me ſlow. But putte  
 neyther partie the maſtrye  
 haue myght, By cauſe that  
 they were lette by comyng of  
 the nyght. Kyng Edmunde

was of Seuerne in the Weſt  
 ſyde, And knut in the Eſt  
 half a yent him ganne bide,  
 So that the water was by  
 twene her bothes power, And  
 the ſolke of Denemarch wax  
 ener ſer and ner *A.* 3. This  
 cas, Wher many a wound-  
 edman and wery i ſougt was,  
*A.*

"Spache þyng we abbeþ ýfeyt, & bre elbetne us ek leyde.  
 "Auguſte & ſerue we abbeþ ýnou, of wel more we mowe drede.  
 "We fygtes & þep ouercome, & non mayſtrie we ne ýfep.  
 "þou mygte we bote be ouercome, þat þus beſoulede þep?  
 "Despoyled & verounded, & bre ſtrengþe le ſep baſte,  
 "Alre felawes & bre owe lyf we dredeth ek atte laſte.  
 "Wanne ſhal bre reſte come, & endynge of bre wo,  
 "And among bus ſykeneſs & payn & ých drede neuete mo.  
 "Comend ne may be ouercome þor hys ſtrengþe ýwys,  
 "He þe kýng knout oure fo, þor he ſo queynte ýs.  
 "Wat may þanne oure ende be, bote, wanne þys knyghtes  
 etþon  
 "In eyþer lyde þep aſlawe, & oure mayſtres þpleneth one,  
 "Oþer hit mote þanne acordý, oþer fygte hem ſulue tuo?  
 "Wat reſon ýs, þat hit ne mowe as wel nouþe ſo,  
 "þe wule hit abbeþ ený alýne, þat hem mowe ſerne & drede?  
 "Here hem nogt boþe bayror ſo: wu wat ýs gyðþe hebe?  
 "þere were wule in Engelond at otyne kýnges tene,  
 "And alþe hit were ryche ýnou, & of noble lýne.  
 "And non to late to hem teneýe al Engelond ýs.  
 "And ofte wo ſo coneyteþ al, al leſep ýwys.  
 "Kýt eyþer kýng ſo muche wýlneþ to be louetþ þer,  
 "þat þer noþer nele abbe felawe, & ne þere,

<p>1. Dispoiled &amp; ſolled buth          oure frendes, oure ſtrengthes          leſeth we faſte, And alſo of          our awne lyf we dredeth atte          laſte. 2. What reſon is          hit, that hit ne mowe al-</p>	<p>well do now ſee, While any          knyghtes buth leſte a lýne,          that hem mowe ſerne &amp; drede:          Here hem nought fairer ſe,          where is þere Wydeſpode. 3. He non þere, &amp;.          "Fygte</p>
--	---

"fýgte hem sulus tneye, þat i legerd walde be one.

"Wu ngrþ hem noȝt beters non so, þat manne her knyȝten  
echone,

"And her salc were al aflawe, & hit bylened al bare,

"And ne founde wþe hem seruede in angnyke ne in care,

"Ne wþe mþd hem in neode þat lond defendy myȝte ?

"Her of þat sþs seggeȝe, as by youre in fýȝte.

Radde þys knyȝt fulleche þys vesen ýsed,

þat ys selawen nadde þone ýnorne her red,

And seyde alle mýd one mouȝe, "we : ensenteh þerte,

"þat þys tneye kynges asorþy, oþer batayle hem sulus do.

Kyng Edmond, þe he burde þys, wel was of soye & blys.

þe batayle, he seyde, he wolde : nymc mýd god herte ýwýn.

þat worde he sende amours to knent among ys son,

And granteȝe ys ame hady, þe batayle to be anon.

"Hit lete hem army beȝe, in to an yle mýd gode pas

All mýdde Senerne hit mende, þat Meneg e clyped was.

þer tane hit mere hem sulus two, & þe water al aboute.

Her oft was eyȝer in ys syde alonde bylened by þonte.

"Wýd gad earnest & gad anon her fardes adrowe boȝe,

þys kynges to gadens come, & made hem boȝe wroȝe.

1. Woll be lordes all on.  
And so were hem fairer now,  
that whan hure knyȝten  
echon, And al hure folke buth  
a flawe, and hit by laste all  
bare, 2. Her of seggeth  
your abise, as by youre in-  
sýȝt 3. Assenteth 4.  
Take 5. They armed  
hem self betthe, and dight

hem with gonde pas Into  
an yle in Senerne, that Dis-  
mýs clyped was 6. The  
kynges thenne in earnest grete  
her swerdus drough bothe,  
And knyȝte to gedre fast ý  
now a men that were wrothe.  
Kyng Edmonde assailed  
kyng knut so fast, that he was  
Regh ouer come, and fore he  
was

La gronde hit smyte & harde myd stalwarde honde,  
 þat wonder was, hou oþer mygte oþer's dunt at sonde.  
 þo kyng Edmond ymrapped was, & wyþinne hot,  
 þe floe ys fuerde & grunte, & myd such ernest smot,  
 þat þe sprong out myd ech dunt of helme so þere,  
 þat yt þogte myd ech dunt, as þat heued afure were.  
 As þondre þat souu was, þe lygt as lygtunge,  
 So þat ech dunt þogte leygt as yt were & þondrynge.  
 þe spech of mony skaward knygt, ac me bond on þere.  
 yblessed be þe moder wombe þat hym to monne bere.  
 þe kyng knout was so debrused, þat he stod vaneþe.  
 þe dradde manne he lore þat lyf, & were ybrogt to deþe.  
 þe adde leuer þan eny þyng, þat hit accorded were.  
 Ac he ne dorste ys febleste telle Edmond, þor fere  
 laste, gyt he vader gete, þat he were so ouercome,  
 þat he nolde fyn ar he adde ys lyf hym by nome.  
 þo he adde a wule yrest, ys armen he gan to caste,  
 And wyþ gret ernest steþ ber, & aslayed Edmond vasse,  
 Myd al þe strengþe þat he mygte, & stowe more þerto  
 Al þor he ne scolde mene, þat he were ouercome so.  
 þes knout bygan to reste, þo ys allant was yde,  
 And bet Edmond, as in þes, aword hure oþer tuo.  
 Kyng Edmond hym grantede, & somdel hym wyþ drou,  
 And lende vp hys feld, & herkned hym ynou.

was a gaff. He hadde lyuer  
 thanne eny thyng accorded  
 haue be there. But he nolde  
 his feblenelle ynt telle in no  
 maner, Lest Edmund hit

vndergete that he were ouer-  
 come, And that he nolde fyn  
 til his lyf were by nome  
 &.

“ Ach

"Ich abbe, quap Knout, "jwylned þy kynedom ar þys,  
 "And nou, wel more þan þy lond, þy salf jch wylny jwys.  
 "Eor þou nart noȝt worþ one be of Engelond kyng her,  
 "Ac to prince of al þe world. vor in þe world nys þy per.  
 "Ich abbe al þat lond of Norþweye & of Denemarch an  
 honde.

"I ne wende noȝt þat eny man my dant ſelde atſonde.  
 "Ac þou ne at ſtonſt yt noȝt one, ac art al clene aboue.  
 "Wat bore jch deſyry meſt þyn grace & þyn lone,  
 "þat þou of alle myn londes me be felawe & per,  
 "An jch mot ek of Engelond be þy partýner.  
 "Eor gif we to gadere beþ, & al clene of one rede,  
 "France & ech oþer lond, & ech prince vs wole drede.  
 "þer vor jch deſeche þe, haue half my lond myd me,  
 "An jch, as þy partýner, half Engelond myd þe.  
 "Edmond, þo he hurde þys, ys grete herte wýþ drou,  
 "And enſentede to ys rede, & býcom mylde ynou,  
 "An býnde to ys mylde word, þat myd ſuerd was aboue.  
 "Hit caſte awey ſeld & ſuerd, & turnde al to lone,  
 "An býclapte hem & cuſte, & her ſolc in eyþer ſýde,  
 "þo hit ſepe hem acordeþ, vor joye londe hit cryde,  
 "An ſonge, te Deum laudamus, eyþer in ys route,  
 "An to gadere wende, & cuſte hem ech oþer aboute.  
 "Bytuene þys tweye kynges was a certeyn fourme yde,  
 "An forewarde among al her ſolc, ar hit departed atuo,

1. To be kyng of	Ar.	4. Ich wole, as	Ar.
2. The	Ar.	5. Assented	Ar.
3. And that thow	Ar.	6. Meek	Ar.
of all my londes my felawe	Ar.	7. I bowed	Ar.
be and peer, And that ich of	Ar.	8. By twene	Ar.
Engelond be thy partiner	Ar.	9. Parted a two, That	Ar.
		eyther hadde his dele of lond	
		and	



Wat eȝer adde to ȝn del of lond & eȝer þynge,  
 And departede wȝþ lone stue, & bylenede hafe þynge.  
 In ȝif hit adde in gods lone longe ȝlyued hafe,  
 Aȝe adde þorn al Cristenham ȝyȝote of hem ture,  
 An eche prince & eche londe wouted hem tuo.  
 Ac Edmond was al to rafe, alas! to depe ȝ do.  
 For þe lufur duc Geryc þerte enere to bytraye  
 Kyng Edmond, ȝn ewe lufur, kuent how to paye.  
 Al lufur gadelyng was ȝn lone, hafe et one rede,  
 Wȝt fondede wȝd alle ȝyle to do þyn lufur dede.  
 þo hit ne myȝte in eȝer wȝle þyn dede bringe to ende,  
 In to a chambre forene þe gadelyng gan wende,  
 þat kyng Edmond cam ofte to, & in þe dunge þer  
 Hude hem þere longe, þat none man nas ȝ war.  
 In þo þe kyng þerte cam, ȝn neȝe bar to do,  
 þe lufur þer ȝare was wȝd ȝs arme þerte,  
 And smot 1 in þoru þe foundement, & þoru þe gottes ryȝt,  
 Edmond þe noble kyng, þat was so noble knyȝt.  
 Wȝþ a long ȝyonged knyȝt, ȝegged in eȝer lȝde,  
 þus 2 keneſelȝe þe þyn ſlou, aboute Seneſtre Andren tȝde.  
 3 In Oxenford he was aſlone, þoru þyn lufur lone,  
 Wȝd trefon & ȝyle ȝuon, ȝnot han myȝte be more.  
 þe beſte badi & nobleſt, þat in enȝ lond þe was,  
 ȝflame was þoru a gadelyng, ſo hylȝe, alas!

and other thynges, And parted  
 with lone a tyme, and by-  
 laſte bothe kynges &c.

1. Him into the founde-  
 ment into the gottes ryȝt,

There though he deyde that  
 heſtelich, that was ſo noble  
 a knyȝt &c. 2. Shenſul-  
 lȝe &c. 3. Atte Oxenford  
 &c.

If men myȝte aboute come, þen þe to ſicht þere,  
 Of ſcaped he was & yſlowe, non man miȝt more.  
 He greyþede þys gode kyng, "wanne non oþer nas,  
 An broȝte hym vayne anſere, as he wel : wateþe nas,  
 An þe abbepe of Glaſtynbury, þenore : þe þey wende anſer.  
 Alor he wylneþe þer to lyyge ys grauntes heȝ  
 þe kyng Edgar þe gode kyng, þat þere ybared ys.  
 þere hit lyygeþ vayne ynon þeþe gat ywys.  
 Ac þys laſer gadeleng, þat þys gode kyng ſo ſlon,  
 To kyng Knout wende anon glad ynon.  
 He grette hym anon," & ſeyde, "þat þe kyng nas.  
 "So nys yt nogt," quap þe kyng, "þer my kynedom ys  
 ymone.  
 "Alor an ſelame ych abbe þerto, þat ych leide ynon.  
 "Alor, gode ſyre kyng," quap þys þe, "þer þe lone ych  
 hym ſlon.  
 "þere ys þat knyght biþe, þat ych broȝte hym myȝt of þame,  
 "An ſmot hym þoru þe ſoundement, & ſo þe to þe maner.  
 "þe lone ych abbe wel þere abogt, & my lene ananater y þe.  
 "þer nys non alene non, þat þe abbe pſerued ſo.  
 "þenore vnderſtonþ þe wel, & geld my mede bliue.  
 "Alor ych abbe ſuo þe more gode, þan alle þe men alure.  
 "þou ſeyſt ſoþ," quap þe kyng, "þou aſt muþe þe þer me,  
 "An ychille wel þe mede gelde by þe treuþe ych on to þe.

- |                             |                              |
|-----------------------------|------------------------------|
| 1. The other dots nas, n.   | 4. Be thou kyng al on.       |
| 2. Woteþ n.                 | So is hit not, quod he a ge, |
| 3. The heigh                | hit is myne but in none n.   |
| and. For he wylneþ to lyyge | 5. For, n.                   |
| neigh his graunt ſite there |                              |

"ychille

"ychȝille make þe heymon, ' by tyme ychabbe yþorte,  
 "þat þou ne ſhalt wor þy iſſode neuere carye nogt.  
 Ederc, þe luſer ſayke, ys ſader, com al ſo:  
 "Spre," he ſeyde, "ych abbe muche loue þe ydo,  
 "Merſake Edmond ' my nowe lounerd, & bytraȝd wor þe,  
 "An let hym ſle wor þy loue, þou wolton yt gelde me?  
 "þe ſeyde kyng knout age, traytor þou art ymȝs,  
 "An muche age God & agen me þou aſt ydo amȝs,  
 "Wanne þou aſt ' þy nowe lounerd, as þou 'telleft bore,  
 "To ſo byle deþe ybrot, þat was my broþer y ſnore.  
 "Hys blod, þat þou madeſt ſede, ſhal arde com on þe.  
 "Nor ' þy nowe moun þe aþ ydemed by þat þou ſeyſt ' me.  
 He let caſte þys traytor in þe enenȝnge late  
 At ſeneſtre in Temele, nouſe wor to abate.  
 An let hym ſtȝlleȝche adrenche, wor manne ſpeche þere.  
 An þat was, lo! ys noble mede, to lute þeȝ yt were.  
 þe luſer traytor þys ſone auanced was gut bet,  
 ' Nor þys robe & þys dygnyte was al wel byſet.  
 He geſ hym ſuch auancement, as he wolde, he ſnor ys of,  
 þat he ne dorſte neuereſ carye ' of mete ne ' of " cloþ.

1. Right ſone ich haue I  
 thought *Ar.* 2. For ſake ich  
 haue myne awne lorde, and  
 him by trayed for the. For  
 thi, ſir kyng, a benefeat ich  
 aſke in help to me *Ar.* 3. Pro,  
 myn owe. 4. L. þyn owe.  
 Nam thyne awne in *Ar.* 5. He  
 telleſt fore *Ar.* 6. L. þyn owe.  
 Sed thy name in *Ar.* 7. To  
 me. So that theſe traytour

he let take an haſt, And prȝs  
 nyȝche with oute noȝſe in to  
 Temele him caſt, And let  
 him ſtȝlleȝche a drenche, that  
 no noȝſe were. And this was,  
 lo! his god reward, thegh  
 hit i nogh nere *Ar.* 8. In  
 robe of roſall dignite, that  
 was well by ſette *Ar.* 9. For  
*Ar.* 10. Deceſt *Ar.*

An

An robe he let hym scape verst of blod rede scarlet here.  
 þe skarpe stones <sup>1</sup> by þe strete hys taylor's were.  
 For he let hym myd hors <sup>2</sup> to drawe fram strete to strete,  
 þat þe peces selle of ys flets aboute monye & gretē.  
<sup>3</sup> þe taylor's corne so monge peces, for ys robe ne wolde pome.  
 He ne dorste þo carye nogt of þe wynter couwe.  
 Suppe he let smyte of ys hede by þe soldren, as me sey,  
 And let yt sette upon tour of Londone an hey.  
 And so he was hey man ymad, as he byhet hym to ys mede.  
 Alle traytors & <sup>4</sup> luerd synken God late hem so spede.

**K** Nowt was þo alone kyng, as wo seyy, of <sup>5</sup> Engelon,  
 Of Norwewe, <sup>6</sup> of Denemarch, & gret poer adde  
 anhonde.

Ac Edmond þe gode kyng, þat so byllyche me slou þo,  
 Adde tueye yonge sones, ar he were to depe ydo,  
 Edward & <sup>7</sup> Edmond, & breþeren al so tueye  
 Seynt Edward & Alfreð, þat in Normandy's were beye.  
 For þes were kyng Edmond next, & ys eyrs also.  
 Kyng Knout þogte hou he mygte best herof do,  
<sup>8</sup> To bynyne hem her erytage, & myd wuch wrong he mygte,  
 And myd wuch trefon, bote he adde som colour of rygte.

1. In the A. 2. Deest A.  
 3. His tailours corne him  
 such a robe, that none co-  
 ueyte wolde, He that he ne  
 durst after neuer carie for  
 the colde A. 4. Lord swykes  
 A. 5. Engelson, A. 6. And  
 of A. 7. Edmund, half bre-  
 Vol. I.

therne twey A. 8. To by-  
 neme hem her heritage how  
 that he myght, As hit were  
 by colour of summe maner  
 ryght. For thogh many may  
 do atte his lust some thyng,  
 Of wrong he wolde make a  
 ryght as by colouryng A.  
 R r

For manne man may do wat he wole & varygt ynou,  
 Ofte he dryngþ vor coneytyle to rygte pur mou.  
 He made a gret parlement, & brogte heye men þerto.  
 As wo seyyþ, yuele noþyng wyþoute lshyng do.  
 þo bed he þe court legge soþ, & ryggt vnderstonde,  
 Wat forewarde þer were ymad <sup>1</sup> in fourme of Engelande,  
 Bytneue hym & kyng Edmond, þe wule he was alyne,  
 And nam Edmond made <sup>2</sup> hys eyr of ys londe wyþoute  
 strue,  
 And nam of ys zonges sonex wardeyn ek ydo,  
 And wat þyng he adde asygned ys tnepe breperen al so.  
 Herof he bed hem legge soþ, as yt were glosyng.  
 For he ne kepte, he seyde, myd varygt of no monne's þyng.  
 þo stode þer somme by, þat adde ynome her red,  
 Gortto pape kyng knout, & nogt Edmond þat was ded,  
 And seyde bynore al court, þat kyng Edmond byqueþ  
 Hys kynedom & al ys lond kyng knout bynore ys deþ,  
 And þe warde of ys tuo sonex, vorte hit of elde were.  
 Alas! alas! þe trecherye, þat me mygte yle þere!  
 For þe dede was vergyte anon, & þe quike vorte paye,  
<sup>3</sup> Hit bytoke þe qued her soule, þe kunde eprs to bytrape.  
 þys word was yholde stable, & yloked vor dame.  
 Kyng knout of Edmonde's londes anon seysyne nome,  
<sup>4</sup> And huld hym þo al clene kyng of al Engeland,  
 Of Norþwepe, of Denemarch, gret poer he adde an honde.

1. And fourme *r.* 2. His  
 heire with oute any strue,  
 And to whom his yong sonex  
 in warde shulde be do, *r.*  
 3. Hure sonex by toke they  
 to the sende, the ryggt heire

to be tray *r.* 4. And heide  
 him self a lone kyng of all  
 Engeland, And Norþwe and  
 Denemarch, and grette power  
 hadde in hond *r.*

Sch

Ech þogte he was Gode next, þat myghte abbe ys grace,  
 Of so gret poer þer bynore me ne knen non in non place.  
 þo he was of al Engeland kyng, wyþoute <sup>1</sup> mone,  
 He bygan to cuþe anon, þat he was kyng <sup>2</sup> one.  
 Alle þat were ogt <sup>3</sup> ysþ Edmond þe kyng,  
<sup>4</sup> Oþer in alyance of eny loue, to deþe he let bringe,  
 Oþer flemd hem out of Engeland, non byleued nere,  
 Bote ys tuepe gonge soner, þat so feble & tendre were.  
 He ne mygte, vor þe worlde's flame, hem to deþe bringe.  
<sup>5</sup> He sende hem out of Engeland to <sup>6</sup> & heye kyng  
<sup>7</sup> Byþde Denemarch, þat he hem to deþe brogte,  
 So ver <sup>8</sup> in oneþelond, þer non man of hem ne rogte.  
 Twey! sely gonge þynges, frendeles were hit þere,  
 þat so ver, as mylde lomb, to deþe ylad were.  
 þo hit to þe kyng come, <sup>9</sup> þat he hem to deþe brogte,  
 Wor þe heye blod, <sup>10</sup> of wam hit come, þe kyng hym byþogte,  
 An adde reuþe of hem gret, & ys wille gan wyþ drawe,  
 An ne mygte, vor reuþe, vor non þyng bring hym of lyf dawe.  
<sup>11</sup> To þe kyng of Hongari þys sely chyldren tuepe  
 He sende hem vor to norýþ, þat he warded hem wel beye.

1. Any mone, *Ar.* 2. Alone  
*Ar.* 3. Sibbe sir Edmund  
*Ar.* 4. Or of Alliance in any  
 wey, to dethe *Ar.* 5. But  
 sente *Ar.* 6. An *Ar.* 7. A  
 lyte by side *Ar.* 8. In counthe  
 lande, wher no man of hem  
 rought. Alas! the sely *Ar.*  
 9. To dethe that hem shulde  
 haue brought, *Ar.* 10. They  
 of come, he him sone by

thought *Ar.* 11. To the kyng  
 of Hungary the sely children  
 tweye. The kyng hem faire  
 vnderfeng for hure heigh no-  
 bleý, So long fort Edmunds,  
 that was the quene brothe  
 [sic], Spoused his doughter,  
 and leth made the other,  
 That higt Edward, spousþ  
 the emperoure's nebew *Ar.*

R 1 2

þe

þe kyng hem bayre vnderbong, & honoured in ech wyse,  
 As gret deuýte tolde of hem, þor her gentryse,  
 So longe, þat he let Edmond, þat was þat on broþer,  
 Spously ys owe dogter, & suppe he let þe oþer,  
 þat het Edward, spously þe emperoure's ' mowe.  
 þe adde hit boþe ymýued wel, & nogt toleme.  
 ' Ac' Edmond leuede late wale, & no chyld ' hadde alyue,  
 Ac Edward þe oþer adde þre chyldren by ys wyue,  
 A son, þat ' het Edward, & dogtren also tweye,  
 Margarete & Cristýne, þat gode wommen were beye,  
 þys gode chyldren agte be enermo in ' munde.  
 Alor Engeland, gif hit nere, were gut out of kande,  
 As ge mowe ' hure her afterward, in kyng Henry's lys,  
 Hou Engeland com to kande agen þoru þe god Wold ys wyf,  
 ' þat þes Margarete dogter was, Wold þe gode quene.  
 Alor þys lond were gut out of kande, gif hit hadde ybe, ych  
 wene.

1. Non tantum cognata, sed  
 filia re vera erat Henrici II.  
 Imperatoris, nomenque ejus  
 erat Agatha. 2. Deest *Ar.*  
 3. Hadde *Ar.* 4. Height Ed-  
 gar, and also doughtren twey,  
*Ar.* Et quidem recte Edgar.  
 5. Wýnde. For Engeland, yf  
 they nad i be; hadde be oute  
 of kynde *Ar.* 6. Hers after-  
 warde, in Harry the furste's  
 lys, I hure, how *Ar.* 7. That  
 doughter was of Margarete,  
 as ich vnderstande, By twene  
 hure and Macolyn kyng of

Scotland. Kunt of all Enge-  
 lond was tho kyng thorough  
 oute. Hit is no nede to esse,  
 yf he were kene and proute.  
 Tho he was of Edmund's  
 sones, and all that with him  
 were, Delyuered, he was  
 proute i nough, and yet he  
 was infere O kyng Ethel-  
 rede's ii. sones, that were  
 in Normandye, Aluered and  
 Seynt. Edward; lest hit  
 wolde a styge, Thorough Ri-  
 chard, Duc of Normandye,  
*Ar.*

kyng

Kyng Knout of al Engelond was þo kyng alout.  
 ðe ne dar nogt esse, wer he were kene þo & prout.  
 þo he was of Edmonde's sones, & of al, þat myȝd hym were,  
 Delynered, he was fers ynou, ac sounel he was in fere  
 Of Edmonde's treye breþeren, þat wonede in Normandye,  
 Alfred & Seynt Edward, lasse hit goune aȝe  
 þoru þe duc of Normandye, þat her uncle was.  
 Hym þogte were he sykter of hem, hym ne douteþe of no cas.  
 Seynt Edward's moder þernore he of sende,  
 Emme þe quene of Engelond, þat he hyder wende,  
 þoru conseil of her broþer, þat was þe duc Rychard,  
 In þoru ensent of hyr treye sones, Alfred & Seyn Edward,  
 In were ysponed hym to wyf, & oure quene were al so.  
 Wat halt yt to telle longe? þys dede was yde.  
 Þor kyng Edmond was asslawe a Seynt Androme's tyd, ych  
 wene,

As in þe yer of grace a þousend and sixtens.  
 And to þe lammasse afterward he sponlede þe quene,  
 As in þe yer of grace a þousend and seuentene.

1. She *A.* 2. And the on  
 of hure bretherne, that was  
 duc Richearde, And thourgh  
 assent of hure sones, Aluered  
 and Edward, And sponed  
 hym to wyue *A.* 3. And þa  
 to-foþan K<sup>l</sup>. Aug. het þe  
 cyng reccan him Æðelneþer  
 lafe þer oðner cynger him  
 to cpene. Ricardes dohton.  
 Chron. Sax. sub an. M<sup>xvii</sup>. Male  
 proinde in Cod. *A.* significatur,  
 hæc nuptias celebratas fuisse

A.D. M<sup>vii</sup>. (As in the yer of  
 grace Ed. and senene) Edmun-  
 dumque occisum A.D. M<sup>vi</sup>. (fo  
 as in the yer of oure lorde  
 Ed. and sixe yere Edmonds  
 Trensude, her sone in lawe,  
 slayne was ere.) Et tamen in  
 hoc ipso Codice *Parliamentum*  
 (sive potius *magnum* vel *commune*  
*concilium*) Oxoniense A. D. M.  
 x<sup>viii</sup>. tentum fuisse rectissime  
 etiam asseritur.

gut



gut to be þe sykerere, after þyn sponlynge,  
 He let yn barons of Engeland to Openford bringe  
 A þousend as in þe ger of grace and eygthe ger,  
 In a parlement for þyn stat of hem made þere.  
 So þat gif þer eny was, þat agen hym herte bere,  
 Hym þogte þyn poer non þrug nas, ac <sup>1</sup> as þer nogt yt were.  
<sup>2</sup> As was to hym al clene ysore, þer nas non byhynde.  
 þo was he al clene loured, to bynde and unbrynde.  
 A wyf, þat het <sup>3</sup> Bylyne, he adde er of gret fame.  
 By hyre he adde an sone, Harald was þyn name,  
 þat of þe kinde was of Denemarch, in eyþer alf al out.  
 By Emme he adde anoper sone, þat het Hardeknout,  
 þat beye were kynges after hym, as me sal sone rede.  
 þyn kyng was þo þornout al man of noble dede.  
 þo he was alone kyng of grette landes þre,  
 Hym þogte al þe world ne mygte agen yn poer be.  
 And napeles he bygan yn herte in besamneke amende,  
 In þogte on þe bayre grace, þat þoure Louerd hym sende,

1. *All* & 2. *All were cleue*  
 to hym i. *swore*, ther was  
 none he hynde *Ar.* 3. *Helene*  
*Ar.* quam *Ælfgifam*, sive *Æl-*  
*givam*, appellant alii. *Quinetiam*  
 & hoc notandum, plerosque  
 scriptores eandem concubinam,  
 non uxorem, Canuti fuisse asse-  
 rere. Unde sane doctissimus  
 Bradus in textu historie sue  
 (p. 129.) Cnute not long be-  
 fore he died, appointed his  
 eldest son Swane, by his first

*Wife* \* *Elgiva*, to be king of  
 Norway, and his second Son  
 Harold, by the same Woman  
 to be king of England, and  
 Harde-Cnute his Son by Em-  
 me, king of Danemarke; ex  
 Hovedeno nimirum 251. 2. at  
 in notis, \* By most Writers  
 reported to have been a Con-  
 cubine, she was Daughter to  
 a Mercian Noble-man, who is  
 said to have been Earl of  
 Northampton.

And

An louede Englyſſe men, and Engeland þerto,  
 An muche louede holy chyrche & laſteynde alſo,  
 An reſtorede abbeyſ, þat deſtrud were bynore,  
 An chyrchen let bp arere, þat were ariſt as berlore,  
 An let arere monye nywe, & in ſtedes meſt here,  
 As he adde men aſlawe, & batayles ydo er,  
 An bp Alledone & þer aboute meſt chyrchen he let rere,  
 As vor þer ſoulen, þat yſlawe were þere,  
 Alor he & þe kyng Edmond meſt armes þere þere,  
 An meſt man ſlagt þoru hem & batayles þer were,  
 Seynt Alſen's body," þat y martred was  
 At Greneswuch þoru hys fader, as we tolde þat cas,  
 At Seyn Poule's of Londone, as yt was anerþe ydo,  
 Hys owe honde nome yt bp, & as yt bynel þerto,  
 He let yt fayre honoury, & ſende yt atte fyne  
 To þe munſtre of Canterbury, as he lyy gut in ſtryne.  
 þe prydde ger ych vnderſtonde, þat he was alone kyng,  
 fram hys lond of Denemarch me brogte hym tytheng,  
 þat he was þere yworred baſſe of hys fon,  
 He nome wyþ hym of Engeland god knygt monyon,  
 An myd gret poer & muche ſolc þunderward vende anon.  
 So þat he ſone come byſpde hys fon echon,  
 An bylenede hym þer al nygt, & al hys oſt al ſo,  
 An þogte anon amorwe ſtrong batayle do.  
 A gret erl of hys lond, Godwynne was hys name,  
 Myd hys poer myd hym was, þat monyon vnde ſlame.

1. Where he *r.* 2. As | Seynt Alphe Erchebyſſhopa  
 vpon Alhedoune and a bonte | pe's body *r.* 3. And ther  
 there, As for the ſowles of | hit was in ſtryne *r.*  
 hem that ſlayne there were.

Alor

Her þys lond, as me stal hure, ofte he vnde bytraye.  
 He þogte þo þou he mygte þe kyng knout best paye.  
 Wy nygte : hym & hys poer he let army pere,  
 And wende so anonýwar, : as þe kynges son were,  
 : An found hem, as wo seyh, aslepe. he leyde on hem to grounde,  
 An slon and to drof hem alle in a intel stonde.  
 Amorne" þo þe kyng wolde wende vp hys son,  
 An myke Godwýne & hys men, of gyle he dradde anon,  
 þat þe Englyshe hym bytraye wolde, he þogte of inþer mon  
 Her to sle þys Godwýne, and þe Englyshe erþon.  
 An napeles he wende toward hys son myd al hys poer baste,  
 Her to smyte an batayle, & þo ne woud he atte laste  
 Rogt of hem bote caroyne, & þe bodyes dede al so,  
 þo he vound, þat Godwýne such andede adde y do;  
 An delquered hym of hys son, & ybrogt hym so abone,  
 Euereft he louede hym þe more, & al Englyshe dor hys loue.  
 þo he seyh, þat Englyshe men so gode in nede were,  
 An hys son were ouercome, noþyng he nas in fere.  
 : þo he adde one þe kynedom of grete londes þre,  
 hym þogte : al þe world ne mygte agen hys poer be.

1. hym self and 2. After the 3. And founde hem muche del a slepe, so that in a stonde This En- mys of Swethe londe hit brought all to grounde. Alf and eke Ergall of Swethe lond kyngus fust [sic] to kyng knutus host, at his comyngus, Muche harme hadd e dw, but in this case	wyle Godwyn with his men gate of hem the pryse. A morwe 4. Tho hadde he al on the kyngdomes of 5. That in all the worlde ne myght his pere be. Of all his proude debis ne can sche telle nought, Wate of on tale ich wole, as hit cometh in thought A.
---	---

de

Of al þyn proute dedes I ne may verbers nogt,  
 þat I ne mot gon telle of en, non yt comþ in my þogt.  
 I þoufend as in þe ger of grace, & on & twenty þerto,  
 An in þe byfta ger þat kyng knout in fuch goet was yde,  
 He <sup>1</sup> wende, as noble fyre, frem londe to londe,  
 þat <sup>2</sup> hym þogte al world ne fælde agen hym fonde.  
 As he wende aboute by þe lee, & fuch goet addes an fonde,  
 Up achaere he fat adoun, al by þe lee fonde,  
 An <sup>3</sup> enrelonede hys men, as hit bynors hym fode,  
 So þat þe tyme com of þe lee fode,  
 þat yt bygan to were wate, as yt beþ atte tyde.  
 þe kyng byheld þe wexyng an hoker al afyde,  
 So þat þe water wate woxe <sup>4</sup> uppard þey & wyde.  
<sup>5</sup> þogte þyn grete louner, gyt ychelle abyde.  
 þo yt was ney to hym ycome, baldelyche <sup>6</sup> fpar  
 An fturnelyche to þyn water, þo yt alles out brac.  
 "Water," he feyde, "<sup>7</sup> wat þenest ou & ych rede as som  
 no ber.  
 "Under fonde, þat þou art al clene in my goet.  
 "Alor þat lound, up man þou wust, & up man ych fytt her,  
 "Is clene myn al aboute. þer þou wost ymabbe no par.  
 "þermove ych <sup>8</sup> ote þe þyne wexyng anon lode,  
 "þat þou ne be fo hardy nogt, þyn louner's cloþes to wote,

- |                                |                                 |
|--------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| 1. Wende a bonte as <i>nr.</i> | 5. ynt thought this grete lorde |
| 2. He thought in all the       | he wolde a byde ther <i>nr.</i> |
| world none shulde hym with-    | 6. He spak <i>nr.</i>           |
| fonde <i>nr.</i>               | 7. What                         |
| 3. Spak to his                 | thenkest thou? I rede come      |
| <i>nr.</i>                     | no ner <i>nr.</i>               |
| 4. Potius, uppard (idem        | 8. Note <i>nr.</i>              |
| quod Anglo-Sax. uppeapb.)      |                                 |

" Æt hys lymes, ac þu ' mynne let me in þes sytte,  
 " ' Oþer, bi þe seȝ þat ȝch on to þe, ȝchelle rekenȝ mytte.  
 þe water dade worþ hys hande, & wax enere baste,  
 So þat to hys grete louerd hȝt com atte laste,  
 " An watte hys none & hys bet. so longe ȝt wax an heȝ,  
 þat ȝt watte hys brych al aboute, & enere byard ȝt steȝ,  
 So þat hys hupes smourte, & of cold were neȝ.  
 hys grete louerd sturte hym þu, þo he oþer ne seȝ,  
 An wed hym þu to londe, hym þogte er late ȝnou.  
 He biheld toward þe water, & hys grete herte wof drow."  
 " Wyte," he seȝde, " al men, þat aneȝe wonȝeȝ her,  
 " þat ȝt nȝs bote þe pure malle enȝ kynges poer.  
 " Æt þat no man ȝs warpe to be ȝclaped kyng,  
 " Wote þe heȝe kyng of þenene, þat wroȝte al þȝng,  
 " þat hap þeste of water, and of erþe al so.  
 " Þenene & helle & ech þȝng mot nede hys þeste do,  
 " An habbe hym as louerd, wor ȝnam non ȝmys,  
 " þernor me to clappe kyng, myd bryȝt ȝt ȝs.  
 " þernor ȝch bihote God, þat ȝne sal kynges crowne  
 " Ænere bere aneȝe. wor my poer ȝs þer donne.  
 He wende hym worþ to chȝrche, & bynore þe rode com,  
 An wof meke herte ȝteslyche hys kynges crowne nom,

- 
1. My name A. 2. Or  
 elles, by the seȝ that is me,  
 ech wolle fyȝht mytte A.  
 3. Hit mette his hosed and his  
 shone, and ȝut for prȝyt he  
 nolde Wyse fort he nedes  
 moſte, or elles drenches he  
 shulde. And thenne he sturte  
 vpe of the water he thought  
 late i now, And he hilde to  
 warde the water, & his grete  
 hert wifh drow A. 4. That  
 hit is bute the malle any  
 kynges power A.

An sette upon the rode hened, & seyde þat he alone  
 Was wurþe to crowne here, & oþer kynges none.  
 He bylenede þe crowne here, syhynde wel sore,  
 An þerafter vp hys hened ne com he namore.  
 An me seyh, þat he no bar neuere þs crowne of Engeland,  
 Ac ne bar pulke ne non oþer þerafter, ych vnder stonde.  
 Synþe god man he becom & aforced hym ynou,  
 An byhet God enereft afterward to bylene wou,  
 An God & holy chyrche to louye myd al hys mygte,  
 An make godes lawes, & susteyne ech rygte.  
 þes byþeste he held wol wel, & gode lawes y non  
 He made þe beste þat mygte be, & to ech godenesse drou.  
 Alor þe manslagt þat he adde ydo, & þe vnrýgt y lome,  
 An vor þe monye gode cas þat hym ofte come,  
 He byhet God to wende þe holy wey to Rome,  
 So þat he & hys knyghtes wyþ god herte þen wey nome.  
 An as he toward Rome wende by mony alond,  
 Wanne he eny luper lawes in eny stude bond,  
 þe prince, oþer louerd of stude, sone he out sogte,  
 And bote he granted hym amendement, myd tresour he yt bogte.  
 An vor he was man of such poer, bewe agen hym wrogte,  
 So þat enere ware he come gode lawes he brogte.  
 ' Gengyl men þat he bond in prison ek ydo,  
 Oþer in warde myd vnrýgt, he bogte hem out also.  
 At Rome he was anonge nayre, and alsoyled also.  
 Agen he wende to Engeland, þo al þes was y do.  
 þo he com agen, at Glasstynbury hym longede ar he were,  
 Alor loue of kyng Edmond, þat ybured was þere,

---

 1. Goude men *dr.*

Sf 2

þat

þat he claped his draper, þer þe crowþ þat bytanes hem was  
her.

þat þodi he honourede y non þo he cam þere,  
An al þe stude þer his lons, & dade dayr offrynge,  
An amendeþe þat þous myd mony a rýche þýnge,  
An gaf hem londes and rentes, and confermede al so  
þe gester, þat oþer kýnges hadde er ýgyne þerte,  
Of rentes and of londes, as þe kýng Cufred,  
An kýng Contwýne & Ine, & suppe kýng Alfred,  
Edward and Speldon, Edmond and Edgar.  
Her gester he confermede, & to make ech man ýwar,  
To holde þýs gester stable, amansý he let al so  
Alle þat aboute were her gester enere vn do.  
He confermede her londes, as frelcþe to holde y wýs,  
By gode chartre & her rentes, as þe kýng huld þýs.  
þýs kýng knout was twenty ger kýng of Engelond,  
An in a þousend ger of grace & þrytty, ých vnderfonde,  
An fyre he drede at Blakstebury, & at Wyndchestre myd gret  
grute

At Seyn Swýthýnes he was ýdured, þere as he lýþ gut.

**H**wald, þe kýnge's sone knout, after hym was kýng.  
ýcrowned he was at Orenford, a strewe þorn alle  
þeng.

Of þe künde he was of Denomarch, of þe eror 1 wyl y bore.  
þe lasse he louede Englyshe men, & Engelond þer use.

1. Desunt omnia metra, ad	multa scripsit auctor prosaicus.
Harakdum hunc spectantia, in	2. Hinc ait scriptor prosaicus
Cod. <i>A</i> in quo tamen de eodem	in <i>A</i> . In the yere of oure
	lorde

þe barðe ger þat he was kȳng, Emma, þe gode quene,  
 þe drof out of Engelond, (e hys krowede made ysene)  
 His kȳpmoder, hys fader wyl, þat quene adde ybe tynȳ  
 Of Engelond, e þat hys fader let bette in Flaumandȳ.  
 þe þyn quene was of londe ydeyne, þoru hys weþermȳne,  
 heo wende to þe erl of Flaumandȳ, þat het Balowȳne.  
 þyn erl hys bayre vnderþong, þat was hende e fre,  
 And tok hys þe castel of Bruges, inne vorto be.  
 þere was hys gode quene, weþoute enȳ strȳnȳge,  
 Wrote hys kȳpsone was dede, Harald þe inȳer kȳnge.  
 Wor he nas kȳng bette four ger, e hys monȳen binnȳre,  
 Ar he lay at Oxenforde, e drou toward þe deȳre,  
 And deȳde þer in pȳne ynou, e lufte hys bodeȳ me der  
 To þe abbey of Westminster, e bared yt bayre þere.  
 In þe ger of grace a þousend, e on e fourtyþe gere,  
 þyn kȳng deȳde in Aueryl, monȳ glad man was þere.

**H** Erkennot hys broȳer þo þen weȳ sone nome  
 fram Denemarch in to Engelond, e to Sandwȳch  
 com.

þoru þe baronye of Engelond e of Denemarch al so  
 Ichols he was to be kȳng, vor hit enlenteȳde þerto.  
 Wor he adde somdel to Engelond more kunde þan þe oȳer,  
 Wor he was, in hys moder all, Seȳnt Edward's broȳer.  
 Sone so he was kȳng y mad, after hys moder he sende  
 þe quene Emma to Flaumandȳ, e byȳan hys stat amende,

---

lorde M. XXXVI. Knutus sone | doughter toke the regne.  
 Harold of Erle Elselung | 1. As non as he was ar.

An



An hald hÿr dagre, as rÿgt was, hÿs moder & quene al sa.  
 Ac hÿs Herdeknout nas kÿng nogt follyche geres tua.  
 Mor her saylede <sup>1</sup> of "ten dames, þat he ne deÿde" of "gwyk.  
 Ac <sup>2</sup> Lamhupe he was ded, & ybured he was & ys  
 At Seyn Smythne's attil Wyncheſtre <sup>3</sup> by hÿs fader þat lÿp here.  
 Kÿnges of Denemarch in hÿs manere were  
 Kÿnges here of hÿs lond, ech after oþer.  
 þe soue dork after þe fader, þe broþer after þe broþer.  
 And Engeland was out of kande fyre & tventÿ ger,  
 In worre & pyne & ſorme ynou, as Seyn Dunſton <sup>4</sup> by þet her.  
 Ac þo hÿs þre kÿnges were ded of Denemarch, here were  
<sup>5</sup> "Briene de namon in Engeland, þat of þe kande were.  
 þo moſte yt nede come agen to þe rÿgt eyr of kande,  
 þe holÿ man Seyn Edward, þat enere werþ in munde.  
 Mor <sup>6</sup> Aldred, hÿs eldore broþer, was arſt aſlame here  
 Wyþ trefon in Engeland, ychÿlle telle in much manere.  
 Atyme, to ſpeke myð hÿs moder, to Engeland he com,  
<sup>7</sup> "An gret ſolc of Normandÿs myð hÿm hÿder he nome.  
<sup>8</sup> "An þe falſe erl of Engeland, Godwÿne was ÿs name,  
 (þat <sup>9</sup> "enere" adde wyþ trefon hÿs lond y do ſlame,)  
<sup>10</sup> "And dorker he adde god, he þogte he wolde fonde  
 Make hÿre gut, gÿf he mygte, quene of Engeland.  
 þat <sup>11</sup> "Aldred nolde ſponſe nogt hÿs dorker he was in fere,  
 Mor prute & hÿs heÿnylle, gÿf þat he kÿng were.

1. Deest Ar.	2. Deest Ar.	mo Ar.	7. Aluered, Ar.
3. L. Lamhupe. Nam' Lam-	4. We for hÿs fa-	8. And muche peple Ar.	9.
hethe in Ar.	5. dre thre [l. there] Ar.	Deest Ar.	10. Ofte tÿme Ar.
Seide er Ar.	6. Wylafte no	11. I doughter Ar.	12. Aluered Ar.

To þe gongore broþer Seynt Edward hys hope was more  
ynome,

For he was symple & myldore, & 'eþ to overcome.

þernore þo he sey Alfred so gret þepneſſe drame,

He þogte þou he myȝte do, þat he were of lȝf dawe.

To þe heye men of Engelond baſte he wende aboute,

And ſeyde, Engelond myȝte be of Alfred in gret doute.

2 For he þogte, ȝyf he were kyng, þat folc of Normandye

All maſtres make in Engelond, þoru" ſtrengþe & tricheſye,

An deſeryth hem alſo þoru Normannes he þogte,

þernore myd hym of Normandye ſo muche folc he broȝte:

So þat 3 heȝ men of þe lond he broȝte al to hys wylle,

4 þat hit nome Aldred, & al hys folc, myd trycherpe ſtille,

An ladde hem baſte ybounde to Guldeforde al ſo.

Awey! ſely gulteſe men, lute adde hit myſ do.

þo hit come to Guldeforde, hys erl Godwyne þe arewe

lete hys gulteſe men ſette al arewe,

An telle out enere þe tepe man, & þe nyne þoru out þe nome,

And let ſmyte of her alre heuedys, & made a reufal dom.

þo þe tepe was alȝue, he þogte of more won.

Hym þogte þer were to monȝe alȝue of ynou.

All þat were alȝue byleneu, a rewe ef ſone he drou,

An tolde of hem þe tepe out, & þe nyne ſlou.

So þat 5 þer byleneu alȝue bewe þo,

And pulke out of Engelond he drof myd muche wo.

1. Lithlyche to	2. He	thourgh	3. Certeȝne men
ſaide, yf he were kyng, folke		4. So that they toke	
of Normandye All maſtres in		lured in a tyme all ſtyle	
this londe ſulde be an hye,		5. He ne laſt but ſewe a lȝue	
And diſſherite Englyſh men		thw,	

Alfred

Willelme hit lade to Chy, & ' quite out bope his eye,  
 An hulde hym here in prisson, ' borte selij mon gan heye.  
 Was hym of hym Godwynne a srome & lufes dem,  
 gut owre lade, at he deyde, gut weete he pris of dem.  
 Mor, as he shelle hee after here, he deyde in pyne ynow,  
 An srome hee pat he dade into he bylon.

**S**ynt Edward in Normande was so bylonde alone  
 An bar, as wo sch, of he kunde, as he spung of he  
 bone.

He dradde, for he was alone of he tem bylonde here,  
 An was he traytors of Englonde so falle & lufes were,  
 Leste he were of his son horn trefon ybort,  
 An, for lone of hee crytunge, so to bope ybort.  
 To God he made his playnte, ofte wepynd mel blyne,  
 An naueliche he make his son of Denemarch were aigne.  
 "Help me," he seyde, "in his wo, Lord, bydde ych he.  
 " : Mor my frend & my nerte my scondes agen me.  
 " My fader, pat leude here in worre & in stryf,  
 " In worre & srome & for ynow he endede his lyf.  
 " My bretheren be bope allame horn trefon al so,  
 " : My arrens be yloynd, & out of Englonde yde,"

1. Butte .r. 2. For that  
 he ganne deye. He seith, that  
 his nauell gutte oute I take  
 was, I buyt to a post, and al-  
 termach a pas he was I  
 made by the goste euer gan a  
 bonte, for he hadde I drawe

hym selfe his guttes al oute.  
 Was this of this Godwynne  
 a full luther dower .r. 3. For  
 thulke that shulde my frendes  
 be scondeth a yest me .r.  
 4. And my Colyns I demed  
 of londe both tyme, .r.

An

"An my moder <sup>1</sup> ywedded to my meste so,  
 "An ych alons bylened, moder shal ych, Louerd, go  
 "Hit pat of my erytage al londerdes beþ  
 "Wylneþ alle þyng most my deþ, as men yseh.  
 "And al pouere, Louerd, ycham to þe bylened ywys,  
 "An þou wolt, Louerd, help be to hym þat faderles ys.  
 "Al to soþe yt ys ycome, þat Seynt Dunston gan telle.  
 "þe wreche of my <sup>2</sup> uncle deþ, þat hys stepmoder let quelle,  
 "My fader aboghte yt dere ynou, & my breþeren bo.  
 "So þat þer nys non bylened, bote ych, Louerd, & nanmo.  
 "Hys yt byne & systýr, Louerd, non mon ago,  
 "þat to Engelond, vor þulke deþ, vorst com such wo.  
 "Non longe shal yt ylaste & Louerd, weþ drau þyn honde.  
 "Of þy wreche sende som ende, & ren on Engelond.  
 þo þys kynges of Denemarch alle þre were dede,  
 An Alfred al so aflawe, þe barons nome to rede,  
 An oþer heye men al so, as God gef þat cas,  
 An chose Seynt Edward to her kyng, þat kunde eyr þo was,  
 As he was þerto ychese, er þan he were y bore.  
 þo was yt to soþe y come, þat yleýd was bynore,  
 þat Seynt Peter at Glastýnburý to býlloþ Brygtwold seyde.  
 þo com vorst pes to Engelond, after <sup>3</sup> þe" wrecchede.  
 We sende after hym to Normandy, to Engelond <sup>4</sup> þat" he com,  
 "An lute folc of Normandy myd hym hyder nome,

1. I wedded was to A.  
 2. Non pouer bylaste icham  
 to the, Lorde, I wys. Lorde,  
 as the luste, helpe the childe  
 that faderles is A. 3. Un-  
 cle's deth, that my [l. þys]

Vol. I.

stepmoder A. 4. Deest A.  
 5. Deest A. 6. I fewe folke of  
 Normandy heder with him  
 he nome. So that with litell  
 unconthe A.

T :

So

So þat myd late onkeþ folc to Engeland he drou.  
 þe hejmen come agen hym myd soye & prute ynon,  
 In vnderuouge hym as her louerd bayre þoru all þynge,  
 In aneſter day at Wynecheſtre crowned hym to kyng.  
 I ſacred he was þe to kyng of erchebyſſopes tuo,  
 Of Canterbury & Euermyk, & other byſſopes al ſo.  
 It was in a þouſend yer, & fourty & tuo,  
 After þat God anerþe com, þat he was crowned ſo.  
 þe was soye in Engeland al oute in eche tyde.  
 Hys godeneſſe & hys gode law aboute ſprong wel wyde,  
 þat þer nas non god prute, ne kyng in nont londe,  
 þat ne wylæde enqueyntance of hym, ych vnderſtonde.  
 þe emperour of Rome to hym in gode loue ywys  
 Obleged by hys meſſagers al þyng þat was hys.  
 For Edmonde's ſone yreneſide, þat hys on broþer was,  
 Hadde ywedded hys colyne, he was glad of þat cas.  
 In Seyn Edward ney kun was þe kyng of France al ſo,  
 þat eche þyng clene þat hys was he obleged hym to.  
 So þat þer nas prince nout, þat at hys wylle was,  
 Bote he one of Denemarch, þat euere hys ſo was.  
 Seynt Edward, bor al hys god, Debonere was ynon,  
 In namelyche to pouere men, to non prute he ne drou.  
 Kenſol he was to needy men, of hys almeſſe large & fra.  
 Of more deuocyon non man in chyrche ne mygt be.  
 He was ſelue pleye wroþ, ne in glotonye, ne in prute.  
 þey hys treſour were ylore, þer of he tolde late.  
 So hoþy iſt þe lawe & god, ſo chaſt & ſo clene,  
 þat þey men of þe lond wolde hem alday ment,

1. That the hegh men of the londe wolde hit al day be  
 ment,

þat hit nōðde non eȝr hȝtmeȝ hem, e þat gret peryl ȝt was,  
 ðor þer mȝhte come to al þe lond muche wo þer such cas.  
 ðor ȝif he adde an hand eȝr byȝte bi hȝs wȝf,  
 þe ſpkeror were þat lond, wuh oute worre & ſtryf.  
 1 þe erl Godwȝne, þe ſaile man, þat þe kȝnge's broþer ſlen  
 Aldred, as ȝch telds er, an dogter god ȝuon  
 Of holy lȝf & clene edde, ðȝȝe man hȝre name,  
 þat, as ȝt ȝs of here ȝȝȝte, & of hȝre holy fame,  
 þat as þe rofe ſprȝng of þe bær, þat ſarp & hene ȝs,  
 Al ſo com þe clene mayde of þe luper man & wȝf.  
 Þȝs luper man was haſte chaȝte to heȝ men ȝlome,  
 To brȝnge yt þerto, ȝef he wȝhte, þat þe kȝng hȝs dogter  
 nome.

ðe ſeyde þe kȝng, þat þe moſte nede weddȝ wȝf,  
 An þat þet mayde was hȝm beſt, nor hȝr clene lȝf.  
 þe kȝng hȝm byþoȝte prȝuelȝche & ſȝlle,  
 þat in ſuch cas god ȝt was, to do þe wȝlle.  
 An nor heȝ was ſo clene mayde, & of ſo holy lȝne,  
 þe betere hȝm were in holȝnalle to nȝme hȝr to wȝne,"  
 þan an heȝe kȝnge's dogter, of 1 berre londe ȝ broȝt,  
 þat to hȝs holy lȝne wolde acardȝ nȝgt.

mene, And that he ne hadde non heire gret perille hit was, *Ar.*

1. Godwȝne erle a dough-ter he hadde, that was of grete fame, And of clene lȝf alſo, Edithe was hure name. And as the kȝns of a brete ſprȝngeth that hene is, Alſo

ſpronge this holy mayde of luther kynd i wȝs. And ſuth that the kȝng nede muſte wedde a wȝf, ðe ſaide the mayde was to him good for hure clene lȝf, That hit was better to him to haue hure to wȝf *Ar.* 2. ferne *Ar.*

"An weddede hys mayde," þat so hely & clene was,  
 More berte paye : þat lond, þan vor eny oþer cas.  
 Longe hit were to gadere, hys gode kyng & quene,  
 He of ogt bote of helynesse into yt was ysene.  
 For God, as hit leyde ofte, hit toke to wýtnesse,  
 þat bytvene hem neuere nas bote clannesse.  
 Hope hit were at one : worde, to lýbbe in clene lyne.  
 "So þat hit were wyþoute eyr, me þynch, vor al hys wýne.  
 þe kyng of Denemarch & hys men þretned hym wel baste.  
 So þat hit : greýþed hym hyderward atte laste.  
 A Wýtesoneday, as Seynt Edward at hys make stod,  
 "An bed vor þe pes of þe lond, þat God yt sende god,  
 Mygt atte sacryng he stod as he lowe,  
 In þe chýrche of Westmýnster, as men : býhelde ynore.  
 Hit þat hym were mess prync, asked men yt were  
 þe kyng þo he hem come, & wy þe made sach chere :  
 "Certes, sýres," quap þe kyng, "ýhered be Gode'slonde,  
 "þe luper men of Denemarch, myð her kyng of þe londe,  
 "To her alde luperhede yturneð adde her þegt,  
 "To worry owr sacre paye, þat owr Louerd us aþ ybrot.  
 "An to day, in hys god tyme, her peer clene hit name,  
 "In þe wynd hem payde wel, & to þe see hit come,  
 "Herto destrue Engeland, as hit abbeþ ofte ydo.  
 "An þulke tyme, þat ge yleýe þat ych somdel lou so,

1. So that he this made	him and to his londe God
wedded, Ar.	shulde sende pces gode, Atte
2. The Ar.	sacryng he stod, right as
3. Accord, Ar.	thogh he lowgh, Ar.
4. So that	7. Hit
heirles was the kyng, for	seigh i nowgh Ar.
all the quene his wyf Ar.	8. De-
5. Dight Ar.	stourbe Ar.
6. And bade so	9. For the Ar.

"þe

" þe kyng by an ladders <sup>1</sup> to þe schip clam an heȝ,  
 " An þren vp to down in þe see, & adreunþe, as ȝch yfey,  
 " An hys men, as in manhope, wende hem ægen blyue,  
 " So þat ȝch hope to God payn, þe wule ȝham alyue.  
 Messengers to Denemarch lone yfend were,  
 And, as þe kyng adde yfled, <sup>2</sup> to soþe hit founde þere.  
 Neuer eft hit of Denemarch hyder nolde come.  
 For god. prince al alond was þe bet yfome.  
 For þe lond was fyue & sixty ȝer in worre & in sore,  
 As <sup>3</sup> he haddeþ hard bynore, & afterward gut more,  
 As ge wolde here her-afterward. ac þe wule he was kyng,  
 þat lond was in god lone & pes, wyþoute eche stryunge.

**S**ynt Edward broȝte to Engeland out of Normandye  
 Aþen, <sup>4</sup> þat adde hym flems ydo god & corteysye.  
 And Robert a clerc he louede mek, for he gaf hym  
 þe bysshopryche

Of London, & suppe of Canterbury þe archebyshopryche.  
 þo he was archebyshop, in þer he was and prout.  
 þe kyng hym <sup>5</sup> louede, & alle hys dedes þoru hym dude al out.  
 þer was vp þe quene Emma, þe kynges moder, y do  
 A in þer sclandre, & vp þe byshop of Wyndchestre al so,  
 þat <sup>6</sup> hit in contenance to folȝe hem bere.  
 þe archebyshop tolde þe kyng more <sup>7</sup> þan þer were,

1. To shipward clam an  
 hiegh, And fell doune in the  
 see, and a dreynthe neigh, *Ar.*  
 2. So that as for the Danes  
 may ich be withoute stryue.  
 Messengers *Ar.* 3. The sothe  
 they *Ar.* 4. ye *Ar.* 5. That,

while he flemed was, hadde  
 do him courtesye *Ar.* 6. Loue  
 ed ener most, and dude by  
 him al oute *Ar.* 7. Hit to  
 gedere in contenance *Ar.*  
 8. Than sothe were, *Ar.*

þat



þat þer was foul lecherys bymene hem y do,

¹ And þat þorn þe quene þyr sone was bifren to þere yre,  
And þat he ne myȝt nogt bylene, þate he amendement toke  
Of to byl dede, manne þe adde þer foules to leke.  
þe kyng leuede hym wel ynow, e ſaue þe nolde abyde,  
þat he nolde berſt hym vengeaunce to þys ſyde.  
þe biſſop þe bynams berſt al þys laȝe er,

² And ſuppe hym to priſon, e bynams hym þys er.  
þys moder þe dede to worde, e ſpake iſſe dede þer ſonde  
In þe abbeye of Wharfedale, e bynams þys þyr leude.  
þys quene made deal y nou, e þyr letteres myȝe ſende,

³ To byſſages, þat heo truſte to, yre ſat herte amende,  
⁴ And þat heo wolde þorn fury yre, ȝyl me wolde þat heo bere,  
Oþer tæde, ſowȝ, þat heo gylteles were.

þe kyng was weak e myȝde ynow, as, as þe byſſages hede,  
Wolde þys moder do alout, þate as þe oþer ȝt made.

And napeles hit were aton," as hit wolde deſyre,

þat þys moder e þyr ſpæce ſelde myȝe fury yre.

1. And that Alured her  
ſone thorgh her was dede al-  
ſo, We cauſe that Knut and  
Hardeknut ſooner ſounded thorgh  
al thing þore than Ethelred,  
and oþer of his ſþring.  
As the commune fame was  
thorgh oute all the lond, That  
þeo ſoued Knut in hert, me  
wrong. Gude underſtande.  
The Erchebiſſhop ſeide, þe  
we myȝt ſer-hit be ſo nought,  
And that to amendement hit  
moſte nedes be brought. The  
kyng him loued of this thing,

and ſeide þe nolde a biſe, ⁊.  
2. And brought him in pri-  
ſon, and him by name his ſee  
⁊. 2. To hege men, that  
þeo truſte to, ⁊. 4. And  
ſeide, that heo wolde thorgh  
ſaye ſee, of that me herte  
hede, Þere, that heo was  
gylteles of that ilke dede. The  
kyng was weak e myȝde i  
nowe after ſunne's rede,  
Wolde haue lette his moder  
go, but ſunne hit with ſede.  
Atte laſte hit were atte on ⁊.  
5. Oþer her ſelf ſpæce ⁊.

þe

þe archebyſcop Robert hadde of þys doute,  
 An, þey he nere i noȝt ybe, to þys conſeyl he com.  
 þe byſcopen : he ladde a conſeyl, "Lordbynges," he ſayde,  
 "Ich wene þor hyſ moder my louerd þe kyng gebede,  
 "þat nys as no woman, ac as þe deuel ych doute,  
 "þat, þorto ſhende hyre owe ſone þe kyng, heo ys aboute,  
 "þat ſeyþ he ys i amaned, þor hyre copynere  
 "þe byſcop : he deþ in warde, of wan heo mole hyr ſhere.  
 "Ȝyf heo ſkery hyre of hym, þou mole heo berþere mo  
 "Skere of þat heo aþ yde, hyre ſone's ȝret mo,  
 "Of þat 7 heo Alfred hyre ſone radde to deþe brynge,  
 "And þat heo porueyde poiſon to hyre ſone þe kynges  
 "Ac ȝyf heo hyre 8 ſkere mole of eche of þys þynge,  
 "And heo hyre ſkerynge do after mylokynge,  
 "And heo of ſcapye harmyles þe gultes echon,  
 "Icholle, þor me & þor þe kyng, þat gult nabbeþ non,  
 "And grante, þat my dygnyte me be al bynome,  
 "And þat heo & þe byſcop ek to hyre 10 ſta aȝen come.  
 "Let nyme four yrene ſares þor þer ſulne al aſare,  
 "An ſpene þor þe byſcop, & ȝyf heo yt may 11 dure,

1. That i bede, to spake to thus, Lordynges, 3. The kyng for the quene his moder heder us hath i bede. She fareth nat as a woman, but as a deuail, Ich doute, And for to ſhende 4. I curſed, 5. That he dade in warde, of wham the thenketh hure ſhere. yf	the cloueth hure ſelf of hym, 6. Skere hure of 7. She Alured hure ſone let to deþ 8. Þange 9. Ich grauntz, for me and for the kyng, that gultes mote the goon, And graunte, that all my dygnyte me be al by nome, 10. Stat 11. Endure,
---	---

"Danne

"Wanne hit liggeth in þe flor to steppe up echon  
 "After oþer barenot, and heo bylene non,  
 "þat heo ne steppe wýþ folle fot wýþoute quakyng,  
 "And 1 gýf bet bet þanne lauf, woute ený wemmyng,  
 "Granteth hem al quýt. ac gýf heo quaketh 2 ont,  
 "Oþer stepþ byþede, oþer hyre bet in ený wemme be ýbrogþ,  
 "Holdeþ hem guilty of þe dede, & lateþ hem also  
 "Al her lýf, as wýchemen, in strong prýson be ýdo.  
 þys soume was ygranted þo, & certeyn day al so  
 At Seyn Smythýne's at Wýnchestre, wanne yt sholde be ýdo.  
 þo me tolde þe 3 quene bore, heo was glad ýnou.  
 So þat þoru al Engeland 4 þys word sone drou,  
 þat, þo þe day was ýcome, so muche folc þer com,  
 þat me nuhte ware hem tnný, borto se þys dom.  
 þe heye men neý of Engeland were þere echone,  
 5 To se Gode's grace of þe quene, bote archebyssop one.  
 Ac þe seýnede hym sowlde lýk, & neý þe see to be,  
 He býlenede at Douere, gýf need were, to fle.  
 þe quene, þoru þe kynges heste, 6 ýbrogþ was also  
 fram Wðrwellle to Wýnchestre, 7 þys iugement to do.  
 To Seyn Smythýne's strýne þen weý heo ndm 8 wel rýgt,  
 Gladlyche þo heo þader com, & býlened al nýgt  
 In wop & in orýlons, þat reuþe yt was to se,  
 And enere bed þe holýman hyre help borto be.

1. ýf her feet be thanne saf	see this purgýng of the quene,
withoute <i>ar.</i> 2. Dught, <i>ar.</i>	saf the Archebýssop a lout
3. Quene her of, heo <i>ar.</i> 4.	<i>ar.</i> 6. I brought forth was
The tythýng hete of drow.	tho <i>ar.</i> 7. Hure purgacýon
And tho the day <i>ar.</i> 5. To	to do <i>ar.</i> 8. full <i>ar.</i>

As heo bel in a late flep, Seyn Smýthyn to hyre com.  
 "Dogter," he seyde, "be studenast to vnderunge þý dom.  
 "Icham Smýthyn, wam þou <sup>1</sup> dyt, & vergýt þý sone þýs dede,  
 "An to passý þe furý ýre, <sup>2</sup> nane þou non drede.  
 þe quene heo was glad, þo heo awok, of þat þýs godemen seyde.  
<sup>3</sup> þet folc com þýche a morme, to se þýs wonder dede,  
 An þe heymen come. echon, þen dom to hure sone.  
 An þe kyng, þen dom vorto gýne, an heý sat on hys trone.  
 Wynore hym, vorto auonge hýr dom, þe quene me brogt al so.  
 þe kyng hýr easte sturnelyche, mer heo wolde þe dom do &  
<sup>4</sup> þe quene wepude wel sore, þe kyng ansuerede þýs :  
 "Syre kyng, þou art mý louerd & mý sone ýmýs.  
 "Ich emme þat þe bere, & vor þe groned e ylome,  
 "þe wule þou in mý wombe were, & at þou fram me come.  
 "A sclandre ýs bp me pbrog of mý chyldren tnepe,  
 "Of þe and Alfreð þý broþer, þat mý sonas were beýs,  
 "þat ých wolde atte rede be, þý broþer to deþe brynge,  
 "And þe vorto apoysoný. & gut of þryðde þýnge,  
 "þat ých sunne of lecherye mýð ðylwýne al so,  
 "þat ýs býslop of Wýnchestre, wolde abbe ýdo.  
 "Ich <sup>5</sup> clupýe God to wýtnesse, þat <sup>6</sup> me to day ýhure,  
 "þat, gýt ých <sup>7</sup> of ený" gultý am, <sup>8</sup> þat" ých mote þoru þýs  
 fure  
 "Brenne býneþe & perysý, þat me mowe ýse þe wreche.  
 "An gýt ých gulteles am þer of, þat God þet soþe teche.

1. Biddest, *Ar.* 2. Have  
 thou no drede *Ar.* 3. The  
 peple *Ar.* 4. The quene  
 thenne wepyng sore, to the  
 kyng seide thus: *Ar.* 5. Take  
*Ar.* 6. Be this day hit hure,  
*Ar.* 7. Desunt *Ar.* 8. Deest  
*Ar.*

þe quene was þo bery gned ⁊ myd many a wepynde eye  
 Of byshopes and of heymen, & of oþere þat yt playe.  
 þese eyche clafes were of ydo, þate þat ⁊ þes was by wend  
 ⁊ hyre body wif a mantel, a wympel aboute her hound.  
 þe leggen bare bynethe þe kne, þat me myghte eche knape yte.  
 Awey! bode bycome yt quene to bar vorto be.  
 Aþe droghe bery ⁊ þys fury thras, & leyde ⁊ þys al atene,  
 ⁊ þe bare eþe ylope, Gode's grace to thene.  
 þe byshopes ⁊ blessed þe kares, & þe quene al to,  
 And ladde hyre bery in eyer hall, þys iugement to be.  
 þe quene þegte al on God, & to þentat calte hyre eye,  
 And ne leþode no þyng downward, & as hit alle yleye,  
 ⁊ heo flap to þys fury þre, euerich flap al clene.  
 Anke heo hyr sulf wanne yt was, ne blenye nogt ene.  
 þer was soye & blyde þ nou, & ⁊ⁱ many a wepynde eye,  
 Worst þer tere, & suppe þer soye, þo hit þys yleye.  
 þe byshopes, þat hyre ladde, þer soye ⁊ wepe al to,  
 And ⁊ herede God & þegn Smythyn, þo þys ⁊ myracle was  
 do,

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 1. With many a wepyng<br>tere Of lordes and barons,<br>and other that were there <i>r.</i><br>2. She <i>r.</i> 3. With a light<br>mantell, and a velle a'boute<br>her hound. These leggen bare<br>bynethe kne, me myght see<br>her knappe. Selcouth thing<br>hit was to see a quene so bar-<br>fote knappe <i>r.</i> 4. Then <i>r.</i><br>5. Hem <i>r.</i> 6. Upon the | playne erthe ther, Gode's<br><i>r.</i> 7. Blessed tho the quene,<br>an prayde for hure alle, <i>r.</i><br>8. Her pro þys in <i>r.</i> 9. Heo<br>knapped bypon the fury<br>thras, thamelow all clene.<br>Herself he nist whanne hit<br>was, ne blenched heo na ene<br><i>r.</i> 10. Ganp a wepyng eye,<br><i>r.</i> 11. Wepte <i>r.</i> 12. He<br>ried <i>r.</i> 13. Deft <i>r.</i> |
|--|--|

In ladde hire outmost of þe church, þe quene biȝen to criſt :

"Wor þe lone of Ihesu Criſt, we biȝe next to þe biſchope,

"To do my penance myſſende, ac in alle manere,

"As yt me yloked was, in haly church here.

"Madame," quap þe biſchope, "þou + all gðe ymyne

"So helpe me God," quap þe quene, "ynneſte next en þys.

"So fur yus belde, none ſay in þysse place.

"Vote non ych yt herſe yſe, yrede be Gode's gruce.

"Ledeh me þanne to my ſone, þat he mome ys.

"My bet adoue, I che bynne, more hit ymmed be.

þo hit broȝte hire to þe kyng, þe kyng byggynge hit woude,

Wopynde I open heud, to ſprad al to þe grounde.

Myt was longe ac he myȝte ſpeke, wor deal þat he made.

Atte laſte he ros up, ac þe biſſopes hym bade,

And bel to ys moder bet, adoun anon ake.

"Moder," he ſeyde, "ych adbe mys ydo agen God & agen þe,

"þat Inam next worþe to be þy ſone, ac þer ſepnt charyte,

"Wor þe pyte þat of þe Magdaleyn God adde, borgeſ yt me.

"Sone," quap þys moder þo, "as al þe þys men yſeþ,

"God ap bayre yſſemed, þat we gulteſe beþ.

"Atte bygunnyge þeroure agen þe byſſop ych rede

"Amendement do, þat þe gultelalle of þe dede.

1. This A. 2. As hit was  
deyned to me was, in haly  
A. 3. Seide A. 4. Was it  
do co this A. 5. I nat hit  
nat I wys. So ſuyre Ich ſelte,  
we ſay in this ilke place A.  
6. Heried A. 7. I ne am not  
worthy be thi ſone, for  
much the gulte Ich haue.

for thy of God and of the  
merry now ich craue A.  
8. These folk I ſeeth A.  
9. Amendement let be do, that  
gulteleſ is of that dede.  
Sithen thou maiste a penſe  
me, for ich mote be mylde, As  
kendeliche the moder ought  
to the childe A.

V 2

"And

"And saþþe ægen me þou myȝt, þer ich mot neþe be mylde,  
 "Iȝ kanðe of moder wole & blod ægen my chylde.  
 þe þe byſſop was ycome ⁊ wepynde wel ſore,  
 þe kyng wel þoun to hyȝ bet, & cryde hym mylce and ore.  
 þe byſſop ⁊ wepynde al ſo þer gaf yt hym anon.  
 So þat þoru þe kynges bone, þe byſſopes echon,  
 ⁊ Ech after oþer, aſoyled þen kyng of hyȝ treſpas  
 Wþyð gerden in hyȝ naked rug, & þat gret pite was.  
 þre ſtrokes þe moder ek, ⁊ wepynde wel ſore,  
 gef hym ⁊ to aſoyly, & ne myȝte þer reuþe more.  
 þe cuſte þe kyng ⁊ hyȝ moder, & þe byſſop ſaþþe alſo,  
 And herede gerne Seyn Smythyn, þat ſuch myracle adde ydo.  
 þe kyng þo ⁊ myð gode herte deluery þet anon,  
 Boþe quene and byſſop, her maners echon.  
 Hyȝe tonnes þe quene anon of þat þer owene was  
 gef þe houſe of Seyn Smythyn, þer þer holy cas.  
 And þe byſſop oþer nyȝe of hyȝ crytage ywys.  
 Wor þe nyȝe fury ſares yȝene was al hyȝ.  
 þe kyng ⁊ confermed her maners, & hym ſulſ gef al ſo  
 Tureys God gode maners Seyn Smythyn þerto,

1. Weþyng full *r.* 2. We-  
 pyng alſo for gaf him a non  
*r.* 3. Alſoilled him right  
 there of his treſpas With  
 yerdes on his naked rigge,  
 þat grete pite was *r.* 4.  
 Weþyng full *r.* 5. For ab-  
 ſolution, for rewthe heo ne  
 myȝt no more *r.* 6. And  
 his moder, and the biſhoppes  
 alſo, And hered God and

Seynt Smythyne of this mi-  
 racle i do *r.* 7. With goude  
 hert let deliuer a non, Boþe  
 the quene and biſhop, her  
 londes ebery echon *r.* 8. Con-  
 fermed al this, and him ſelf  
 gaf there to II. god Tounes,  
 for that he hadde myȝdom, That  
 wolde be xx. in all, þer was  
 nat lite there. Wit wolde  
 ſpynde the Conent wortes i  
 nowt

þat wolde be twenty vnder al, & þat nas noȝt late þere.  
 Æt yt wolde fynde hem lek worten y nows bi þe gæte.  
 Æt gode þe nexte kȳng Edward, þat after hym come,  
 Æt geþ hem noȝt follyche so muche wyþþanne hys kynedom.  
 þe abbeþ of Seyn Denys Seynt Edward geþ also  
 þe priorye of Derheste, & londes þat þer beþ perto.  
 þe ercheþyshop of Canterbury sorȳ ynou was þo,  
 þo he hurde of þe quene al þou yt was ygo.  
 Hym þogte wel longe, ar he were ouer see,  
 1 And byleneþe al hys þyshopryche, & necome neuere eft age.  
 þe quene & eke þe byshop, þe wule hit alȳne were,  
 Muche honoured Seyn Swyþþyn fram gere to gere.  
 Hys moder wende out of hys lȳf, Emma þe god quene,  
 In þe a þoulend ger of grace & tuo & fyfty ych wene.  
 Seynt Edward hald at Wyndelore a nayt fests wyþalle,  
 And as a yong man byuore 3 hym seruede in þe halle  
 He spurde myd hys on bot, þat he bel almost abrod,  
 4 Ac he hente myd hys oper, so þat he abode.  
 þe erl Godwȳne, þe false man, seȳde þo, "þat þe on broþer,  
 "As ge seþ, in nede helþþ þere þat oper.  
 þo ansuerede þe 6 kȳng & seȳde, "so myȝte me  
 "My broþer helpe, Godwȳne, ȝȳt he moſte vor þe.

nowe euery yere. To the abbeþ of Seyn Denys Seynt Edwardes ȝat also The Priory of Derhurst, Ar.

1. He bylaste his byshopryche, and neuer cam a yee Ar. 2. Wyndelore a fest grete with alle Ar. 3. Hem

Ar. 4. Bat þe other sote him halpe, so that Ar. 5. Ther the on broþer, Æt ge seith, in nede ofte helpeth the other Ar. 6. Kȳng, so myȝht my broþer me Ofte haue holpe, and he moſt for the Ar.

þo





þys emperour hym soude, myd gode lene & þe,  
 Edward & Agace þys wif, & her chyldren þre  
 þe yonge: William Welyng, & also Margarete,  
 And Edith þe suster, þat god more & better.  
 þe hit came to Engeland, glad was þe kyng &c.  
 For þe wode in þys londe all unmannen menne.  
 þys was in a fownteyn: & lene & lify þus  
 As in god of grace, þat þys dede was þus.  
 Ac Edward deide lene, & þus was myd grette  
 At þe þe lene at London, as þe lene þe grette:  
 And þys lene: Edward þe yonge & lene was,  
 þe more þe kyng þe lene þe lene was.  
 & þe þe lene was myd grette, & þe lene to be.  
 And þe wode wel, þat in þe lene: myche wo me lene &c.  
 And þe lene in Normandy þe lene & ynteyned st.  
 þe þe was: & lene & lene, & lene þe lene &c.  
 þe wode, þat þys lene lene after þys kyng were  
 William þe lene of Normandy, ryght lene þe lene.  
 & For þe was in þys moder all next of þe lene,  
 And þe was now in þys lene all þat þe to was to god.  
 þe more þe lene lene lene Engeland þe lene,  
 And þe lene in þys lene lene, at þe þe lene lene.

- |                           |                  |          |
|---------------------------|------------------|----------|
| 1. Lege, Edgar Scholeng.  | 6. Deideyned st. | 7. lene  |
| 2. Christene st.          | 8. lene st.      | 9. lene  |
| 3. Repone, Edgar, cum st. | 10. lene st.     | 11. lene |
| 4. For þys lene Edgar to  | 12. lene st.     | 13. lene |
| yonge was lene to be st.  | 14. lene st.     | 15. lene |
| 5. þe lene lene lene st.  | 16. lene st.     | 17. lene |

And

And þat muche bet þe lorde's prou, þor hys neuen so gong  
was.

þou : Wyllam bastard was bygyte, Icholle telle þat cas.  
Rychard Duc of Normandye, Emme broþer þe quene,  
Hude a sone, þat het Roberd, þat Duc was syppe, Ich mene.  
Roberd, þys noble Duc, as he wende ouer lond,  
A wel bair mayde, as hym þogte, matresche he bound.  
þys mayde hym gayde syppe wel, myd god wille he hyr nam,  
And huld hyr as hys lesmon, as we seþp in þordom,  
And byget on hyr þys Wyllam, &, þor he was so ybore  
Out of sponshed, me cluped hym Wyllam bastard þernore.

1. Metra hac de re desunt in  
A. in quo tamen sequentia, eo  
pertinentia, narravit scriptor  
profaicus, quibus similia itidem  
videas tam in Polychronico,  
quam & in Lelandi nostri Col-  
lect. Vol. VI. p. 296. After him  
[Richard the IIIde.] Robert  
his sone [was Duc of Nor-  
mandye,] a man of grete  
worthinesse. After him Wil-  
liam Bastard, of whom this  
geste foloweth. Robert Duc of  
Normandye in a tyme as he  
dwelled in a toune of Nor-  
mandie, (cleped Saleys, he  
caste his chere to a mayde in  
the toune, that me cleped  
Merlote. And, when heo was  
brought to the duke's bedde,  
and shuide go therto, she toke  
her smok a bone atte coler  
hem, and rent hit doune to  
the foot, and leide hit a wey

fram hure. And whenne heo  
was esbet, why she duide so?  
she answered and seide, hit  
was nat curtasye ne reson,  
that thinges, that touched  
her feet & hure lome thynges,  
shuld touche her lorde's  
mouthe ne bisage, & so thulke  
sawe nyght the Duc gat on  
her William Bastard. And  
after hure slepe heo a woke,  
and made a grete gronyng  
and syghyng. So that the Duc  
haryng that, esbet of hure,  
why heo sighed so? And heo  
answered, "Lord ich have  
"worderliche [f. wonderliche]  
"i mette. She thought," quod  
heo, "that a grete tree growe  
"oute atte my wombe, and  
"by shadowed alle Norman-  
"dye." And after, whenne  
hit came to the tyme, when  
the childe was i bore, a non,  
þourgh

Dr þat chyld wette ybore, a wel wonder cas  
 þe moder mette bi hyt chyld, þat in hyt wombe was,  
 þat hys gottes mette to drawe aboute al Normandy,  
 And eke aboute al Engeland, þat was to synnyfye,  
 þat he wolde be duc of Normandy, & kyng of Engeland,  
 And bope, as yt suppe bel, holde ik hys honde.  
 þe chyld ek þu yt was ybore, & to gtounde com,  
 Out of hys moder wombe berst, bope hys honden he nom  
 Hol of þe poudre & of þe etpe sturnelyche ynou,  
 And closedes to gader & hys sustes bope adrou.  
 þo was yt sugged, þat he wolde be, wyþ oute sayle,  
 Hardy kyng & stalwarde, & muche do of batayle.  
 Al yt bycom to sope suppe. he bygan gong ynou,  
 To cuþe wat he wolde be, þat to gong hys sustes adrou.

Þrough negligence of women  
 attendyng a boutte his moder  
 foryetyngh hym, he was wals-  
 wed into the strawe that was  
 by, and had caught his. ii.  
 hondes so stille ther of, that  
 bnnethe, with oute grete  
 harme, me myght delynere  
 hit oute of his hondes. Wher-  
 for, muche falshe demed, he  
 shulde were to summe grete  
 auoite of worlde's ricchelle.  
 And as this childe was after  
 in noryshyng in Waleys, a  
 grete man [sic hæc concipiun-  
 tur] of the contre, I hote  
 William Tallmage. So that  
 a burgeys, where as this  
 childe was in noryshyng,

prayde this William to come  
 to his house, and visite his  
 lordes sone. This William  
 Tallmage & alle his kynne  
 hadde euer i hated this  
 childe's fader and his kynne,  
 and ynt not withstandyng  
 that he cam to the hous,  
 wher this childe was inne.  
 And as non as this childe,  
 that bnnethe coude speke,  
 saugh him, soðeyneliche hit  
 gan chide towards this  
 man, and so ferde towards  
 him, that me toke grete hede  
 there of, supposyng hit myght  
 nat be withoute grete ordis  
 naunce of God.

þat chyld was so wel & yþen, as seyde fremde & fýbbe,  
 þat he wolde be a noble man, gýf he mošte lþbbe.  
 Hys fader adde of hym eke gret joye & prýs,  
 þat so gode sýgne adde so gong, to be þalwarde & wýs.  
 Ar he were of sene ger old, þeru out moný a lond  
 þe pope sende creýsery toward þe helylond.

Robert Duc of Normandy þe croys nom atten ende,  
 And garked hym wýþ opere to þe holþlunde to wende.  
 At fest amp, ar he wende borþ, he made al Normandy  
 Suerye, holde hys gong sone, as to seýgnorye.  
 Gong Duc he was on of sene ger bunephe.  
 Wor þe fader ne com neuere agen, ar he were brogt to deþe.  
 And þys gong chyld bylened Duc, & gret þpung adde an þoude.  
 þys was ar Seynt Edward were kyng of Engeland.  
 And Seynt Edward bylenede borþ myð hym, as he adde er  
 ydo

Wýð hys fader in hys nede, & myð hys grantspre al so.  
 þeruore þo he was kyng, gret lone he gan bede  
 þys Wýllam, bor hit susteyned hym so in hys nede.  
 So þat suppe in hys elde, þo hys iýf was neý ydo,  
 As in þe ger of hys kyndom twenty & tuo,  
 Of þe croune of Engeland he nuste wat best do,  
 Wor Edgar, hys neuen sone, wel gong was þerto  
 To be kyng of Engeland, & hys owe lpf slogt was,  
 And he dradde of gret contek alonde bor þat cas.  
 Hym þogte to gýue Wýllam þys lond, hýt was best to do.  
 Wor he was wurpe, & of hys blod, & best yt couþe wyte also.  
 þernor he gaf yt hym, as he byhet hym þuore,  
 And sende to hym myð þe gýfte to Normandy þernor

þe

þe erl Harald þe quene broþer, as me wende, & oþer mo.  
 Ac soþ yt ys, þat þe erl Harald passede þe see þo,  
 Wylþ gret poer & folc ynou, so þat, as God yt wolde,  
 Wylþ wynd he was in strange londe ydryue, þer he nolde.  
 þere hit were, as strange men, <sup>1</sup> gryntylýche vnderbonge,  
 And ynome to albe of here, & ybrogt in bendes stronge.  
 Syr Gwy of Dountyn was hys name, þat hym adde in bende,  
 And asked hem gret ramson, of prisson vorto wende.  
 Harald was of heye herte, & suor raper he wolde  
 Gyue þe duc of Normandye of hys tresor & of hys golde,  
 þat so noble duc was & god, <sup>2</sup> þan a such alre man as he was.  
 To þe duc he sende sone, to helpe hym in þat cas.  
 þe duc sende to Syr Gwy, so <sup>3</sup> þat Syr Gwy anon  
 And adde Harald to þe duc, & hys felawes echon.  
 þe duc bayre hym vnderuoug, & honoured hym y nou,  
 So þat, as rygt was, gret loue bytuene <sup>4</sup> hym drou.  
 Harald, þor to paye hym wel, sende hym sone hys sonde,  
 Þou þe kyng hym <sup>5</sup> made after hym hys eyr of hys londe.

1. Grenylýche vnderfonge  
 In Syr Gwy de Dountoun's  
 lond, and i prisoned wonder  
 strong. And whenne they  
 hadde ther a while thus i  
 dwelte in bende, Syr Gwy  
 asked hem Raunson grete, <sup>2</sup> of  
 prisson for to wende *Ar.* 2.  
 Than suche half man *Ar.*  
 3. That he anon Ladde Ha-  
 rolde tho to him, and his fe-  
 lawes echon *Ar.* 4. Hem  
 drowgh. Harold than, to  
 queme the duc, seide sone his

sonde, *Ar.* 5. Shaked after  
 his day . heire of Engelond.  
 And Harold swor to the duc,  
 and to him fast bonde, That  
 to his by hone al on he wolde  
 kepe the londe, And that the  
 duke's daughter, whenne that  
 tyme come, That yong was  
 tho, in foreward to wyf Ha-  
 rolde nome. And thus Ha-  
 rolde was i swor to do thes  
 thinges two Wylþ also gret  
 othe & bonde, as men myght  
 do *Ar.*

X x 2

And

And þat he wolde take hym to wyte his land he underþoke  
 To his byethe, & þat he wolde morden he him gon.  
 As strong forwarde as his myghte hit made & as hard,  
 And by holy relyken Harold spak to Wyllam hethere,  
 Trewelche to wite Engeland to hym, werts he come,  
 And þat he his ege dogter to wyte also name,  
 þat goud was at þulke tyme, so þat þus þyngez twa  
 Wyth as greet of he suor hym, as man myghte do.  
 þo þyn forwarde was ymah hard & strong y now,  
 Harold toward Engeland wyth gode lene drou.  
 þe kyng he tolde al þat cas, þat bytyme hem man yde,  
 þou he wolde to Wyllam tyme he, as his dogter spoud al so.  
 þo was þe kyng glad gnan, þat he wol to hym truste,  
 And bytat hym þat land, þat he wol to þus Wyllam yt wuste.  
 Seynt Edward wuste of his deþ, ar he þenne wende.  
 For Seynt Jon euangelyst bynors longe word sende,  
 And sende hym tokne by a ring, þat at Weddymynstre hit ys,  
 þat Seynt Edward þer bynors Seyn Jon gaf ynowe.  
 þe kyng þo þet word hym com, & þen ring yfey,  
 He þonkede God þat he wuste, þat his deþ was so ney.  
 His gode he delde gounre men, & made his bernas bare,  
 And his tresorye al so god, & to God hym made al gare.  
 Glad he was of Weddymynstre þat he 1 let hym self rere,  
 þat bynors hym was ybrot to grounde, þoru in þer kynges  
 þat were.

1. And by toke him all the | wylt ar. 2. Lette bype a  
 londe, to the Duc that he | rere ar.

He ⁊ her chyrche halwede was, þerfor hym was ma.  
 The þorte ⁊ lette his halwý to mydenynges enen þe.  
 þey Seyn Peter brufall ⁊ halwede eðer er.  
 Gut he wiste eðer þe þe hym wiste þere.  
 The sende after hym ⁊ becomen, at mydenynges ⁊ with hym to be.  
 þe þe sette yngedore was, heol we wiste þe.  
 Alor þe yt sette muregh be, þe þing beclothe gann.  
 And naphelen glad he was hym full, ⁊ þe wiste gon.  
 And þor seye of hym deys, ⁊ þe þe þe sette also,  
 þe tranayl he nome to hym al, þat hem wiste þere to be.  
 The þe þe crowne, ⁊ heold þe deys with oþer wyȝ al so,  
 And myn gret semblant þe sette heold herte þe deys were  
 yde.

A Seyn Jone's day he sey þat al com to god endyng,  
 He made no consensment to Wylmynghes of oþer þyng,  
 þat þorn hym hem yngne was, oþer þorn eyn oþer þyng,  
 So þat no þyng after hym no dede no dedens þyng.  
 þe chyrche" he let halwý as a Chyldeys wiste day.  
 Wel seble he was þere hym full, as al ⁊ þat seble y sey.  
 In a þousand yer of grace, ⁊ lynes ⁊ lynes þere,  
 Hyt was þat þe halyman þe dede let be.

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <p>             1. For the chyrche <i>A.</i><br/>             2. To habbe halwede þe atte<br/>             mydenynges þe <i>A.</i> 3. þe<br/>             hadde halwede er <i>A.</i> 4. Was<br/>             rone, <i>A.</i> 5. þe þe pro myd<br/>             in <i>A.</i> 6. For he wiste heold<br/>             gon. ynt þere he the crowne,<br/>             ⁊ heold the deys with oþer<br/>             a tyre also, And with gret<br/>             chere ill. Dayes heold þe           </p> | <p>             sette so, A Seynt Jone's day,<br/>             of all to make god endyng,<br/>             He consensment by his chartre<br/>             in all maner þyng To Wylmynghes<br/>             the freedomen ⁊ beled<br/>             ynt þere to, And þe that a<br/>             yent þe ought dede, let<br/>             sentence þere on doo. The<br/>             chyrche he lette halwe a Chylde<br/>             wiste day <i>A.</i> 7. The <i>A.</i><br/>             þe           </p> |
|---|--|



þo hȳt was al wel ydo, & ybroȳt to god ende,  
 þe kȳng seble & syk ynou to hȳn bed gan wende.  
 þo was þer deol & forme ynou of men þat wuste þat cas,  
 ðer hit wuste, þat to Engelond wuche mo to come was.  
 Werre & slayt, and oþer wo, & hunger & gret wou.  
 þe quene bel bi hȳm adoun, & byclupte hȳm bakke yuog  
 ðorte hete hȳn colde lymes, þat non hete ne come to,  
 þerū hete of hȳre owe body, & of hȳre cloþes al so.  
 þe kȳng lay as he were yfluowe almeȳt Dames tuo.  
 He gan, as he awoke of slepe, hȳn eyen þo bi do.  
 He sat i bward bi hȳn bed, hȳn honden held bi anheȳ.  
 "Leonard," he seyde, "þat ech þȳng madeȳt queynte & sleȳ,  
 "And changeȳt i poer & kyndoms alat þȳ nowe rede,  
 "And manne's sonne wreche sendeȳt of þer fader myȳ dede,  
 "Ȝyf þȳng, þat ych non yȳleȳ, i come of þȳ soþnesse,  
 "Ȝef me poer yt ta telle in al my febleȳte,  
 "Worteȳt aȳme þȳ poer, þat hit þat yt yȳleȳ  
 "Doutȳ þe, & of þo synne, þat hit in beȳ,  
 "Repentȳ manne, & þer of hem amendȳ so,  
 "þat hit shalȳde hem fram þe harm, þat þou penȳt hem do.  
 Anon as þȳn holȳmen i adde hȳn orȳson y do þere,  
 Stalward man of speche he was, holȳ man as he were,  
 þo gan he to tellen þus: "þulke tȳme þat ych was  
 "As man sleȳne in Normandȳe, me com monȳ god cas.

1. Upwardes on his bedde,  
 2. Power and kyngdom  
 atte thȳnne awne wille, And  
 manne's sonne sendeȳt wreche  
 of his fader's ille 3. Come  
 shall of thy Rightnesse, 4.  
 And pray the shilde hem

fro the harme, that thou hem  
 thenkest do 5. Hadde do  
 his prayere, Strong i now  
 his speche was 6. Seggeȳt  
 7. Flemed man in Nor-  
 mandȳe, we cam 8.

"Men

"Open of relygoun ych londe wel y nou,  
 "An to me hem, þat best were, ' at bore alle oþer ych dreu.  
 "An tuens holy men at bore alle oþer mek ych londe þere.  
 "Non wot ych wel, þat ? many day in heuene boþe hit were.  
 "Hit tolde me, þat' to Engeland after me shold come.  
 "Hit leyde me of þe wrecchede, ' þat alonde aþ gars ybe.  
 "þe wreche hyeþ & lone comeþ. & þat shal me yse.  
 "For prestes, myd unclene honde & myd lecher's mode  
 "I soyled, sacryþe Gode's fles & hys blod.  
 "Slepurdes hit ' bet luper, vor hit us ' wyteþ nogt  
 "Wer slep fram þe ' molnes. vor be hem ybrogt  
 "þe melke & þe wolle clene. of oþer ' þyng hit wolle tolle.  
 "þe slepurdes and þe slep ' al so shalle to pyne of helle.  
 "As god heymen of þe lond robbers selawes beþ.  
 "Power men, þat hit mowe ouer, hit halydeþ as ge yseþ.  
 "Non wole be Louerd make hys suerd, hys bome yn ybend,  
 "And ' prest aþ ymade, vorto smyte men þat bet myswende.  
 "þe leyde ych myd drey mode, gyf hit wolleþ turne her pozt,  
 "An sory be, & ' bete her synne, wolle be Louerd boryne  
 hem ogt

1. By fore *r.* 2. Be *ll.*  
 holy men be fore *r.* 3. Ma=  
 ny a day bothe in heuen they  
 were. And now ryght bothe  
 hit come to me, and the an=  
 gyles some hit tolde me,  
 that *r.* adeo ut in Cod. nostro  
*Harleyan metrum integrum o-*  
*mittatur.* 4. That longe 'in  
 londe hath be, Of whiche the  
 wreche hiegh faste, as me shall  
 t see. For Prestes with un=  
 clene hondes, and with leche=

reus mode, Hit t soyled, vserþ  
 to sacre Godde's fles & blode  
*r.* 5. Beth *r.* 6. Kepeth  
*r.* 7. Molnes, to hem that  
 buthe by taught *r.* 8.  
 Thynges nele I tell *r.*  
 9. Also bothe shalle to hell.  
 And also Robbers of the londe  
 high mennes selawes beþ.  
 Power men, that hit mowe,  
 hit halydeth as ye seest *r.*  
 10. Redy *r.* 11. Let *r.*  
 "þat

"þat ys þer nogt," þe oþer seȝde, "þer þe fellest heric ys

"so þynow, þat hit wyl biȝwe & þout ȝwyn,

"þat hit nollet, non ȝen þynȝ þesse ne ȝe.

"þe seȝde ȝen, 'wot we þenowr wold tere wroþ be,

"'wot we nolde ȝene be, & be of myne more?

"wonne þat leuð, after to ȝes seȝe, to wol wroþ of lere,

"wot ende wil þere be, & wonne any biȝe,

"Oþer conuolte, alre rich for?" þe seȝde þe oþer þen:

"A ȝene weryng tre, þat ys fene hye more

• "þurte wone, & þe wode of þe þe leuðe þerfom ȝore,

"wonne yt ys eft by þyn kniȝt, wrynt ech monne's rede,

"þenow agen to hye tyȝte more, þat et was an beue,

"And byȝyn to wone, & lisse to wete crut,

"þanne me wyl, wo yt? ȝene, to wote þeȝe gut.

þe þe quene, & hye wroþe þatwe, lare þe,

And Robert, þat wroþe was of þe þatwe ȝwyn,

þatwe, & mado wot ȝen, wot hit seȝe þe þatwe,

• "An wroþe leuðe & oþer lisse þe wroþe lisse her mado;

And þen þe seȝe men of þe leuð þe wroþe to ȝenow beȝte,

þe wroþe, þat God wolde do, nas nogt þer nogt hit þeȝe.

þe seȝe wroþe þen, as yt was underfonde:

þe tre þe noble kynedom byȝte of Engelande.

þe more wroþe þe seȝe wroþe, þat eft of oþer come,

þen wroþe wroþe: þe wroþe more, þat lisse was þeȝe of

þen,

---

1. Whether our. 2. 4. When to lisse. 5. 1. Whether he will get grace. 2. The manne, the manne was the more. 3. Wroth, for wote. 4. was the more. 5.

To Seynt Edward's fader, & to hym sulue al so.  
 Ac þo he deȝde wȝhout ryȝt eȝr, þe wexȝngt was ydo,  
 And þat tre ysmȝte fram þe more ouer þre londres brede.  
 Alȝer þe kȝnges were of Engeland of vn kande lede.  
 Herst Harald þe quene broþer, & Wyllam bastard also,  
 And supþe hȝs sone Wyllam, þe rede kȝng, þerto.  
 Ac after þat Wyllam, þe rede kȝng, ydote was by cas,  
 And þe gode Henry hȝs broþer after hym kȝng was,  
 Seynt Edward's nece, þat of hȝs fader kande come,  
 And of þe ryȝte kande of Engeland, kȝng Henry to wȝne nomē,  
 þat was Mōld þe gode quene, þat in gode tȝms was ybore;  
 þo smot verst hȝs tre agen, to hȝs kande more,  
 And Normandy þoru þe kȝng, & þoru þe quene Engeland  
 Joȝned were þo kundelyche in one monne's honde.  
 In a þolend ȝer of grace & fyre & fyrty ryȝt,  
 After vr suete Louerd in hȝs moder was alȝt.  
 Kȝng he was þre & tuentȝ ȝer, & fyr monþes þerto,  
 And þre moke & fyrte dawes, at hȝs lȝf were ydo.  
 þo Seynt Edward adde hȝs ytold, he clofede boþe hȝs eye,  
 And þe berþe day of Janyuere in hȝs manere gan depe.  
 Al þe franchyse of Engeland, & al ioȝe & blyse,  
 Wyd hym was vasse ybured, þo me bured hym ywȝs.  
 And þat me bond sone afterward wyd monȝ Delnoel cas.  
 At Westmȝnstre a twelfþe day hȝs gode man ybured was.

1. Whenne Seynt Edward thus tolde, he ganne to close his eyȝhe, The iiii. day of Jannare thenne ganne he depe, In the yere of oure Lorde. M. lxxi. right After	that oure swete Lorde in his moder a light. Kȝng he was. xxiii. yere and vi. moneths ther to, And iii. wokes and vi. dayes er his lȝf was i do. Al the franchyse &c.
---	---

Vol. I.

Y y

Harald

**H**arald his false erl, þo Seynt Edward deðe laȝ,  
 hym sulue he let crowny kyng þulke sulue day  
 falslyche. þor Seynt Edward so wel to hym truþe,  
 1 þat he bytot hym Engeland, þat he yt wel wuste  
 2 To 3 Wyllamme's broþer bastard, duc of Normandye.  
 Ac hym sulf he made kyng 3 myd such trecherye.  
 Ac þe gode tryw men of þe lond wolde 4 abbe ymade kyng  
 þe kunde eȝr, þe gouge chyld, Edgar Ethelung.  
 5 Wo so were next kyng bykande, me clupeþ hym Ethelung.  
 þernor me clapede hym so, þor bykande he was next kyng.  
 Ac Harald made his weȝ byuore, 6 as myd suphedom,  
 Myd gyttyȝ & myd bayre byþeste, & among þe kyndom.  
 So þat somme hym chose alout, & somme hem hulde stȝlle,  
 7 And soðrede as hit noȝt ne myȝte al oþere's wȝlle.  
 So þat Harald was kyng, to wom þe hele þe kyndom.  
 And Seynt Edward's syȝte by hym to soþe came.  
 For þo byȝan þe wom borst, as me myȝte yȝle,  
 þat folde, as Seynt Edward seȝde, by þe kynges day be.  
 For 8 Coste, Harald broþer, þat he drof er in to Flaandres  
 By kynges day Edward hym sulue to gret sclaudres,

1. Þenne he by toke hym  
 2. Wyllame's by þone  
 3. With fals trechourte  
 4. Hane maketh  
 5. He that  
 were nexte kyng by kynde,  
 Ethelung he was, And there  
 fore me cleped hym so, for  
 nexte heise he was  
 6. All  
 with swikeldom, With yestes  
 and with faire by þestes, to  
 bouge the kyngdom

7. And suffred þulke tyme as  
 men that myȝht not hane þer  
 wille. So that Harald to  
 wrothur hele helde the kyngs  
 dom, And sone, as Seynt Ed-  
 warde seide, after ward hit  
 come. And then by gaunns the  
 wrake ferste, as all men  
 myȝht & see  
 8. Pro Coste.  
 At in Costyn, Harold's  
 þe

He com anon þo vppen hym myð gret poer & eye,  
 Myð Harald <sup>1</sup> Darsager hýng of Norþwey,  
 And myð gret poer of Norþomber to Euerwýk hit com,  
 Had muche <sup>2</sup> folk in þe Souþ syde boþe slowe & nome.  
 Kýng Harald com agen hym myð poer strong ynou.  
<sup>3</sup> Býsþe Euerwýk hys oft agen hym he drou,  
 In a stude, þat me clapede <sup>4</sup> Stamford brugge þo,  
 And nou me clapeþ yt Batayle brugge, þor þe batayla þat  
 was þo.  
 þer hit smýte to gadere, & made a sory pley.  
 Wor þere was Toft aslawe, & þe hýng of Norþwey,  
 And her syde <sup>5</sup> al byneþe; to ende yt com so  
 þat Seryat Edward byuore seyde of þelke breþeren tuo,  
 þat hit sholde to gadere fýgte, & Harald aboue be.  
<sup>6</sup> þer me mygte of þulke word þat soþnesse ysle.  
 fram anon amorne vorte myð ouer none,  
 þo<sup>7</sup> batayle laste strong, ar<sup>8</sup> he were ydon.  
 þe Englyshe ouer þe brugg drone þe oper at laste.  
 Ac þo þat water was bytuene, hit stode agen vasse.  
<sup>9</sup> On bodý þer was of Norþwey, betere nas þer non.  
 Wor he at stode vp þe brugg myð anax al on,  
 And drof the Englyshe men agen, <sup>10</sup> hym ne mygte non atstonde.  
 And slou mo þan fourty of hem myð hys owe honde,

1. Lege, Darsager. 2. Folke, that hem with stode, botheslawe. 3. A lite by side Euerwýk the hostes to geder drough. 4. Staynes forde. 5. Was all by nes the; to ende cam hit the

Ar. 6. Ther of me myght atte thulke tyme all the sothe i see. fram ernemorne fort hit was myddenore none, The Ar. 7. Hit Ar. 8. A man ther was Ar. 9. That non myght him withstande.

Y y 2

And

And wouste hem so borte after none borte on myd gyle nome  
 I kyp, & ar he were ywar under þe brugge com,  
 And smot hym ar he were ywar under foundement lowe  
 Wyd a sper, & so an hey, þat he deyde in a prowse.  
 A stalwarde pece þat was, non God cuþe þys soule loue.  
 þe þogte þe Englyſhe vor þys deþ þat hit were al about,  
 And pallede þe brugge anon, & slowe to grounde,  
 So þat þe oþer partye byneþe was in astonde.  
 þe "Harald ysey þys broþer aflawe, ' & þe kyng Arſager  
 Of Norþwey & her ſolc, þe ne hald nour þys pere.  
 He ne geld nogt wel her mede, þat wyþ hym þys ſon slowe,  
 þeroure þys men þe laſte her herte to hym drowe.  
 And þat hit hadde hym afterwarde, agen William baſtard,  
 ' As ge ſolle ſone yhere, vor he was ouere aſſeward.

**M**iche aþ þe ſorms yþe ofte in Engeland,  
 ' As ge mowe here & er yhere & vnderſtonde,  
 Of mony batayle þat aþ yde, & þat men þat lond nome,  
 Merſt, as ge abbeþ yhurt, þe emperours of Rome.

And ſlough him ſelf fourty  
 with a ſparthe in hande. So  
 atte laſte vnder him pryn-  
 ſiche on came lowe, And in  
 the foundement him ſmote,  
 that he deide in a throwe.  
 Then were the Englyſhmen  
 a bone in lytell ſtonde, And  
 paſſed the brugge, and ſlowe  
 downe to grounde. *Tho. A.*

1. And Harolde Herſager,  
 He toke gret pruyte ther of,  
 and helde non his pere, And  
 yeide not well *A.* 2. As ye

mowe ther of here he after  
 [ f. here after ] warde *A.*  
 3. As ye mowe i here by myt,  
 as Ich vnderſtande, Of ma-  
 ny batailles that hath i be of  
 men this londe that nome,  
 Of Gyautes ſerſte & Bru-  
 tonus, and ſuth of men of  
 Rome. Of Sarons ſuthe and  
 Danes thenne, and Norman-  
 nus atte laſte. And put there  
 wolle be more wrake, Icham  
 ſulle ſore a gaſte *A.*

Suppe

Sappe Saxons & Englyshe myd batayles stronge.  
 Witte laste heȳ of Normandye, þat maystrus bet gut here,  
 Wonne yt & holdeþ gut, y cholle telle in wuche manere.  
 þo William bastard hurde telle of Harald's snykedede,  
 Þou he adde ymad hym kyng, & myd wuch fals dede.  
 Þor þat lond hym was bytake, as hyt welle wuste,  
 To wyte yt to hym wel, & he wel to hym truste.  
 As þe hende he dade berste, & messagers hym sende,  
 "þat he vnderstode hym bet hys dede vorto amende,  
 "And þogte on þe grete op, þat he hym adde er ydo,  
 "To wyte hym wel Engeland, & to sponse hys dogter also,  
 "And hulde hym þerof berewarde, as he by þet ek þe kyng.  
 "And bete he dade bytyme, he wolde sende hym oþer tyþing,  
 "And seche hym out ar tuelf monþe, & hys ryghtys wyne,  
 "þat he ne stalde abbe in to al Engeland, & ernes to wyte hym.  
 Harald hym sende word, "þat folys yt was to truste  
 "To such op, þat was ydo myd strengþe, as he wel wuste.  
 "Þor gyf a mayde treuþe plygte, to do a sole dede  
 "Al one prynclyche, wyþout hys frendes rede,  
 "þulke berewarde ys bor nogt. & wat loker yt agte her,  
 "þat ych suor aneþ, þat was þo al in þe poer,  
 "Wyþoute conseil of al þe londe, of þyng þat myn nogt nas &  
 "þeruer ned op ysuore, nede ybroke was.  
 "And gyf þou me wilt seche in Engeland, ne be þou no so  
 sturue  
 "Spker þou ne slalt me fynde in none þurne.

1. Hic perplura profaice ha- | mirum metris in eodem præ-  
 bentur in *dr.* haud paucis ni- | termisiss.

þo



þo Wyllam hurde, þat he wolde luffen þys trecherie,  
 He let of sende þys knyghtes of al Normandye,  
 To conseyly hym in þys cas, & to helpe hym in such nede,  
 And he gan of her portus largelyche hem bede,  
 As hit founde suppe in Engelond, þo yt ymounne was,  
 þe betere was toward hym þer herte vor þys cas.  
 þe duc Wyllam þys wylle among hem alle seyde,  
 þat four þynges hym made mest bygyune þulke dede.  
 Alor Godowyn, Harald's fader, to deþe let do  
 So byllyche Alfred, þys colyn, & þys felawes also.  
 And vor Harald adde þys of ybrake, þat he suor myd þys  
 ryggt hende,  
 þat he wolde to þys broþer wryte Engelond.  
 And vor Seynt Edward hym gaf Engelond al so.  
 And vor he was next of þys klad, & best wurþe þerto,  
 And vor Harald nadde non ryggt bote in falsþede.  
 þes þynges hym made mest bygyune þys dede.  
 And vor he wolde, þat al men pleje þys trywede,  
 To þe pope Nysander he sende in such cas hym to rede.  
 Harald's falsþede þo þe pope ysey þere,  
 And peraventure me hym tolde more þat soþ were,  
 þe pope aloyled & blessed Wyllam & al þys,  
 þat into þys batayle myd hym wolde ymys,  
 And halewede þys baner, þat men at bore hym bere.  
 þo was he & al þys gladdore þan hit er were.  
 So þat þys duc adde agen herneft al gare  
 þys barons & þys knyghtes, myd hym vorte fare.  
 To þe hauene of Seyn Walry þe duc wende þo  
 Myd þe men þat he adde, & abyde mo.

After

After herneſt þo her ſhyppen & al hit preſte were,  
 And wynd hem com after wyllle, her ſeylen hit gon vere,  
 And hyderwarde in þe ſe wel glad þen wey nome.  
 So þat byſyde Haſtynges to Engeland hit come,  
 Hem þogte, þo hit come alond, þat al was in her honde.  
 At ſee ſone as þe duc Wyllam hym fot ſette alonde,  
 On of hym knyghtes grabbe, " holde baſte Wyllam non  
 " Engeland, wor þer nys non kyng bote þou.  
 " Wor ſyker þou be, Engeland ys non þyn ywys.  
 þe duc Wyllam anon herbed al hym,  
 þat none nere ſo mod, to robby, ne no manere harm do þere  
 Ape þe lond, þat hym was, bote hem þat agen hym were.  
 And an fourty nygt hy byleneþe þere aboute,  
 And conſeyleþe of batayle, & ordeynd her route.  
 Kyng Harald ſat glad ynou at Cnerwyke atte mete,  
 So þat þer come a meſſager, ar he adde y gæte,  
 And ſeyde, þat duc Wyllam to Haſtynges was ycome,  
 And hym baner adde yrerð, & þe contreye al ynoma.  
 Harald, a man wyþ gæte herte corageus y non,  
 As he of non man ne tolde, þuðerwarde baſte drou.  
 He ne let naht cluþe al hym ſolc, ſo willeſol he was,  
 And al wor in þe oþer batayle hym bel ſo baýr cas.  
 þo þe duc Wyllam waſte, þat he was ycome neþ,  
 A monch he ſende hym in meſſage, & dunde as þe ſley,  
 þat lond, þat hym was yggyue, þat he ſolde yt bp gelde,  
 Oþer come, & dere em þe ryggt myð ſuerd in þe belde.  
 Gyf he ſeyde, þat he nadde non ryggt þerto,  
 þat bp þe pope lohyngs of Rome he ſolde yt do,

And

And he wolde þerto kende, al clene wythoute fyrte,  
 Under Seynt Edward yt hym gef, & ever he adde þerts fyrte.  
 Herald sende hym word agen, þat he wolde hym take non leud,  
 He non lokynge of Rome, bote suerd & ryt hende.  
 þo yt oþer ne myhte be, eþer in hym fyde  
 Conseylede and garhed hem, batayle borto abyde.  
 þe Englyshe al þe ryt bynore batte bygon to synge,  
 And spende al þe ryt in gletonye & in dryngunge.  
 þe Normans ne dade nogt so, ac hit cryde on God batte,  
 And cryus hem ech after oþer, þe wule þe ryt ylaste,  
 And amorne hem lete asely wþ mylde herte ynou.  
 And suppe þe Duc wþ hym oft toward þe batayle droo,  
 An kounde he gan abyde, & hym knyghtes rede.  
 "Ge knyghtes," he seyde, "þat bet of so noble dede  
 "þat nere nenore overcome, ne goure elderne naþens,  
 "Waderstoudeþ of þe kyng of France þat goure elderne dade  
 we,

"þou my fader in þarus amyde hym kynedom,  
 "þyð promelle of goure faderes myð strengþe hym overcome.  
 "Waderstoudeþ þou goure elderne þe kyng nome al so,  
 "And helde hym borte he adde amended þat he adde mys do,  
 "And Rycharð, þat was þo a chyld, hit gelde Normandy,  
 "þat was Duc her bynore, & to such maystris,  
 "þat at eche parlement, þat he in France were,  
 "þat he were ygurd wþ a suerd, þe wule þat he londe þen,  
 "þat þe kyng of France ne hym so hardy were,  
 "þat atte parlement knyf ne suerd bere.  
 "Waderstoudeþ eke þe dedes, þat þulke Rycharð dade all þe,  
 "þat he ne overcome nogt kynges alone, ac gut more þerto.

" He he overcom þe Deuel; & adoun hym caste-  
 " To gadere as hit wraſtled, & bound hys honden baſte  
 " By hynde at hys rugge. of ſuch promeſſe ge þenche,  
 " He ſame ge nogt þat Harald, þat enere was of inþer wrenche,  
 " In bynore þou was verſuore, þat he wole myð hys tayle  
 " Turne hys wombe toward vs, & hys face in batayle.  
 " Underſtondeþ þe ſuykedom, þat hys fader & he wroghte,  
 " And hit þat myð hym beþ, þo hit to Deþe brogte  
 " So byllýche Alfreð my colyn, & þoure kunes men alſo.  
 " Thou mygte in eny wyſe more ſame be do?  
 " Wponye, þat Dede þulke Dede, ge mowe here to Day yſey.  
 " Thou longe ſolle þer inþer þened aboute þer ſoldren be?  
 " Adraweþ þoure ſuerdes, & lokeþ wo may þe beſt,  
 " þat me ſe þoure promeſſe fram þe Eſt to þe Weſt.  
 " Wote awrete þat gentyl blod, þat ſo byllýche was ynoms  
 " Of þoure kunes men. þor we mowe wel. br tyme ys non  
 ycome.

þe duc nadde nogt al yſed, þat myð ernest gret  
 Al ys ſalc wel atyled to þe batayle ſet.  
 Al ſueyn, þat þet Tayleſer, ſmot borþ bynore þere,  
 And ſlow anon a Englyſhe man, þat a baner bere,  
 And effone anoþer baner, & þe þryðde almoſt al ſo,  
 He hym ſulþ he was aſſawe, ar þe Dede were ydo.  
 þe ſurſt ende of hys eſt bynore Harald myð ſuch gynne  
 So þýche ſette, þat non man ne mygte come wyþenne,  
 Wyþ ſtronge targes hem bynore, þat aſthens ne Dede hem nogt,  
 So þat Normans were ney to grounde ybrogt.  
 Wyllam byþogte an queintyle, & bygan to ſte baſte,  
 And hys ſalc borþ wyþ hym, as hit were agaſte,

Vol. I.

Z z

And

And slowe ouer a longe bale, & so to an hyl.  
 þe Englysshe all was quene ynow, þo hit þyn yfey,  
 An bygonne þam to speche, & after þen wey nome.  
 þe Normans were about þe doune, þe spere spard come,  
 And bynneþe hem about al helstiche, as yt wolde be adon-  
 ward.

And oþer byones ne myghe naye to quistiche spard.  
 And hit were byones al to spard, þat ne myghe bytane hem  
 wende.

þe Normans were so wel perueyd aboute in ech ende,  
 And stoues adounward stonge to hem y nowre,  
 And myd spere & myd flon vasse of hem stowe,  
 And myd sterd & myd az. for hit, þat spard none,  
 He myghe non myle abbe of vant, as hit þat donward come,  
 And her vantage þan to brake, þat ne myghe wepyne hem  
 wende,

So þat þe Normans vasse stowe in ech ende.  
 Of Englysshe al was naye þat valese was ney  
 As heye yfild myn dedemen, as þe doune an hyl.  
 þe stetes donward al nor naye vasse stowe to grounde,  
 So þat Harold þen þe naye yfild was sepe wounde.  
 And a heryt þat yfey, þat he was to grounde þroghte,  
 And smot, as he lay bynne, & ston an der naye.  
 fram þat yt was amorne þe batayle stode strong  
 Morte yt was ney myd ouermon, & þat was hundel long.  
 Mony was þe gode vant, þat duc Wyllam getaday.  
 Mor þe stetes þe flou vnder hym, as muche fole yfey  
 All pruned, & der end about, & der wounded also,  
 And debryst ege dedemen, at þe batayle were ydo.

And

And yet was Wyllam's grace fulke day to gode,  
 þat he hadde no wounde, nor þorn he hadde an vray bled.  
 þus, is ! þe Englyſhe volt vor naxt to grunde come  
 Wor a fals kyng, þat hadde non rygt to þe kyndom,  
 And come to a nywe leuerd, þat more in rygt was.  
 Ac her noþer, as me may ſey, in our rygt nas.  
 And þus was in Normannes hond þat lond ybrought þus,  
 þat anaunter gyf enermo keneþenge þereof ys.  
 Of þe Normannes þeþ þys heþ men, þat þeþ of þys lond,  
 And þe lewe men of Saxons, as ych vnderſtonde.  
 So þat ge ſep in eþer ſyde wat ryhte ge adder þetto,  
 Ac ych vnderſtonde, þat yt was þorn Gode's wille ydo.  
 Wor þe wule þe men of þys lond wat heþene wert,  
 Non lond, ne no ſolt agen hem in atays nere.  
 Ac nou ſupþe þat þet ſolt among Criſtendom,  
 And wel late wile hli halde þe dyheſte, þat hli nome,  
 And turnede to ſleupe, & to geute, & to lacherye,  
 To glotonye, & heþe men mache to robberye,  
 As þe goſtes in a nyſſon to Seynt Edward ſeyde,  
 Wor þer ſolde in Englonde come ſuch wrecchede,  
 Wor robberye of heþ men, vor clerken hordom,  
 Non God wolde ſorwe ſende in þys kyndom.  
 Bytvene Mychelmaſſe & Seynt Luc, a Seyn Calyſte's day,  
 As bel in þulke gere in a Sater day,  
 In þe gere of Grace, as yt bel al ſo,  
 A þouſend & ſyre & ſexty, þys batayle was y do.  
 And duc Wyllam was þo old nyne & þryttz get.  
 And on a þryttz get he was of Normandy duc er.

þo þys batayle was ydo, þac Wyllam let brynge  
 Mayre þys folc, þat was allawe, anerþe þorn alle þynge.  
 Wile þat wolde leue þe gaf, þat þys son anerþe brogte.  
 Haralde's moder ber þyr sone wel gerna hym byfogte  
 By messengers, & largelyche hym bed of þyr þynge.  
 To grantz þyre sone body anerþe vorto brynge.  
 Wyllam yt sende þyr bayre ynou, wþoute eny þynge waruere:  
 So þat yt was þorn þyre wþ gret honour ybore  
 To þe hous of Wyltam, & ybrogt anerþe þere,  
 In þe hely rede chyrche, þat he let hym self reze,  
 In hous of religyon, of canons ymys.  
 It was bayre anerþe ybrogt, as yt gut ys.  
 Wyllam, þys noble duc, þo he adde ydo al þys,  
 þen wex þe nome to Londone þe & al þys,  
 As kyng & prince of lond, wþ nobleye ynou.  
 Wexon hym wþ bayre processyon þat folc of toune drou  
 And vnderuonge hym bayre y nou, as kyng of þys lond.  
 þus come, lo! Engeland into Normannes hande.  
 And þe Normans ne couþe speke þo bote þer owe speche,  
 And speke frenche as vnde atom, & here chyldren vnde al so  
 teche.  
 So þat heymen of þys lond, þat of þer blod come,  
 Holdeþ alle þulke speche, þat hit of hem nome.  
 Wor bote a man couþe frenche, me toþ of hym wel lute.  
 Ac lome men holdeþ to Englyss, & to þer kunte speche gute.  
 Ich mene þer ne be man in worlð contreyes none,  
 þat ne holdeþ to þer kunte speche, bote Engeland one.  
 Ac wel me wot vorto conne boþe wel yt ys,  
 Wor þe more þat a man con, þe more worþ he ys.

R.O.

27











This book should be returned to the Library on or before the last date stamped below.

A fine of five cents a day is incurred by retaining it beyond the specified time.

Please return promptly.

CALL ST  
CUTTED

